

London. Printed for Timothy Garthwait.



Mr. GARTHWAIT,

YOU needed not any Intercession to recommend this Task to me, which brought its Invitations and Reward with it. I very willingly read over all the Sheets, both of the Discourse, and of the Devotions annext, and finde great Cause to Bless God for both, not discerning what is wanting in any part of either, to render it, with Gods Blessing most sufficient, and proper to the great End designed, the Spiritual Supplies and Advantages of all those that shall be exercised therein. The Subject matter of it, is indeed, what the Title undertakes, The whole Duty of Man, Set down in all the

A

Brans

Dr. HAMMONDS LETTER.

Branches, with those Advantages of Brevity and Partitions, to invite, and support, and engage the Reader. That Condescension to the meanest Capacities, but withall, That weight of Spiritual Arguments, wherein the best Proficients will be glad to be assisted, that it seems to me equally fitted for both sorts of Readers, which shall bring with them a sincere desire of their own, either present or future Advantages. The Devotion part in the Conclusion is no way inferiour, being a seasonable Aid to every mans Infirmities, and hath extended it self very particularly to all our principal Concernments; The Introduction hath supplied the place of a Preface, which you seem to desire from me, and leaves me no more to adde, but my Prayers to
“God. That the Author which hath
“taken

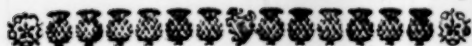
Dr. HAMMONDS LETTER.

"taken Care to convey so liberal an
"Alms to the Corban so secretly,
"may not miss to be rewarded
"openly, in the visible power and
"benefit of this Work, on the
"Hearts of the whole Nation, which
"was never in more need of such
"supplies, as are here afforded.
That His All-sufficient Grace will
bless the Seed sown, and give an
abundant encrease, is the humble
Request of

Your assured Friend,

March 7. 1657.

H. HAMMOND.



A Table of the Contents of the several Chapters or Partitions in this Book. Which according to this Division, by Reading one of these Chapters every *Lords Day*, the whole may be Read over *Thrice in the Year*.

PARTITION 1.

Sunday I. **O***F the Duty of Man, by the light of Nature, by the light of Scripture: Of Faith, the Promises, of Hope, of Love, Fear, Trusting in God.* page 1.

PARTITION 2.

Sunday II. *Of Humility, of Submission to Gods Will, in respect of Obedience, of Patience, in all sorts of Sufferings; and of Honour due to God in several ways, in his House, Possessions, his Day, Word, Sacraments, &c.* pag. 34.

PARTITION 3.

Sunday III. *Of the Lords Supper, of Preparation before Receiving, of Duties to be done at the Receiving, and afterwards, &c.* pag. 67.

PARTITION 4.

Sunday IV. *Honour due to Gods Name; of sinning against*

THE TABLE.

against it; Blasphemy, Swearing, Assertory Oaths, Promissory Oaths, Unlawful Oaths, of Perjury, of Vain Oaths, and the Sin of them, &c. pag.98.

PARTITION 5.

Of Worship due to Gods Name. Of Prayer and its several parts. Of Publick Prayers in the Church, in the Family: of Private Prayer: of Repentance, &c. of Fasting, p.109.

Sunday
V.

PARTITION 6.

Of Duties to our Selves. Of Sobriety, Humility; the great sin of Pride, the Danger, the Folly of this sin. Of Vain-Glory, the Danger, Folly, Means to prevent it. Of Meekness, the Means to obtain it, &c. pag.136.

Sunday
VI.

PARTITION 7.

Of Contentedness, and the Contraries to it; Murmuring, Ambition, Covetousness, Envy; Helps to Contentedness. Of Duties which concern our Bodies. Of Chastity, Helps to it. Temperance, Rules of Temperance in Eating, &c. pag.158.

Sunday
VII.

PARTITION 8.

Of Temperance in Drinking, False ends of Drinking, viz. Good fellowship. Putting away Cares, Passing away time, preventing reproach, Bargaining, &c. pag.177.

Sunday
VIII.

PARTITION 9.

Temperance in Sleep; The Rule of it, &c.

Sunday
IX.

THE TABLE.

Of Recreation : of Apparel, and of the ends for which cloathing should be used. pag.197.

PARTITION 10.

Sunday
X.

Of Duties to our Neighbours. Of Justice, Negative and Positive. Of the Sin of Murder. Of the Hainousness of it, the punishments of it, and the strange Discoveries thereof; of Maiming, Wounds and stripes. pag.206.

PARTITION 11.

Sunday
XI.

Of Justice, about the Possessions of our Neighbour; against Injuring him as concerning his Wife, his Goods, of Malice, Covetousness, Oppression, Theft: of Paying Debts, &c. pag.226.

PARTITION 12.

Sunday
XII.

Of Theft; Stealing the Goods of our Neighbour. Of Deceit in Trust, in Traffick. Of Restitution, and the Necessity thereof, &c. pag.238.

PARTITION 13.

Sunday
XIII.

Of False Reports, False witness, Slanders, whisperings. Of Despising and Scoffing for Infirmities, Calamities, Sins, &c. Of Positive Justice, Speaking the truth. Of Lying. Of Humility and Pride. Of Envy, Detraction. Of Gratitude, &c. pag.251.

PARTITION 14.

Sunday
XIV.

Of Duty to Parents. Magistrates, Pastors, &c.

THE TABLE.

&c. Of the Duty of Children to Parents, &c.
 Reverence, Love, Obedience, especially in
 their Marriage, Ministering to their wants:
 of the Duty of Parents to their Children.
 pag. 278.

PARTITION 15.

Of Duty to our Brethren and Relations; Sunday
 Husband, Wife, Friends, Masters, Servants, XV.
 &c. pag. 305.

PARTITION 16.

Other Branches of our Duty to our Neigh- Sunday
 bour. Of Charity to Mens Souls, Bodies, XVI.
 Goods, Credit, &c. pag. 329.

PARTITION 17.

Of Charity, Alms-giving, &c. Of Cha-
 rity in respect of our Neighbours Credit, Of Sunday
 Peace-making. Of going to Law: Of Cha- XVII.
 rity to our Enemies, &c. Christian Duties
 both possible and pleasant. pag. 358.

Books

Books Newly Published.

THE GENTLEMANS CALLING.

GOLDEN REMAINS
Of the ever Memorable,
Mr. H A L E S of *Eton Coll.*
Published by *Dr. Jo. Pearson.*

Books lately Published by *Mr. Tho. Pierce*
of *Brington.*

AN IMPARTIAL INQUIRY
INTO THE
NATURE of SIN,
With a Postscript touching some late
dealings of *Mr. Baxter.*

Englands Season for Reformation of Life
A SERMON preacht at *S. Pauls London,*
On the first Sunday after his *Majesties* Restauration

Sermons lately Published.

DAVIDS Deliverance and Thanksgiving,
A SERMON preacht before the *KING*
By *Dr. Sheldon* Dean of his *Majesties* Chappel.

JUDAHS Return to their Allegiance,
And *King Davids* return to his *Crown and Kingdom*
A SERMON preacht in *London* by *Dr. Creed.*

All sold by *Timothy Garthwait.*

A PREFACE

To the ensuing *TREATISE*,
shewing the Necessity of Care-
ing for the Soul.

Sect. 1. **T**HE only intent of this en-
suing Treatise, is to be a
short and Plain Direction
to the very meanest Rea-
ders, to behave themselves
so in this world, that they may be happy for ever
in the next. But because 'tis in vain to tell men
their Duties, till they be perswaded of the necessity
of performing it; I shall before I proceed to the Par-
ticulars required of every Christian, endeavour to
win them to the practice of one general Duty prepara-
tory to all the rest, and that is the Consideration
and CARE of their own SOULES, without
which they will never think themselves much con-
cern'd in the other.

2. MAN, We know is made up of two parts,
a BODY and a SOUL: The Body only the
hulk or shell of the Soul, a lump of flesh, subject
to many diseases and pains while it lives, and at last
to Death it self, and then 'tis so far from being va-
lued, that 'tis not to be endured above ground, but
layed to rot in the earth. Yet to this viler part of
us we perform a great deal of Care, all the labour
& toil we are at, is to maintain that. But the more pre-
cious

- 'PREFACE, of the Necessity

ious part, the Soul is little thought of, no care taken, how it fares, but as if it were a thing that nothing concern'd us, is left quite neglected, never consider'd by us.

3. This Carelesness of the Soul is the root of all the sin we commit, and therefore whosoever intends to set upon a Christian course, must in the first place amend that. To the doing whereof, there needs no deep learning, or extraordinary parts, the simplest man living (that is not a natural fool) hath understanding enough for it, if he will but act in this by the same Rules of common Reason, whereby he proceeds in his worldly business. I will therefore now briefly set down some of those Motives, which use to stir up our care of an outward thing, and then apply them to the Soul.

4. There be FOUR things especially, which use to awake our care, the first is the Worth of the thing the second the Usefulness of it to us, When we cannot part with it without great damage and mischief, the Third the great Danger of it, and the Fourth the Likelihood that our care will not be in vain, but that it will preserve the Thing cared for.

5. For the First, we know our care of any worldly thing is answerable to the Worth of it, what is of greatest Price

We are most watchful to preserve, and most fearful to lose; no man locks up dung in his chest, but his money or what he counts precious, he doth. Now in this respect the Soul deserves more care, then all the things in the world besides, for 'tis infinitely more worth. First in that it is made after the Image of God, it was God that breathed into man this breath of life, Gen.

7. Now God being of the greatest Excellency and worth, the more any thing is like him, the more it is

Of Carcing for the Soul:

be valued. But 'tis sure that no Creature upon the earth is at all like God, but the Soul of man, and therefore nothing ought to have so much of our care. Secondly, the Soul never Dies. We use to prize things according to their Durableness: what is most Lasting, is most Worth. Now the Soul is a thing that will last for ever, when Wealth, Beauty, Strength, nay our very bodies themselves fade away, the Soul still Continues. Therefore in that respect also, the Soul is of the greatest worth; and then what strange madness is it for us to neglect them as we do? We can spend Days and Weeks, and Moneths, and Years, nay our whole lives in hunting after a little wealth of this world, which is of no durance or continuance, and in the mean time let this great durable treasure, our Souls, be stolen from us by the Devil.

6. A second Motive to our care of any thing is the USEFULNES of it to us, The misery of losing the soul or the great Mischief we shall have by the loss of it. Common Reason teaches us this in all things of this life: If our Hairs fall, we do not much regard it, because we can be well enough without them: But if we are in danger to lose our Eyes or Limbs, we think all the care we can take little enough to prevent it, because we know it will be a great misery. But certainly there is no Misery to be compared to that misery that follows the Loss of the Soul. 'Tis true, we cannot Lose our Souls, in one sense, that is, so lose them, that they shall cease to Be; but we may lose them in another, that we shall wish to lose them even in that. That is, we may lose that happy estate, to which they were created, and plunge them into the extreamest misery.

PREFACE, of the Necessity

In a word we may lose them in Hell, whence there is no fetching them back, and so they are lost for ever. Nay, in this consideration our very bodies are concerned, those Darlings of ours, for which all our care is layd out: for they must certainly after Death be Raised again, and be joyned again to the Soul, and take part with it in whatever state, if then our care for the body take up all our Time and Thoughts, and leave us none to bestow on the poor Soul, it is sure the Soul will for want of that care, be made for ever Miserable. But it is as sure, that that very Body must be so too. And therefore if you have any true kindness to your Body, shew it by taking Care of your Souls. Think with your selves, how you will be able to Endure Everlasting Burnings; if a small spark of Fire, lighting on the least part of the body be so intolerable, what will it be to have the Whole cast into the hottest flames? And that not for some few hours or days, but for ever? so that when you have spent many Thousands of years in that unspeakable Torment, you shall be no nearer coming out of it, then you were the First Day you went in: think of this I say, and think this withall, that this will certainly be the end of Neglecting the Soul, and therefore afford it some care, if it be but in pity to the Body, that must bear a part in its Miseries.

The danger
the Soul is
in.

7. The Third Motive to the care of
any thing is its being in DANGER
now a thing may be in danger two ways:
first, by Enemies from without: This
is the Case of the Sheep, which is still in danger
being devoured by Wolves, and we know that
makes the Shepherd so much the more watchful over

Of Careing for The Soul.

it. Thus is it with the Soul, which is in a great deal of Danger, in respect of its enemies: those we know are the World, the Flesh, and the Devil, which are all such noted enemies to it; that the very First Act we do in behalf of our Souls, is to Vow a continual War against them. This we all do in our Baptisme; and whoever makes any Truce with any of them, is false not only to his Soul, but to his Vow also; becomes a Forsworn creature: A Consideration well worthy our laying to heart. But that we may the better understand, what Danger the Soul is in, let us a little consider the quality of these enemies.

1. In a war you know there are divers things that make an Enemy terrible: The first is Subtilty and Cnunning, by which alone many victories have been won; and in this respect the Devil is a dangerous Adversary, he long since gave sufficient proof of his Subtilty, in beguiling our first Parents, who yet were much wiser then we are, and therefore no wonder if he deceive and cheat us. Secondly, the Watchfulness and Diligence of an Enemy makes him the more to be Feared; and here the Diuel exceeds; it is his trade and business to destroy us, and he is no loiterer at it, he goes up and down seeking whom he may devour, 1 Pet. 5. 8. he watches all Opportunities of Advantage against us, with such diligence, that he will be sure never to let any slip him. Thirdly, an Enemy neer us is more to be feared then one at a Distance, for if he be far off, we may have time to arm, and prepare our selves against him, but if he be near, he may steal on us unawares. And of this sort is the flesh, it is an Enemy,

P R E F A C E, Of the Necessity

my, at our Doors, shall I say? Nay in our Bosomes, it is alwayes near us, to take occasion of doing us mischiefes. Fourthly, the Baser and Falser an Enemy is, the more dangerous; he that Hides his malice under the shew of Friendship will be able to do a great deal the more hurt. And this again is the flesh which like Joab to Abner, 2 Sam. 3. 27. Pretend to speake peaceably to us, but wounds us to death. 'tis forward to purvey for Pleasures and Delights for us, and so seems very kinde, but it has a hook under that bait, and if we bite at it we are lost. Fifthly, the Number of Enemies make them more Terrible; and the World is a vast Army against us. There is no state or condition in it, nay scarce a creature which doth not at sometime or other fight against the Soul: The Honours of the World seek to wound us by pride, the Wealth by covetousness; the Prosperity of it tempt us to Forget God, the Adversities to murmur at him. Our very Table becomes a snare to us, our meat draws us to Gluttony, our drink to Drunkenness, our Company way, our nearest Friends often bear a part in the War against us, whilest either by their example, or perswasions they intice us to sin.

9. Consider all this, and then tell me, whether a Soul thus beset hath leisure to sleep: even Daliah could tell Sampson, it was time to awake when the Philistins were upon him. And CHRIST tells us, if the good man of the house had known in what houre the Thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken up, Mat. 24. 43. But we live in the midst of Thieves, and therefore must look for the

Of Careing for The Soul.

every houre, and yet who is there among us, that hath that common providence for this precious part of him, his Soul, which he hath for his house, or indeed the meanest thing that belongs to him? I fear our Souls may say to us, as Christ to his Disciples. *Mat. 26. 40* What? could ye not watch with me one houre? For I doubt it would pose many of us to tell when we bestowed one Houre on them, though we know them to be continually beset with most Dangerous Enemies. And then alas! What is like to be the case of these poor Souls, when their Adversaries bestow so much Care and Diligence to destroy them, and we will afford none to preserve them? Surely the same as of a Besieged Town, where no Watch or Guard is kept, which is certain to fall a prey to the enemy. Consider this ye that forget God, nay, ye that forget your selves, lest he pluck you away, and there be none to deliver you, *Psal. 50. 22.*

10. But I told you there was a Second way; whereby a thing may be in Danger, and that is from some Disorder or Diltemper within it self. This is often the case of our Bodies; they are not only lyable to outward Violence, but they are within themselves Sick and Diseased. And then we can be sensible enough that they are in danger, and need not to be taught to seek out for means to recover them. But this is also the case of the Soul; we reckon those parts of the body diseased, that do not rightly perform their office, we account it a sick palate that tastes not aright, a sick stomack that digests not. And thus it is with the Soul, when its parts do not rightly perform their Offices.

P R E F A C E, Of the Necessity

11. The parts of the Soul are especially three: The UNDERSTANDING, the WILL and the AFFECTIONS. And that these are disordered, there needs little proof; let any man look seriously into his own Heart, and consider how little it is he knows of spiritual things, and then tell me whether his Understanding be not dark? How much apter is he to Will evil then good, and then tell me whether his Will be not Crooked? And how strong Desires he hath after the pleasures of sin, and how cold and faint ones towards God and goodness and then tell me whether his Affections be not disordered, and rebellions even against the voice of his own Reason within him? Now as in bodily diseases the first step to the cure is to know the Cause of the sickness, so likewise here it is very necessary for us to know how the Soul first fell into this Dilected condition, and that I shall now briefly tell you.

12. GOD created the first Man
The first Co- Adam without Sin, and endued his
venant. Soul with the full knowledg of his Duty,

and with such a strength, that he might, if he would, perform all that was required of him. Having thus created him, he makes a COVENANT or agreement with him to this purpose, that if he continued in Obedience to God without committing Sin; then first, that Strength of Soul, which he then had should still be continued to him; and secondly, that he should never Die, but be taken up into Heaven, there to be Happy for ever. But on the other side, if he committed Sin and disobeyed God, then both He and all his Children after him should lose that Knowledg and that perfect strength

which

Of Careing for the Soul.

which enabled him to do all that God required of him : and secondly, *ſhon't* be ſubject to death, and not only ſo, but to Eternal damnation in Hell.

13. This was the Agreement made with Adam and all mankind in him (which we uſually call the **FIRST COVENANT**) upon which God gave Adam a particular commandment, which was no more but this, that he ſhould not eat of one only tree of that garden wherein he had placed him. But he by the perſwaſion of the Devil eats of that Tree, diſobeys God, and ſo brings that curſe upon himſelf, and all his poſterity. And ſo by that one Sin of his, he loſt both the full Knowledge of his Duty, and the Power of performing it. And we being born after his Image, did ſo like wiſe, and ſo are become both Ignorant in diſcerning what we ought to Do, and Weak and unable to the doing of it, having a backwardneſs to all good, and an aptneſs, and readineſs to all evil ; like a ſick ſtomach, which loaths all whoſome food, and longs after ſuch traſh, as may nourish the diſeaſe.

14. And now you ſee where We got this ſickneſs of Soul, and likewiſe that it is like to prove a deadly one, and therefore I preſume I need ſay no more, to aſſure you our ſouls are in danger. It is more likely you will from this deſcription think them hopeleſs. But that you may not from that conceit, excuſe your Neglect of them, I ſhall haſten to ſhew you the contrary, by proceeding to the fourth Motive of Care.

15. That Fourth Motive is the likelihood, that our CARE will not be in VAIN, but that it will be a means

That our Care will not be in vain.

PREFACE, Of the Necessity

to preserve the thing cared for; where this is wanting, it disheartens our care. A Physician leaves his Patient when he sees him past Hope, as knowing it is then in vain to give him any thing, but on the contrary when he sees hopes of recovery, he plies him with Medicines. Now in this very respect we have a great deal of reason to take care of our souls, for they are not so far gone, but they may be recovered, may it be certain they will, if we do our parts towards it.

16. For though by that Sin of Adam all mankind were under the sentence of eternal condemnation, yet it pleased God so far to pity our misery, as to give us his Son, and in him to make a new Covenant with us after we had broken the first.

The second Covenant. 17. This SECOND COVENANT was made with Adam, and us in him presently after his Fall, and is briefly contained in those words, Gen. 3. 15. Where God declares that THE SEED OF THE WOMAN SHALL BREAK THE SERPENT'S HEAD, and this was made up, as the first was, of some mercies to be afforded by God, and some duties to be performed by us.

18. God therein promises to send his only Son who is God equal with himself, to earth, to become man like unto us in all things, sin only excepted and he to do for us these several things.

19. First to make Known to us the whole Will of his Father, in the performance whereof we shall be sure to be Accepted and rewarded by him. And this was one great part of his business, which he performed in those many Sermons and Precepts

Of Careing for the Soul.

we finde set down in the Gospel. And herein he is our **PROPHET**, it being the work of a Prophet of old not only to foretel, but to Teach. Our Duty in this particular is to hearken diligently to him, to be most ready and desirous to learn that will of God which he came from Heaven to reveal to us.

The Second thing He was to do for us, was to Satisfie God for our Sins, not only that one of Adam, but all the Sins of all Mankinde that truly repent and amend, and by this means to obtain for us Forgiveness of Sins, the Favour of God, and so to Redeem us from Hell and eternal damnation which was the punishment due to our sin. All this he did for us by his death. He offered up himself a Sacrifice for the Sins of all those who heartily bewail, and forsake them. And in this He is our **PRIEST**, it being the Priests Office to Offer Sacrifice for the sins of the people. Our duty in this particular is first, truly, and heartily to Repent us of and forsake our sins, without which they will never be forgiven us, though Christ have died. Secondly, steadfastly to Believe, that if we do that, we shall have the benefits of that Sacrifice of his, all our sins, how many and great soever, shall be forgiven us, and we saved from those eternal punishments which were due unto us for them. Another part of the **PRIESTS** Office was Blessing and Praying for the people; and this also Christ performs to us: It was his especial Commission from his Father to Bless us, as St. Peter tells us, Acts 3.26. God sent his Son Jesus to Bless you; and the following words shew wherein that blessing consists, in turning away everie one of you from his iniquitie, those means which he has used for the turning us from our Sins,

P R E F A C E, Of the Necessity

Sins, are to be reckoned of all other the greatest blessings; and for the other part, that of Praying, that be not only performed on earth, but continues still to do in Heaven, He sits on the right hand of God and makes request for us, Rom. 8. 34. Our Duty here in is not to resist this unspeakable blessing of his, but to be willing to be thus Blest in the being turned from our sins, and not to make void, and fruitless all his Prayers and Intercessions for us, which will never prevail for us, whilest we continue in them.

21. *The third thing, that Christ was to do for us, was to Enable us, or give us Strength to do what God requires of us. This he doth, first, by taking off from the hardness of the Law given to Adam, which was never to commit the least sin, upon pain of damnation, and requiring of us only an honest and hearty endeavour to do what we are able, and where we fail, accepting of Sincere Repentance. Secondly, By sending his Holy Spirit into our hearts, to govern, and Rule us, to give us strength to overcome Temptations to Sin, and to do all that He now under the Gospel requires of us. And in this He is our KING, it being the office of a King to govern and rule, and to subdue enemies. Our Duty in this particular is to give up ourselves obedient subjects of his, to be governed and ruled by him; to obey all his Laws, not to take part with any Rebel, that is, not to cherish any one sin, but diligently to Pray for his Grace to enable us to subdue all, and then carefully to make use of it to that purpose.*

22. *Lastly, He has purchased for all that faithfully obey him an Eternal glorious inheritance,*

Of Careing for the Soul.

the Kingdom of Heaven, whither he is gone before to take possession for us. Our duty herein is to be exceeding careful, that we forfeit not our parts in it, which we shall certainly do, if we continue impenitent in any sin. Secondly, not to fasten our Affections on this World, but to raise them, according to the precept of the Apostle, Col. 3. 2. Set your affections on things above and not on things on the earth; continually longing to come to the possession of that blessed inheritance of ours, in comparison whereof all things here below should seem vile and mean to us.

23. This is the Sum of that SECOND COVENANT we are now under, wherein you see what Christ has done, how he Executes those Three Great Offices of KING, PRIEST and PROPHET, as also what is required of us; without our Faithful Performance, all that he hath done, shall never stand us in any stead; for he will never be a Priest to Save any, who take him not as well for their Prophet to Teach, and their King to Rule them; nay, if we neglect our part of this Covenant, our condition will be yet worse, then if it had never been made, for we shall then be to Answer not for the breach of Law only, as in the first, but for the abuse of mercy, which is of all sins the most provoking. On the other side, if we faithfully perform it, that is, set our selves heartily to the obeying of every precept of Christ, not going on wilfully in any one sin, but bewailing and forsaking whatever we have formerly been guilty of, it is then most certain, that all the fore-mentioned benefits of Christ belong to us.

24. And

PREFACE, Of the Necessity

24. And now you see how little Reason you ha
to cast off the CARE of your SOULS upon a conceit
they are past cure, for that it is plain they are not.
Nay, certainly they are in that very condition
which of all others makes them fittest for our care.
If they had not been thus REDEEMED
BY CHRIST, they had been then so hopeless, that care
would have been in vain; on the other side, if
Redemption had been such, that all men should
be saved by it, though they Live as they list, we should
have thought it needless to take care for them, be-
cause they were safe without it. But it hath pleased
God so to order it, that our care must be the means
by which they must Receive the good even of all that
Christ hath done for them.

25. And now, if after all that God hath done
to save these Souls of ours, we Will not bestow
little Care on them our selves, we very well deserve
to perish. If a Physician should undertake a patient
that Were in some desperate disease, and by his
skill bring him so far out of it, that he were
to recover, if he would but take care of himself, &
observe those rules the Physician set him, would
not think that man weary of his life, that would
refuse to do that? So certainly that man is weary
of his soul, wilfully casts it away, that will not
consent to those easie conditions, by which he may be
saved.

26. You see how great kindness God hath to the
Souls of ours, the whole TRINITY, Father,
Son, and Holy Ghost have all done their parts
for them. The FATHER gave his only Son, the
SON gave Himself, lest his glory, and ends Re

Of Careing for the Soul.

the bitter death of the Cross, meerly to keep our Souls from perishing. The HOLY GHOST is become as it were our attendant, waits upon us with Continual offers of his grace, to Enable us to do that which may preserve them; nay he is so desirous we should accept those Offers of his, that he is said to be grieved when we refuse them, Ephes. 4. 30. Now what greater disgrace and affront can we put upon God then to despise what he thus values, that those Souls of ours, which Christ thought worthy every drop of his blood, we should not think worth any part of our Care? We use in things of the world, to rate them according to the opinion of those who are best skilled in them; now certainly God who made our Souls, best knows the worth of them, and since he prizes them so high, let us (if it be but in reverence to him) be ashamed to neglect them. Especially now that they are in so hopeful a condition, that nothing but our own carelessness can possibly destroy them.

27. I have now briefly gone over those Four motives of care I at first proposed, which are each of them such, as never misses to stir it up towards the things of this World; and I have also shewed you how much more Reasonable, nay Necessary it is they should do the like for the Soul. And now what can I say more, but conclude in the words of Isaiah 46.8. Remember this and shew your selves men. That is, deal with your Soul as your Reason teaches you to do with all other things that concern you. And sure this common Justice bindes you to, for the Soul is that which furnishes you with that Reason, which you exercise in all your worldly business;

PREFACE, Of the Necessity, &c

business; and shall the Soul it self receive no Benefit from that Reason, which it affords you? This is as if the Master of a Family, who provides food for his servants, should by them be kept from Eating and himself, and so remain the only starved creature in his house.

28 *And as Justice ties you to this, so Merit doth likewise; you know the poor Soul will fall in Endless and unspeakable Miseries, if you continually neglect it, and then it will be too late to consider The last Refuge you can hope for is Gods mercy but that you have despised and abused. And in what face can you in your greatest need beg for mercy to your Souls, when you would not afford them your own? No not that common Charity considering them, of bestowing a few of those idle Hours you know not (scarce) how to pass away, upon them.*

19, *Lay this to your hearts, and as ever you hope for Gods pity, when you must want it, be sure to give time to Pity your selves, by taking that due Care of your precious Souls which belongs to them.*

30. *If what hath been said, have perswaded you this so necessary a Duty, my next work will be to tell you how this Care must be employed, and that in a word, is in the Doing of all those things which tend to the making the Soul Happy, which is the end of our Care; and what those are I come now to shew you.*



PARTITION I.

of the Duty of Man by the Light of Nature, by the Light of Scripture: the three great branches of Mans Duty, to God, our selves, our Neighbour: our Duty to God, of Faith, the Promises, of Hope, of Love, of Fear, of Trust.

THE Benefits purchased for us by Christ, are such as will undoubtedly make the Soul Happy, for Eternal Happiness it self is one of them; but because these Benefits belong not to us till we perform the Condition required of us; whoever desires the happiness of his Soul, must set himself to the performing of that Condition; what that is, I have already mentioned in the General, That it is the hearty, honest endeavour of obeying the whole Will of God. But then that Will of God containing under it many particulars, it is necessary we should also know what those are; that is,

B what

The Whole Duty of Man.

SUNDAY what are the *several* things, that God now requires of us, our performance whereof will bring us to everlasting happiness, and the neglect to endless misery.

Of the light
of NATURE.

2. Of these things there are some which God hath so stamp'd upon our souls, that we *Naturally* knew them; that is, we should have known them to be our Duty, though we had never been told so by the Scripture. That this is so, we may see by those *Heathens*, who having never heard of either *Old* or *New Testaments*; do yet acknowledge themselves bound to some *General Duties*, as to *Worship God*, to be *Just*, to *Honour* their *Parents*, and the like. And as *St. Paul* saith, *Rom. 2. 15. Their Consciences do in those things accuse or excuse them*; that is, tell them, whether they have done what they should, in those particulars, or no.

3. Now though *Christ* have brought greater Light into the world, yet he never meant by it to put out any of that *Natural* light, which God hath set up in our *Souls*: Therefore let me here by the way, advise you not to walk contrary even to this *lesser* light, I mean, not to venture on any of those Acts, which meer *Natural Conscience* will tell you are sins.

4. It is just matter of sadness to any *Christian* heart, to see some in these dayes, who profess much of Religion, and yet live in such sins, as a meer *heathen* would abhor; men that pretending to higher degrees of *Light*, and
holiness,

Part. I. *The Whole Duty of Man.*

3

holiness, then their brethren do, yet *practice* SUNDAY
contrary to all Rules of *common honesty*, and I.
make it part of their Christian liberty so to do;
of whose Seducement it concerns all that love
their *Souls* to beware: and for that purpose let
this be laid as a Foundation, *That that Religion*
or Opinion cannot be of God, which allows men in
any wickedness.

5. But though we must not put out this *light*
which God hath thus put into our souls, yet
this is not the onely way whereby God hath
revealed his will, and therefore we are not to
rest here, but proceed to the knowledge of
those other things which God hath by other
means revealed.

6. The way for us to come to know them is *The light*
by the SCRIPTURES, wherein are set down of SCRIPT-
those several commands of God which he hath TURES.
given to be the Rule of our *Duty*.

7. Of those, some were given before *Christ*
came into the world, such are those precepts
we finde scattered throughout the *Old Testa-*
ment, but especially contained in the *Ten*
Commandements, and that excellent Book of
Deuteronomy; others were given by *Christ*,
who added much; both to the *Law* implanted
in us by *Nature*, and that of the *Old Testa-*
ment, and those you shall find in the *New Te-*
stament, in the several precepts given by him
and his *Apostles*, but especially in that *Divine*
Sermon on the Mount, set down in the fifth,
sixth and seventh Chapters of *St. Matthews*
Gospel.

SUNDAY

1.

8. All these should be severally spoke to but because that would make the discourse very long, and so less fit for the *meaner* sort of men, for whose use alone it is intended, chuse to proceed in another manner: by *summing* all these together, and so as plainly as can, to lay down, what is now the duty of every *Christian*.

The Three
great bran-
ches of
MAN'S
DUTY.

9. This I find briefly contain'd in the word of the Apostle, *1st. 2. 12. That we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world*; where the word *Soberly* contains our duty to our *selfes*; *Righteously*, our duty to our *neighbour*, and *Godly*, our duty to *God*. These therefore shall be the Heads of my discourse, our DUTY to GOD, our SELF, and our NEIGHBOUR. I begin with the duty to *God*, that being the best ground-work whereon to build *both* the other.

Duty to
God.

10. There are many *parts* of our DUTY to GOD, the *two* chief are these: First to acknowledge him to be *God*; secondly, to love him; under these are contained all the particulars, which make up our *whole* duty to *God*, which shall be shewed in their order.

Aknow-
ledging him
to be God.

11. To *acknowledge* him to be *God*, is to believe him to be an *infinite glorious spirit* that was from *everlasting*, without beginning, and shall be to *everlasting*, without end. That he is our *Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost*, one *God, blessed for ever*. That he is subject to no *alterations*, but is *Unchangeable*; that he is no *body*.

Part. 1. Of Faith.

5

SUNDAY

I.

substance, such as our *eyes* may behold, but *spiritual* and *invisible*, whom *no man hath seen*, nor can see as the Apostle tells us, 1 Tim. 3. 16. That he is infinitely *Great* and *Excellent*, beyond all that our *wit* or *conceit* can imagine, that he hath *received* his being from none, and gives *being* to all things.

12. All this we are to believe of him in regard of his *Essence* and being: but besides this, he is set forth to us in the *Scripture* by several *Excellencies*, as that he is of *Infinite Goodness and Mercy, Truth, Justice, Wisdom, Power, All-sufficiency, Majesty*; that he disposes and governs all things by his *Providence*; that he *Knows* all things and is *present* in all places; these are by *Divines* called the *Attributes of God*, and all these we must undoubtingly *acknowledge*, that is, we must *firmly believe* all these *Divine Excellencies* to be in God, and that in the greatest degree, and so that they can never cease to be in him, he can never be other then *infinitely Good, Merciful, True, &c.*

13. But the *acknowledging* him for our God signifies yet more then this; it means that we should perform to him all those several parts of *Duty* which belong from a *Creature* to his *God*: what those are I am now to tell you.

14. The first is *FAITH*, or *Belief*, not only that forementioned of his *Essence* and *Attributes*, but of his *Word*, the *believing* most firmly, that all that he saith is perfectly *true*. This

FAITH.

SUNDAY necessarily arises from that *attribute*, his *truth*,
 I. it being natural for us to *believe* whatsoever is
 said by one of whose *truth* we are confident.
 Now the *Holy Scriptures* being the *Word* of
 God we are therefore to conclude, that all
 that is contained in them is most *true*.

Of his Af-
 firmations

15. The things contained in them are of
 these *four sorts*: First, *Affirmations*, such are all
 the *stories of the Bible*, when it is said, such and
 such things came so and so to pass; *Christ* was
 born of a *Virgin*, was laid in a *Manger*, &c.
 And such also are many points of *Doctrine*, as
 that there are *three Persons* in the *God-head*,
 that *Christ* is the *Son of God*, and the like. All
 things of this sort thus delivered in *Scripture*
 we are to believe most *true*. And not only so,
 but because they are all *written* for our *Intru-*
ction; we are to consider them for that pur-
 pose, that is, by them to lay that *Foundation*
 of *Christian knowledge* on which we may build
 a *Christian life*.

Com-
 mands.

16. The *second* sort of things contain'd in
 the *Scripture*, are the *Commands*, that is, the
 several things *enjoyed* us by God to perform,
 these we are to believe to come from him, and
 to be most just, and fit for him to *command*.
 but then this *belief* must bring forth *Obedience*,
 that what we *believe* thus fit to be done, be in-
 deed done by us; otherwise our *belief* that
 they come from him serves but to make us
 more *inexcusable*.

Threat-
 nings.

17. Thirdly, the *Scripture* contains threat-
 nings; many *Texts* there are which threaten

to them that go on in their sins, the *wrath* of **SUNDAY** God, and under that are contained all the *punishments* and *miseries* of this *life*, both *spiritual* and *temporal*, and *everlasting* destruction in the *life* to come. Now we are most stedfastly to *Believe*, that these are Gods *threats*, and that they will certainly be performed to every impenitent sinner. But then the use we are to make of this belief, is to keep from those *sins* to which this destruction is threatened, otherwise our belief addes to our guilt, that will wilfully go on in spite of those *threatnings*.

18. *Fourthly*, the *Scripture* contains *Promises*, and those both to our *Bodies* and our *Souls*, for our *bodies* there are many *promises* that God will provide for them what he sees necessary; I will name onely one, *Mat. 6. 33. Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things, that is, all outward necessities, shall be added unto you*: but here 'tis to be observed, that we must first seek the kingdom of God and his righteousness, that is, make it our first and greatest care to serve and obey him before this promise even of *temporal* good things belongs to us. To the *soul* there are many and *high* promises, as first, that of *present ease* and *refreshment* which we finde, *Mat. 11. 29. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, and ye shall finde rest to your souls*: but here it is apparent, that before this *rest* belongs to us, we must have taken on *Christ's yoke*, become his servants and *Disciples*.

SUNDAY *ciples. Finally there are promises to the soul*
 I. even of all the benefits of Christ; but yet those only to such as perform the *Condition* required; that is, *Pardon of Sins* to those that *repent* of them, *Increase of Grace* to those that diligently make *use* of what they have already, and humbly pray for more; and *Eternal salvation* to those that *continue* to their lives end in hearty obedience to his Commands.

19. This *Belief* of the *Promises* must therefore stir us up to perform the *Condition*, and till it do so, we can in no reason expect any good by them; and for us to look for the benefit of them on other terms, is the same mad presumption that it would be in a *Servant* to challenge his Master to give him a *reward* for having done nothing of his work, to which alone the *reward* was promised; you can easily resolve what *answer* were to be given to such a *servant*, and the same we are to expect from God in this case: nay further, it is sure, God hath given these *promises* to no other end, but to invite us to holiness of life; yea, he gave his Son, in whom all his *promises* are as it were summ'd up, for this end. We usually look so much at *Christ's* coming to satisfy for us, that we forget this other part of his errand. But there is nothing surer, then that the main purpose of his coming into the world was to plant good life among men.

Part. 1. Of Faith.

9

20. This is so often repeated in Scripture, **SUNDAY**
that no man that considers and believes what **L**
he reads can doubt of it. Christ himself tells
us, *Mat. 9. 13. He came to call sinners to re-*
pentance. And *S. Peter, Acts 3. 26. tells us,*
That God sent his Son Jesus to bless us, in turn-
ing every one of us from his iniquities; for it
seems the turning us from our iniquities was the
greatest special Blessing which God intended
us in Christ.

21. Nay, we are taught by *S. Paul*, that this
was the end of his very death also, *Tit. 2. 14.*
Who gave himself for our sins, that he might
redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie to
himself a peculiar people, zealous of good
works. And again, *Gal. 1. 4. Who gave him-*
self for us, that he might deliver us from this
present evil world. that is, from the sins and ill
customs of the world. Divers other Texts
there are to this purpose, but these I suppose
sufficient to assure any man of this one great
truth, that all that Christ hath done for us
was directed to this end, the bringing us to
live Christianly; or in the words of Saint
Paul, to teach us, that denying ungodli-
ness and worldly lusts, we should live
soberly, righteously and godly in this present
world.

22. Now we know Christ is the founda-
tion of all the promises; in him all the
promises of God are yea, and Amen,
2 Cor. 1. 20. And therefore if God gave
Christ to this end, certainly the Promises
are

SUNDAY are to the same also. And then how great an
I. abuse of them is it to make them serve for purposes quite contrary to what they were intended, *viz.* To the *encouraging* us in sins, which they will certainly do if we persuade our selves they belong to us how wickedly soever we live. The Apostle teaches us another use of them, 2 Cor. 7. 1. *Having therefore these promises, let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.* When we do thus we may justly apply the *promises* to our selves, and with comfort expect our parts in them. But till then though these *promises* be of certain truth, yet we can reap no benefit from them, because we are not the persons to whom they are made, that is, we perform not the *condition* required to give us right to them.

23. This is the *Faith* or Belief required of us towards the things God hath revealed to us in the Scripture, to wit, such as may answer the *End* for which they were so revealed, that is, the bringing us to good lives; the bare believing the *truth* of them, without this, is no more then the *Devils* do, as St. James tells us, Chap. 2. 19. Only they are not so unreasonable as some of us are, for they will tremble, as knowing well this *Faith* will never do them any good. But many of us go on confidently, and doubt not the *sufficiency* of our *Faith*; though we have not the least *fruit of obedience* to approve it by; let such hear

Part. I. of Hope.

11

hear St. James's judgement in the point, Chap. 26. As the body without the spirit is dead, so Faith if it have not works is dead also. SUNDAY I.

24. A second Duty to God is HOPE, that is, a comfortable expectation of these good things he hath promised. But this, as I told you before of Faith, must be such as agrees to the nature of the promises, which being such as requires a condition on our part, we can hope no further then we make that good; or if we do, we are so far from performing by it this duty of Hope, that we commit the great sin of Presumption, which is nothing else but hoping where God hath given us no ground to hope: this every man doth that hopes for pardon of sins and eternal life, without that repentance and obedience to which alone they are promised; the true hope is that which purifies us: St. John saith, 1 Epist. 3. 5. Every man that hath this hope purifieth himself, even as he is pure; that is, it makes him leave his sins and earnestly endeavour to be holy as Christ is, and that which doth not so, how confident soever it be, may well be concluded to be but that hope of the Hypocrite which Job assures us shall perish. HOPE. Presumption.

25. But there is another way of transgressing this Duty, besides that of Presumption, and that is by Desperation, by which I mean not that which is ordinarily so called, viz. the Despairing of mercy, so long as we continue in our sins, for that is but just for us to do: but I mean such a desperation as makes us give over Despair.

SUNDAY over endeavour, that is, when a man that sees
I. he is not at the present such a one, as the *promises* belong to, concludes, he can never become such, and therefore neglects all duty, and goes on in his sins. This is indeed the sinful *desperation*, and that which if it be continued in, must end in destruction.

26. Now the work of hope is to prevent this, by setting before us the *generality* of the *promises*, that they belong to all that will but perform the *condition*. And therefore though a man have not hitherto performed it, and so hath yet no right to them, yet *hope* will tell him, that that right may yet be gained, if he will now set heartily about it. It is therefore strange folly for any man, be he never so sinful, to give up himself for lost, when if he will but change his course, he shall be as certain to partake of the *promises* of mercy as if he had never gone on in those former sins.

27. This Christ shews us in the parable of the *Prodigal*, *Luke* 15. where we see that son, which had run away from his Father, and had consumed the *portion* given him, in *riotous living*, was yet upon his *return* and *repentance* used with as much kindness by the *Father*, as he that had never offended, nay with higher and more passionate expressions of love. The intent of which Parable was only to shew us how graciously our *heavenly Father* will receive us, how great soever our former sins have bin, if

we shall return to him with true sorrow **SUNDAY**
 for what is past, and sincere obedience **I.**
 for the time to come; nay so acceptable
 a thing is it to God, to have any sinner
 return from the error of his wayes, that
 there is a kinde of *triumph* in *heaven* for
 it, *there is joy in the presence of the Angels*
of God, over one sinner that repenteth:
Luke 15. 10. And now who would not ra-
 ther chuse by a *timely repentance*, to bring
 joy to *Heaven*, to God and his *holy Angels*,
 then by a *tullen desperation* to please *Satan*
 and his *accursed spirits*; especially when by
 the former we shall gain endless happiness to
 our selves, and by the latter as endless tor-
 ments?

28. A *Third Duty* to God is LOVE; there **Love its**
 are two common Motives of love among men. **Motives.**
 The one the *goodness* and *excellency* of the per-
 son; the other his *particular kindness*, and
love to us; and both these are in the *highest*
degree in God.

29. First he is of *infinite goodness*, and *excel-* **Gods ex-**
lency in himself; this you were before taught **cellency.**
 to believe of him, and no man can doubt
 it that considers but this one thing, that
 there is nothing good in the world, but
 what hath received all its *goodness* from God:
 his goodness is as the *Sea*, or *Ocean*; and
 the goodness of all *creatures*, but as some
small streams flowing from the *Sea*; now
 you would certainly think him a mad man,
 that should say the *Sea* were not greater
 then

SUNDAY then some little brook ; and certainly it is no
 I. less folly to suppose that the *goodness* of God
 doth not as much (nay infinitely more) exceed
 that of all *creatures*. Besides the *goodness* of
 the *creature* is *imperfect* and mixt with much
 evil ; but his is *pure* and entire, without any
 such *mixture*. He is perfectly *Holy*, and can-
 not be tainted with the least *impurity*, neither
 can be the Author of any to us, for though he
 be the cause of all the goodness in us, he is the
 cause of none of our *sins*. This St. *James* ex-
 pressly tells us, Chap. 1. 13. *Let no man say*
when he is tempted, he is tempted of God ; for
God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth
he any man.

*His kind-
 nels to us.*

30. But *secondly*, God is not only thus good
 in himself, but he is also wonderful good ; that
 is, kind and merciful to us ; we are made up
 of two parts, a *Soul* and a *Body*, and to each of
 these God hath exprest infinite mercy and ten-
 derness. Do but consider what was before told
 you of the SECOND COVENANT, and the
mercies therein offered, even *Christ* himself and
 all his *benefits*, and also that he offers them so
sincerely and *heartily* that no man can miss of
 enjoying them but by his own default. For he
 doth most really and affectionately desire we
 should embrace them and live ; as appears by
 that solemn Oath of his, *Eze. 33. 11. As I live,*
saieth the Lord, I have no pleasure in the death
of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his
ways and live : whereto he adds this passionate
 expression, *turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways*

Part. 1. Of Love, &c.

19

SUNDAY
1.

for why will ye die? To the same purpose you may read *Ezek. 18*. Consider this, I say, and then surely you cannot but say, He hath great kindness to our souls. Nay, let every man but remember with himself the many calls he hath had to *repentance* and *amendment*; sometimes outward, by the Word, sometimes inward, by the secret whispers of Gods Spirit in his heart, which were only to woo and intreat him to avoid *Eternal misery*, and to accept of *Eternal happiness*; let him, I say, remember these, together with those many other means God hath used towards him for the same end, and he will have reason to confess Gods kindness, not only to mens souls in general, but to his own in particular.

31. Neither hath he been wanting to our Bodies, all the good things they enjoy, as health, strength, food, raiment, and what ever else concerns them, are meerly his gifts; so that indeed it is impossible we should be ignorant of his mercies to them, all those outward comforts and refreshments we dayly enjoy, being continual effects and witnesses of it, and though some enjoy more of these then others, yet there is no person but enjoyes so much in one kinde or other, as abundantly shews Gods mercy and kindness to him in respect of his Body.

32. And now surely you will think it but reasonable we should Love him, who is in all respects thus Lovely: Indeed this is a duty so generally acknowledged, that if you should

ask

SUNDAY ask any man the question, whether he loves

1. God or no, he would think you did him great wrong to doubt of it; yet for all this, it is too plain, that there are very few, that do indeed *love* him, and this will soon be proved to you by examining a little, what are the *common effects* of *love*, which we bear to men like our selves, and then trying, whether we can shew any such *fruits* of our love to God.

*Fruit of
Love
Desire of
pleasing*

33. Of that sort there are diverse, but for shortness I will name but two. The *first* is a *Desire of pleasing*, the *second* a *Desire of enjoying*. There are constantly the *Fruits* of Love in the *first*, 'tis known by all, that he that loves any person, is very desirous to approve himself to him, to do whatsoever he thinks will be pleasing to him; and according to the degree of love, so is this desire more or less where we love *earnestly*, we are very earnest and careful to *please*. Now if we have indeed that *love* to God we pretend to, it will bring forth this fruit, we shall be careful to please him in all things. Therefore as you judge of the tree by its *fruits*, so may you judge of your love of God, by this fruit of it; nay indeed this is the way of tryal, which Christ himself hath given us, *John* 14. 15. *If ye love me keep my Commandments*; and St. *John* tells us, *1 E* 5. 3. *That this is the love of God, that we walk after his Commandments*, and where this *proof* is wanting, it will be impossible to justify our love to God.

34. But it must yet be farther considered

that this *love* of *God* must not be in a low or weak degree, for besides that the *Motives* to it, His *Excellency* and his *Kindness* are in the highest; the same *Commandment* which bids us *love God*, bids us *love him with all our heart, and with all our strength*, that is, as much as is possible for us, and above any thing else. And therefore to the fulfilling of this *Commandment*, it is necessary we *love him* in that degree; and if we do so, then certainly we shall have not only some slight and faint endeavours of *pleasing*, but such as are most diligent and earnest, such as will put us upon the most painful and costly duties, make us willing to forsake our own ease, goods, friends, yea, life it self, when we cannot keep them without disobeying *God*.

35. Now examine thy self by this; hast thou this fruit of love to shew? Doeſt thou make it thy constant and greatest care to keep *Gods Commandments*? To obey him in all things? Earnestly labouring to *please him* to the utmost of thy power, even to the forsaking of what is dearest to thee in this world? If thou dost, thou maist then truly say thou *lovest God*. But on the contrary, if thou wilfully continuest in the breach of many, nay, but of any one command of his, never deceive thy self, for the love of *God* abides not in thee. This will be made plain to you, if you consider what the *Scripture* saith of such, as that they are *enemies to God by their wicked works*, Col. 1. 21. That the *carnal minde* (and such is e-

SUNDAY very one that continues wilfully in sin) is enmity with God, Rom. 8. 7. That he that sin wilfully tramples under foot the Son of God, and doth despight unto the Spirit of Grace, Heb. 10. 29. and many the like. And therefore unless you can think enmity, and trampling, and despight to be fruits of love, you must not believe you love God, whilst you go on in any wilful disobedience to him.

Desire of
Enjoying.

36. A Second fruit of Love, I told you was desire of Enjoying. This is constantly to be seen in our love to one another. If you have a friend whom you intirely love, you desire his conversation, wish to be alwayes in his company: and thus will it also be in our love to God if that be as great and hearty as this.

37. There is a twofold Enjoying of God, the one Imperfect in this life, the other more Perfect and compleat in the life to come? that in this life is that conversation, as I may call it, which we have with God in his Ordinances in Praying and Meditating, in Hearing his Word in Receiving the Sacrament, which are all intended for this purpose, to bring us into an intimacy and familiarity with God by speaking to him, and hearing him speake to us.

38. Now if we do indeed love God, we shall certainly hugely value and desire the wayes of conversing with him, it being that that we can have in this life; it will make with David esteeme one day in Gods Court better then a thousand Psa 84. 10. we shall

Part. I. Of Love of God.

19

SUNDAY
I.

glad to have these opportunities of approaching to him as often as it is possible, and be careful to use them diligently, to that end of *uniting* us still more to him; yea we shall come to these spiritual exercises with the same chearfulness we would go to our *dearest friend*. And if indeed we do thus it is a good proof of our *Love*.

39. But I fear there are not many have this to shew for it, as appears by the common *backwardness* and unwillingness of men to come to these; and their negligence and heartlessness when they are at them; and can we think that God will ever own us for lovers of him, whilest we have such *dislikes* to his company, that we will never come into it but when we are *dragg'd* by *fear* or *shame* of men, or some such worldly Motive? It is sure you would not think that man loved you, whom you perceived to shun your company, and to be loath to come in your sight. And therefore be not so unreasonable as to say, *You love God*, when yet you desire to keep as far from him as you can.

40. But besides this, there is another *Enjoyment* of God, which is more perfect and *complete*, and that is our *perpetual* enjoying of him in heaven, where we shall be for ever *united* to him, and enjoy him not now and then only for *short* spaces of time, as we do here, but *continually* without *interruption*, or breaking off. And certainly if we have that *degree* of *love to God* we ought, this cannot but be most

SUNDAY

1.

earnestly desired by us so much, that we shall think no labour too great to compass it. The seven years that Jacob served for Rachel. Gen. 29. 20. seemed to him but a few dayes for the love that he had to her: and surely if we have love to God we shall not think the service of our whole lives too dear a price for this full Enjoyment of him, nor esteem all the Enjoyments of the world worth the looking on in comparison thereof.

41. If we can truly tell our selves we are thus long for this enjoyment of God, we may believe we love him. But I fear again there are but few that can thus approve their love. For if we look into mens lives, we shall see that they are not generally so fond of this Enjoyment as to be at any pains to purchase it. And not only so, but it is to be doubted, there are many who if it were put to their choice, whether they would live here alwayes to enjoy the profit and pleasure of the world, or go to heaven to enjoy God, would, like the children of Gad and Reuben, set up their rest on this side Jordan, Numb. 32. and never desire that heavenly Canaan; so close do their affections cleave to things below, which shews clearly they have not made God their treasure, then according to our Saviours Rule, Mat. 23. 21. their heart would be with him. Nay, rather yet; it is too plain that many of us set little value on this Enjoying of God, that we prefer the vilest and basest sins before him, and chuse to Enjoy them, though by it we utter lose our parts in Him, which is the case of

Part. I. of Fear, &c.

21

SUNDAY

L.

very man that continues wilfully in those sins.

42. And now I fear, according to these Rules of *Trial*, many that profess to love God, will be found not to do so. I conclude all with the words of St. *John 1 Ep. 3. 18.* Which though spoken of the love of our *brethren*, is very fitly applicable to this love of God, let *us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.*

43. A *Fourth* duty to God is FEAR; this arises from the consideration both of his *justice* and his *power*; his *justice* is such, that he will not clear the wicked, and his *Power* such that he is able to inflict the sorest punishments upon them; and that this is a reasonable cause of fear, *Christ* himself tells us, *Mat. 10. 18.* *Fear him which is able to destroy both body and soul in hell.* Many other places of *Scripture* there are, which commend to us this duty, as *Pf. 2. 11.* *Serve the Lord with fear: Psal. 34. 9.* *Fear the Lord ye that be his Saints.* *Prov. 9. 10.* *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom*, and divers the like; and indeed all the threatnings of wrath against sinners, which we meet with in the *Scripture*, are only to this end, to work this fear in our hearts.

44. Now this fear is nothing else, but such an awful regard of God, as may keep us from offending him. This the wise man tells us, *Pro. 16. 17.* *The fear of the Lord is to depart from evil*: so that none can be said truly to fear God, that is not thereby withheld from sin; and this is but answerable to that common fear we have towards man; who ever we know may hurt us, we will be ware of provoking, and therefore if we

SUNDAY be not as wary of *displeasing* God, it is plain we
 I. *fear* men more then we do him.

*The folly of
 fearing
 Men more
 then God.*

45. How great a madness this is, thus to
fear men above God, will soon appear if we
 compare what man can do to us with that
 which God can. And *first*, it is sure, it is not
 in the power of man (I might say *Devils* too)
 to do us any hurt unless God *permit* and suf-
 fer them to do it: so that if we do but keep
 him our friend, we may say with the *Pla-*
mist, *The Lord is on my side, I fear not what*
man can do unto me. For let their malice be
 never so great, he can restrain and keep them
 from hurting us, nay, he can change their
 mindes towards us, according to that of the
 wise man, Prov. 16. 7. *When a mans way*
please the Lord, he maketh even his enemies
be at peace with him. A notable example of
 this we have in *Jacob*, Gen. 32. who when his
 brother *Esan* was coming against him as an
 enemy, God wonderfully turned his heart, so
 that he met him with all the expressions of brotherly
 kindness, as you may read in the next
 Chapter.

46. But *secondly*, suppose men were left
 liberty to do thee what mischief they could
 alas, their power goes but a little way, they
 may perhaps rob thee of thy goods, it may be
 they may take away thy liberty or thy credit
 or perchance thy life too, but that the utmost
 knowest is the utmost they can do. But no
 God can do all this when he pleases, and that
 which is infinitely more, his vengeance reacheth

Part. I. Of Fear of God.

23

SUNDAY

I.

even beyond death it self, to the eternal misery both of *Body* and *Soul* in *hell*; in comparison of which, death is so inconsiderable, that we are not to look upon it with any dread. *Fear not them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do*, saith Christ, *Luk. 12. 4.* And then immediately adds, *But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear, fear him which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say unto you, Fear him.* In which words the comparison is set between that *greatest* ill we can suffer from man, the loss of *life*, and those sadder evils God can inflict on us; and the *latter* are found to be the only *dreadful* things, and therefore God only to be feared.

47. But there is yet one thing farther considerable in this matter, which is this, It is possible we may transgress against men and they not know it: I may perhaps *steal* my neighbours goods, or defile his wife, and keep it so close that he shall not suspect me, and so never bring me to punishment for it; but this we cannot do with God, he knows all things, even the most secret thoughts of our hearts; and therefore though we commit a sin never so closely, he is sure to finde us, and will as surely, if we do not timely repent, punish us eternally for it.

48. And now surely it cannot but be confessed, that it is much safer *displeasing* men, then God; yet alas our *practice* is as if we believed the *direct* contrary, there being nothing more ordinary with us then for the *avoiding* of

SUNDAY some present danger we fear from men, to
 I. rush our selves upon the *indignation* of God.
 And thus it is with us, when either to save our
estates, or *credits*, or our very *lives*, we com-
 mit any *sin*, for that is plainly the chusing to
 provoke God, rather than man.

49. But God knows this case of *fear* of *men*
 is not the only one wherein we venture to dis-
 please him, for we commit many sins, to which
 we have none of this temptation, nor indeed
 any other, as for instance that of *Communi-*
swearing, to which there is nothing either of
 pleasure, or profit to invite us. Nay, many
 times, we, who so *fear* the mischiefs that other
 men may do to us, that we are ready to buy
 them off with the greatest sins, do our selves
 bring all those very mischiefs upon us, by sin
 of our own chusing. Thus the careless *prodiga-*
ls himself of his *estate*, the *deceitful* and *dis-*
onest man, or any that lives in open *notorious*
sin, deprives himself of his *credit*, and the *Drun-*
kard and *Glutton* brings *diseases* on himself, to
 the *shortning* his life. And can we think we do
 at all *fear* God, when that fear hath so little
 power over us, that though it be backt with
 the many present *mischiefs* that attend upon
sin, it is not able to keep us from them? Surely
 such men are far from fearing God, that they
 rather seem to despise him, resolve to provoke
 him, whatsoever it cost them, either in this
 world or the next. Yet so unreasonably partial
 are we to our selves, that even such as they
 will pretend to this fear: you may examine
 multi-

multitudes of the most grots scandalous sinners, before you shall meet with one that will acknowledge he fears not God. It is strange it should be possible for men thus to cheat themselves; but however, it is certain we cannot deceive God, he will not be *mockt*, and therefore if we will not now so *fear* as to *avoid sin*, we shall one day *fear* when it will be too late to *avoid punishment*.

50. A *Fifth Duty* to God, that of TRUST-
ING in him, that is, *depending* and *resting* on him: and that is *first* in all *dangers*, *Secondly* in all *wants*. We are to rest on him in all our *dangers* both *Spiritual* and *Temporal*. Of the first sort, are all those *Temptations*, by which we are in *danger* to be *drawn* to *sin*. And in this respect he hath promised, that if we *resist the Devil* he *shall flie from us*, *Jam. 4. 7*. Therefore our duty is *first* to *pray earnestly* for Gods grace to enable us to overcome the *temptation*, and *secondly*, to set our selves manfully to combat with it, not yielding or giving consent to it in the least degree; and whilst we do thus, we are *confidently* to rest upon God, that his *grace* will be *sufficient* for us, that he will either remove the *temptation*, or *strengthen* us to *withstand* it.

TRUST.

In all *spiritual* dangers.

51. *Secondly*, in all outward & *Temporal* dangers, we are to rest upon him, as knowing that he is able to deliver us, and that he will do so if he see it best for us, & if we be such to whom he hath promised his protection, that is, such as truly fear him. To this purpose we have many *Promises* in *Scripture*, *Pl. 34. 7*. *The Angel of the Lord*
carrieth

In all *Temporal*.

SUNDAY *tarrieth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them: & Ps. 34. 20. The Lord delivereth the souls of his Saints, and all that put their trust in him shall not be destitute; and divers the like. And also we have many examples as that of the three children in the Furnace, Daniel 3. That of Daniel in the Lions Den, Daniel 6. And many others; all which serve to teach us this one lesson, that if we go on conscionably in performing our duty, we need not be dismayed for any thing that can befall us, for the God whom we serve is able to deliver us.*

*Not seek to
deliver
our selves
by any Sin.*

52. Therefore in all dangers we are first humbly to pray for his aid, and then to rest our selves chearfully on him; and assuring our selves that he will give such an issue as shall be most for our good. But above all things, we must be sure to fix our dependence wholly on him, and not to rely on the creatures for help, much less must we seek to deliver our selves by any unlawful means; that is, by the committing of any sin; for that is like *Saul*, 1 *Samuel* 28. 7. to go to the Witch, that is, to the Devil for help; such courses do commonly deceive our hopes at the present, and instead of delivering us out of our streights, plunge us in greater and those much more uncomfortable ones, because then we want that which is the only support Gods favour and aid, which we certainly forfeit when we thus seek to rescue our selves by any *sinfull* means. But supposing we could by such a way certainly free our selves from the present dangers, yet
alas

alas we are far from having gained safety by it, we have only removed the *danger* from that which was less considerable, and brought it upon the most precious part of us, our *Souls*; like an *unskilful Physician*, that to remove a pain from the *finger* strikes it to the *heart*; we are therefore grossly mistaken when we think we have played the good *Husband* in saving our *Liberties* or *Estates*, or *Lives* themselves by a sin; we have not saved them but madly *overbought* them, laid out our very *Souls* on them: And *Christ* tells us how little we shall gain by such bargains, *Mat. 17. 26. What is a man profited if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Let us therefore resolve never to value any thing we can possess in this world at so high a rate, as to keep it at the price of the least sin, but when ever things are driven to such an issue, that we must either part with some, perhaps all our worldly possessions, nay life it self or else commit a *sin*, let us then remember, that this is the *season* for us to perform that great and excellent duty of *taking up the Cross* which we can never so properly do as in this case, for our bearing of that which we have no possible way of *avoiding*, can at most be said to be but the *carrying* of the *Cross*, but then only can we be said to *take it up*, when having a means of escaping it by a sin, we rather chuse to endure the *Cross* then commit the *Sin*, for then it is not laid on us by any unavoidable necessity, but we willingly *chuse* it; and this is highly acceptable

SUNDAY I. ceptable with God, yea, withal so strictly required by him, that if we fail of performing it, when we are put to the *tryal*, we are not to be accounted followers of *Christ*, for so himself hath expressly told us, *Mat.* 16. 24. *If any man come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his Cross and follow me*, & so again, *Mark* 8. 34. It were therefore a good point of *Spiritual Wisdom* for us, sometimes by some *lower degrees* of *self-denial*, to fit our selves for this *greater*, when we shall be called to it; we know he that expects to run a *Race* will beforehand be often *breathing* himself, that he may not be foil'd when he comes to run for the *prize*, in like manner 'twill be fit for us, sometimes to *abridge* our selves somewhat of our *lawful* pleasure, or ease, or profit, so that we may get such a *mastery* over our selves, as to be able to renounce all, when our obedience to God requires it.

In all
wants spi-
ritual,

53. And as we are thus to *Trust* on God for *deliverance* from danger, so are we likewise for *supply* of our wants; and those again are either *Spiritual* or *Temporal*: our *Spiritual want* is that of his *Grace* to enable us to *serve* him, without which we can do nothing; and for this we are to depend on him, provided, we neglect not the means, which are *Prayer*, and a *Careful using* of what he hath already bestowed on us: For then we have his *promise* for it, *he will give the holy Spirit to them that ask it*, *Luke* 11. 15. And unto him that hath shall be given, *Mat.* 25. 29. that is, *To him that hath made a good use of that grace, he hath already,*
God

Part. 1. Of Trust, &c.

29

God will give more. We are not therefore to **SUNDAY**
affright our selves with the *difficulty* of those **I.**
things God requires of us, but *remember* he
commands nothing which he will not *enable*
usto perform, if we be not *wanting* to our
selves. And therefore let us sincerely do *our*
parts, and *confidently* assure our selves God
will not fail of *his*.

54. But we have likewise *Temporal* and **Temporal**
Bodily wants, and for the *supply* of them we **wants.**
are likewise to *rely* on him. And for this also
we want no *Promises*, supposing us to be of
the number of them to whom they are made,
that is, Gods faithful Servants: *They that*
fear the Lord lack nothing, Psal. 34. 9. & v. 10.
They that seek the Lord shall want no manner
of thing that is good: Again, Psal. 33. 18, 19.
Behold the eye of the Lord is upon them that
fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy, to
deliver their souls from death, and to feed them
in time of famine. Examples also we have
of this, as we may see in the case of *Elijah*,
and the poor *Widow*, 1 Kings 17. And many
others.

55. We are therefore to look up to him for
the provision of all things necessary for us,
according to that of the *Psalmist*, *The eyes of*
all wait upon thee, O Lord, and thou givest
them meat in due season. And our Saviour
hath taught us to *pray* for our *daily bread*;
thereby teaching us that we are to live in *con-*
tinual dependence upon God for it. Yet I mean
not by this, that we should so expect it from
God,

SUNDAY God, as to give up our selves to *idleness* and expect to be fed by *Miracles*. No, our honest *industry* and labour is the means by which God *ordinarily* gives us the *necessaries* of this life; and therefore we must by no means neglect that. He that will not labour, let him not eat, sayes the Apostle, 2 *Thess.* 3. 10. And we may believe God will pronounce the same sentence, and suffer the *slothful* person to want even necessary food. But when we have faithfully used our owne *endeavour*, then we must also look up to God for his blessing on it, without which it can never prosper to us. And having done thus, we may comfortably rest our selves on his *Providence* for such a measure of these *outward* things as he sees fittest for us.

56. But if our *condition* be such that we are not able to labour, and have no other means of bringing in the *necessaries* of life to our selves, yet even then we are *cheerfully* to rest upon God, believing that he who feeds the *Ravens*, will by some means or other, though we know not what, provide for us so long as he pleases we shall continue in this world, and never in any case torment our selves with *carking* and *distrustful* thoughts; but as the Apostle, 1 *Pet.* 5.7. Cast all our care on him who careth for us.

57. This is earnestly prest by our Saviour, *Mat.* 6. where he abundantly shewes the folly of this sin of *distrust*. The place is a most excellent one, and therefore I shall se

Part. 1. Of Trust in God.

31

SUNDAY
1.

it down at large, Verse 25. Therefore, I say unto you, take no thought for your life, what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; neither for your body, what you shall put on; is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment? Behold the fowls of the Air, for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns, yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they? Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit to his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the Lilies of the field how they grow, they toil not, neither do they spin, and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the Oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little Faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? Or what shall we drink? Or wherewithal shall we be clothed? (for after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the Kingdome of God and his righteousness, and then all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for to morrow, for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self, sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof. I might adde many other texts to this purpose, but this is so full and convincing, that I suppose it needs less.

The benefits of trusting on God.

58. All therefore that I shall say more concerning this duty, is to put you in minde of the great

SUNDAY

I.

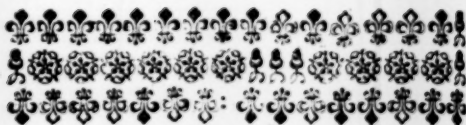
great *benefits* of it ; as *first*, that by his *trusting* upon God, you engage and binde him to *provide* for you. Men, you know, think themselves highly concern'd not to fail those that depend and *trust* upon them ; and certainly God doth so much more. But then *secondly*, there is a great deal of *ease* and quiet in the practice of this duty ; it delivers us from all those *carkings* and *immoderate* cares which disquiet our minds, break our sleep, and gnaw even our very heart. I doubt not but those that have felt them, need not be told they are uneasy. But then me thinks that *uneasiness* should make us forward to embrace the means for the removing of them, and so we see it too often doth in *unlawful* ones ; men will *cheat*, and *steal*, and *lie*, and do any thing to deliver themselves from the *fear* of *want*. But alas ! they commonly prove but deceitful remedies ; they bring Gods curse on us, and are more likely to betray us to *want*, then to keep us from it. But if you desire a certain and unfailing cure for *cares*, take this of *relying* upon God.

59. For what should cause that man to *fear want* that knows he hath one that cares for him, who is *All-sufficient*, and will not suffer him to want what is fit for him ? If a *poor* man had but a *faithful promise* from a *wealthy* person that he would never suffer him to *want*, it is sure he would be highly cheered with it, and would not then think fit to be as *carking* as he was before, and yet a mans promise may

fail us, he may either grow *poor* and not be *able*, or he may prove *false* and not be *willing* to make good his word. But we know God is subject neither to impoverishing nor deceit. And therefore how vile an injury do we offer to him if we dare not trust as much upon his *promise* as we would that of a *man*? Yea, and how great a mischief do we do our selves by loading our mindes with a multitude of vexatious and tormenting cares, when we may so securely cast *our burden upon God*? I conclude this in the words of the Apostle, *Phil. 4. 6. Be careful for nothing, but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.*

D

PAR-



PARTITION II.

Of Humility, of Submission to Gods Will, in respect of Obedience ; of Patience in all sorts of sufferings, and of Honour due to God in several wayes, in his House, possessions, his Day, Word, Sacraments, &c.

HUMILI-
TY.

§. 1.

A

SIXTH Duty to God is HUMILITY, that is, such a sense of our own *meanness* and his *excellency*, as may work in us lowly and unfeigned *submission* to him : This *Submission* is twofold ; first, to his Will, secondly, to his *Wisdom*.

ly and unfeigned *submission* to him : This *Submission* is twofold ; first, to his Will, secondly, to his *Wisdom*.

Submission to Gods will in respect of obedience.

2. The *submission* to his Will is also of two sorts, the *submission* either of *obedience* or *patience*, that of *obedience* is our ready yielding our selves up to *do* his Will, so that when

God

Part. 2. of Humility, &c.

35

SUNDAY

11.

God hath by his command made known to us what his *pleasure* is, *cheerfully* and readily to set about it. To enable us to this, *humility* is exceeding necessary; for a *proud* person is of all others the unaptest to obey, and we see men never pay an obedience but where they acknowledge the person commanding to be some way above them. And so it is here, if we be not thoroughly perswaded that God is infinitely *above* us, that we are *vile* and nothing in comparison of him, we shall never pay our due obedience.

3. Therefore if ever you mean to obey intirely (as you must if ever you mean to be *saved*) get your hearts posselt with the *sense* of that great unspeakable *distance* that is between God and you. Consider him as he is a God of *infinite Majesty and glory*; and we poor *worms* of the earth; he *infinite* in *power*, able to do all things, and we able to *do nothing*, not so much as to make one *hair white or black*, as our Saviour speaks, *Mat. 5. 36*. He of *infinite purity and holiness*, and we *polluted and defiled*, wallowing in all kinde of sins and uncleanness; he *unchangeable* and constant, and we subject to *change* and alteration every minute of our lives. He *Eternal and Immortal*, and we frail *mortals*, that when ever he *taketh away our breath* we *die*, and are *turned again to our dust*, Psalm 104. 29. Consider all this, I say, and you cannot but acknowledge a wide *difference* between God and man, and therefore may well cry out with *Job*, after he

The great distance between God and us.

SUNDAY had approach't so near to God, as to discern
 II. somewhat of his excellency, Job 42. 56. Now
*mine eye seeth thee, wherefore I abhor my self
 and repent in dust and ashes.*

The un-
 worthiness
 of our best
 work.

4. And even when this *Humility* hath brought us to obedience it is not then to be cast off, as if we had no further use of it; for there is still great use, nay necessity of it, to keep us from any high conceits of our performances, which if we once entertain, it will blast the best of them, and make them utterly unacceptable to God; like the strictness of the *Pharisee*, which when once he came to boast of, the *Publican* was preferred before him, *Luke* 18. The best of our works are so full of infirmity and pollution, that if we compare them with that perfection and purity, which is in God, we may truly say with the *Prophet*, *All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags*, *Isaiah* 64. 6. And therefore to pride ourselves in them, is the same madness, that it would be in a beggar to brag of his apparel when it is nothing but vile rags and tatters. Our Saviours precept in this matter must always be remembred, *Luke* 17. 10. *When you have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants*. if when we have done all, we must give ourselves no better a title, what are we then to esteem ourselves, that are so far from doing any considerable part of what we are commanded? Surely that worser name of *sloughful and wicked servant*, *Matthew* 25. 26.

Part. 2. of *Patience*, &c.

37

we have no reason to think too bad for SUNDAY II.
us.

5. A *Second* sort of *Submission* to His Will, is that of *Patience*; this stands in *suffering* his will, as that of obedience did in acting it, and is nothing else, but a *willing* and quiet yielding to whatever *afflictions* it pleases God to lay upon us. This the forementioned *humility* will make easie to us, for when our hearts are throughly possess'd with that *reverence* and esteem of God, it will be impossible for us to grudge or murmur at whatever he does. We see an instance of it in Old *Eli*, 1 *Sam.* 3. Who after he had heard the sad threatnings of God against him, of the destruction of his family, the loss of the Priesthood, the cutting off both his sons in one day, which were all of them afflictions of the heaviest kinde, yet this one consideration, that it was the Lord, inabled him calmly and quietly to yield to them; saying, *Let him do what seemeth him good*, Verse 18. The same effect it had on *David*, in his *suffering*, Psalm 39. 9. *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth because thou didst it: God doing it sh need all murmurings and grumbings in him.* And so must it do in us, in all our afflictions, if we will indeed approve our humility to God.

6. For surely you will not think that child hath due humility to his parent, or that servant to his Master, that when they are corrected, shall flie in the *Father* or *Masters*

SUNDAY

II.

sters face. But thus do we when ever we grudge and repine at that which God layes upon us. But besides the want of Humility in our so doing, there is also a great want of justice in it, for God hath, as we are his creatures, a Right to do with us what he will, and therefore for us to resist that *right* of his, is the highest injustice that can be; nay farther, it is also the greatest *folly* in the world, for it is only our good that God aims at in afflicting us; that heavenly Father is not like our earthly ones, who sometime correct their children only to satisfie their own angry humour, not to do them good. But this is subject to no such frailties, *he doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men* Lam. 3. 33. They are our sins, which do not only give him just cause, but even force and necessitate him to punish us. He carries to us the bowels and affections of the tenderest Father: now when a Father sees his child *stubborn* and rebellious, and running on in a course that will certainly undoe him, what greater act of Fatherly kindness can he do then chasten and correct him, to see if by that means he may amend him; nay indeed he could not be said to have true kindness to him if he should not. And thus it is with God when he sees us run on in sin, either he must leave off to love us, and so leave us to our selves to take our own course, and that is the heaviest curse that can befall any man; or else if he continue to love us, he must *correct* and punish us to bring

us to amendment. Therefore when ever he strikes, we are in all reason, not only *patiently* to lie under his rod, but (as I may say) kills it also; that is, be very *thankful* to him, that he is pleased not to give us over to our own hearts lusts Psal. 18. 12. but still continues his care of us; sends *afflictions*, as so many messengers to call us home to himself. You see then how gross a *folly* it is to murmur at those stripes, which are meant so graciously; it is like that of a *froward Patient*, which reproaches and reviles the *Physician* that comes to cure him, and if such a one be left to die of his disease, every one knows whom he is to thank for it.

SUNDAY
II.Thankful-
ness for
Gods Cor-
rections.

7. But it is not only quietness, no nor thankfulness neither under *afflictions*, that is the full of our Duty in this matter; we must have *fruitfulness* also, or all the rest will stand us in no stead. By fruitfulness I mean the bringing forth that, which the afflictions were sent to work in us; viz. the *amendment* of our lives. To which purpose in time of *affliction* it is very necessary for us to call our selves to an account, to *examine* our hearts and lives, and search diligently, what *Sins* lie upon us, which provoked God thus to smite us, and whatsoever we find our selves guilty of, humbly to confess to God and immediately to forsake for the rest of our time.

Fruitful-
ness under
them.

8. All I shall adde concerning this duty of *patience*, is, that we are as much bound to it in one sort of *sufferings*, as another, whether our *suffering* be so immediately from Gods hand,

In all sorts
of suffer-
ings.

SUNDAY hand, that no creature hath any thing to doe in it, as *sickness*, or the like; or whether it be such, wherein *men* are the instruments of afflicting us. For it is most sure, when any man doth us hurt, he could not do it, without *Gods* permission and sufferance, and God may as well make them the instruments of punishing us, as do it more directly by himself; and it is but a counterfeite patience, that pretends to submit to God, and yet can bear nothing from men; we see holy *Job*, who is set forth to us as a *patterne* of true patience, made no such difference in his afflictions, he took the loss of his *Cattel*, which the *Caldeans* and *Sabeans* robb'd him of, with the very same meekeness with which he did that which was consumed by fire from *Heaven*. when therefore we suffer any thing from men, be it never so unjustly in respect of them, we are yet to confess it is most just in respect of God, and therefore in stead of looking upon them with rage and *revenge*, as the common custome of the world is, we are to look up to God, acknowledge his justice in the affliction, begging his pardon most earnestly for those sins, which have provoked him to send it, and patiently and thankfully bear it, till he shall see fit to remove it; still saying with *Job*, *blessed be the name of the Lord*.

*Submission
to Gods
Wisdom.*

9. But I told you *Humility* contained in it a submission not only to his *Will*, but also

Part.2. Of Patience, &c.

41

SUNDAY
II.

to his *Wisdom*; that is, to acknowledge him infinitely Wise, and therefore that whatever he doth is best and fittest to be done. And this we are to confess both in his *Commands*, and in his *Disposing* and ordering of things: First, whatsoever he commands us either to believe or do, we are to submit to his *Wisdom* in both, to *believe* whatever he bids us *believe*, how impossible soever it seems to our shallow understandings, and to do whatever he *commands* us to do, how contrary soever it be to our fleshly *Reason* or humour, and in both to conclude, that his *Commands* are most fit and *Reasonable* however they appear to us.

In his Com-
mands.

10. Secondly, We are to *submit* to his *Wisdom* in respect of his *Disposal* and *Ordering* of things; to acknowledge he disposes all things most Wisely, and that not only in what concerns the *world* in general; but also in what concerns every one of us in particular; so that what condition soever he puts us in, we are to assure our selves it is that which is *best* for us, since he *chooses* it for us who cannot erre. And therefore never to have impatient desires of any thing in this world, but to leave it to God to fit us with such an *estate* and *condition* as he sees best for us, and there let us quietly and contentedly rest; yea, though it be such as of all others we should least have wisht for our selves. And this surely cannot but appear very reasonable to any that hath *humility*;

In his Dis-
posals.

SUNDAY

II.

mildly ; for that having taught him, that God is *infinitely wise*, and he very *foolish*, he can never doubt but that it is much more for his good that God should *chuse* for him, than he for himself ; even as it is much more for the childes good to have the Parent *chuse* for it, then to be left to those *filly choices* it would make for its self. For how many times would it cut and burn, and mischief it self if it might have every thing it desires? And such children are we, we many times eagerly desire those things which would undoe us if we had them. Thus many times we wish for *Wealth*, and *Honour*, and *Beauty*, and the like, when if we had them they would only prove *snares* to us, we should be drawn into sin by them. And this God, who knowes all things, sees, though we do not, and therefore often denies us those things which he sees will tend to our mischief, and it is his abundant mercy that he doth so. Let us therefore when ever we be disappointed of any of our aims and wishes, not only *patiently* but *joyfully* submit to it, as knowing that it is certainly best for us, it being chosen by the unerring wilddome of our heavenly Father.

Honour.

11. A *seventh* Duty to God is HONOR, that is, the paying him such a *reverence* and respect as belongs to so great a Majesty. And this is either *inward* or *outward*. The inward is the exalting him in our *hearts*, having alwayes the highest and most excellent esteem of him. The outward is the manifesting and shewing forth

Part.2. of Honouring God, &c.

43

SUNDAY
II.

forth that *inward*; and that is the first *general* in the whole course of our lives, the living like men that do indeed carry that high *esteem* of God. Now you know if we bear any special *Reverence* but to a Man, we will be careful not to do any foul or base thing in his *presence*, and so if we do indeed *honour* God, we shall abhor to do any *unworthy* thing in his sight. But God sees all things, and therefore there is no way to *shun* the doing it in his sight if we do it at all; therefore if we do thus *reverence* him, we must never at any time do any sinful thing.

12. But besides this *general* way of *honouring* God, there are many *particular acts* by which we may honour him, and those *acts* are divers, according to the several particulars about which they are exercised. For we are to pay his honour not only *immediately* to himself, but also by a due estimation and account of all those things that nearly *relate* or belong to him. Those are especially six; *first*, his *House*, *secondly*, his *Revenue* or *income* (as I may say) *thirdly*, his *Day*, *fourthly*, his *Word*, *fifthly*, his *Sacraments*, and *sixthly*, his *Name*; and every one of these is to have some degree of our *Reverence* and *Esteem*.

Several
ways of
honouring
God.

13. *First*, his *House*, that is, the *Church*, *In his* which being the place set apart for his publick *House*. worship, we are to look on it, though not as *Holy* in respect of it self, yet in respect of its use, and therefore must not prophane it by imploying it to uses of our own. This Christ hath

SUNDAY hath taught us by that act of his, *Matthew 21.*
II. 12. in driving the buyers and sellers out of the Temple, saying, *My house is called the house of prayer:* And again, *John 2. 16. Make not my Fathers house a house of Merchandize.* By which it is clear, *Churches* are to be used only for the services of God, and we are to make that the only end of our coming thither, and not to come to Church as to a *Market*, to make bargains or dispatch businesses with our neighbours, as is too common among many. But when ever thou entrest the Church, remember that it is the *House of God*, a place where he is in an especial manner present, and therefore take the counsel of the Wise man, *Eccles. 5. 1. and keep thy foot when thou goest into the house of God;* that is, behave thy self with that godly awe and reverence which belongs to that great *Majesty* thou art before. Remember that thy business there is to converse with God, and therefore shut out all thoughts of the world, even of thy most lawful business, which though they be allowable at another time, are here sinful. How fearful a guilt it is then to entertain any such thoughts as are in themselves wicked? It is like the treason of *Judas*, who pretended indeed to come to kisse his *Master*, but brought with him a *band of Souldiers* to apprehend him, *Matthew 26.* We make shew in our coming to Church, of serving and worshipping God, but we bring with us a

Part. 2. Of Honouring God, &c.

45

STAIN of his enemies to provoke and despise him. This is a wickedness that may out-vie the profaneness of these dayes, in turning *Churches* into *Stables*; for sinful and polluted thoughts are much the worst sort of beasts.

SUNDAY
II.

14. The *second* thing to which respect belongs, is his *Revenue* or income; that is, whatsoever is his peculiar possessions, set apart for the maintenance of those that attend his *Service*; those were the *Priests* in time of the Law, and *Ministers* of the Gospel now with us. And whatever is thus set apart, we must look on with such respect as not to dare to turn it to any *other* use. Of this sort some are the *free-will-offerings* of men, who have sometimes of their own accord given some of their Goods or Lands to this *Holy* use; and whatsoever is so given, can neither by the person that gave, nor any other be taken away without that great sin of *Sacrilege*.

His possess.
ions.

15. But besides these, there was among the *Jews*, and hath alwayes been in all *Christian* Nations, something allotted by the *Law* of the Nation for the support and maintenance of those that attend the *service* of God. And it is but just and necessary it should be so, that those who by undertaking that *Calling* are taken off from the wayes of gaining a livelihood in the world, should be provided for by them whose souls they watch over. And therefore it is most reasonable, which the *Apostle*

SUNDAY

11.

postle urges in this matter, 1 Cor. 9. 11. *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?* That is, it is most unreasonable for men to grudge the bestowing a few carnal things, the outward necessities of this temporal life, on them from whom they receive spiritual things, even instruction and assistance towards the obtaining of an eternal life.

*The great
sin of Sa-
cristledge.*

16. Now whatsoever is thus appointed for this use, may by no means be employed to any other. And therefore those *Tithes* which are here by *Law* allotted for the maintenance of the *Ministry*, must by no means be kept back, nor any tricks or shifts used to avoid the payment either in whole or in part. For first, it is certain, that it is as truly *theft* as any other robbery can be, *Ministers* having right to their *Tithes* by the same *Law* which gives any other man right to his estate. But then *secondly*, it is another manner of robbery then we think of, it is a *robbing of God*, whose *Service* they were given to maintain, and that you may not doubt the truth of this, it is no more then God himself hath said of it, *Mal. 3. 8. Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me; yet ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In Tithes and offerings.* Here it is most plain that in Gods account the withholding *Tithes* is a *robbing of him*. And if you please you may in the next verse see what the gains of this robbery amounts to, *Ye are cursed with a curse: A curse is all is gotten by it; and common experience shews*

Part. 2. of the Lords Day, &c. 47

that *GODS* vengeance doth in a remarkable **SUNDAY** manner pursue this sin of Sacrilege, whether **II.** it be that of withholding *Tithes*, or the other offeizing on those *possessions*, which have been *The punish-* voluntarily consecrated to God. Men think *ment.* to enrich themselves by it, but it usually proves directly contrary; this unlawfull gain becomes such a Canker in the estate, as often eats out even that we had a *just* title to. And therefore if you love (I will not say your souls, but) your estates, preserve them from that danger by a strict care never to meddle with any thing set a part for God.

17. A *Third* thing, wherein we are to express our *Reverence* to God; is the hallowing of the *Times*, set apart for his *Service*. He *The times for his service.* who hath given all our time, requires some part of it to be paid back again, as a rent or *tribute* of the whole. Thus the *Jews* kept holy the *seventh day*; and we *Christians* the *Sunday*, or *Lords day*; the *Jews* were in their *Sabbath* especially to remember the *Creation* of the world, and we in ours, the *Resurrection* of *Christ*, by which a way is made for us into that better world we expect hereafter. Now this Day thus set apart, is to be imployed in the **Lords day.** Worship and Service of God, & that *first* more solemnly and *publickly* in the *Congregation*, from which no man must then absent himself without a just cause: and *secondly*, privately at home, in praying with, and instructing our Families, or else in the yet more private duties of the closet, a mans own *private prayers*, reading

SUNDAY *Reading, Meditating, and the like.*

II.

And that we may be at leisure for these *Rest* from all worldly business is commanded: therefore let no man think that a *bare rest* from labour is all that is required of him on the *Lords day*, but the time which he save from the works of his calling, he is to lay out on those spiritual duties. For the *Lords Day* was never ordained to give us a pretence for idleness, but only to change our employment from worldly to heavenly, much less was it meant that by our rest from our callings we should have more time free to bestow upon our sins, as too many do, who are more constant on that day at the *Alehouse* than the *Church*. But this Rest was commanded, *first* to shew out to us that *Rest* from *sin* which we are bound to all the *dayes of our lives*. And *secondly*, to take us off from our worldly business, and give us time to attend the service of God and the need of our souls.

18. And surely if we rightly consider it, it is a very great benefit to us that there is but a *set time* thus weekly returning for that purpose. We are very intent and busie upon the world, and if there were not some *set time* appointed to our hands, it is to be doubted we should hardly allot any our selves. And then what a starved condition must these poor souls of ours be in, that shall never be afforded a meal? Whereas now there is a *constant diet* provided for them every *Sunday*, if we will conscionably imple

it, may be a *festival* day to them, may bring them in such spiritual food, as may nourish them to eternal life. We are not to look on this day with grudging, like those in *Amos* 8. 5. Who ask, *When will the Sabbath be gone, that we may set forth wheat?* As if that time were utterly lost, which were taken from our worldly buineſs. But we are to conſider it, as the gainfulleſt, as the joyfulleſt day of the week, a day of *harveſt*, wherein we are to lay up in ſtore for the whole week, nay for our whole lives.

19. But beſides this of the weekly *Lords* day, there are other times, which the Church hath ſet apart for the remembrance of ſome ſpecial mercies of God, ſuch as the *Birth* and *Reſurrection* of *Chriſt*, the *Deſcent* of the *Holy Ghoſt*, and the like; and theſe dayes we are to keep in that manner which the Church hath ordered, to wit, in the ſolemn worſhip of God, and in particular *thanksgiving* for that ſpecial bleſſing we then remember. And ſurely whoever is truly thankful for thoſe rich mercies, cannot think it too much to ſet apart ſome few dayes in a year for that purpoſe.

But then we are to look that our *Feaſts* be truly ſpiritual, by imploying the day thus ho-
lily, and not make it an occaſion of intem-
perance and diſorder, as too many, who con-
ſider nothing in *Chriſtmas* and other good
times, but the good cheers and jollitie of them.
For that is doing deſpight, in ſtead of honour
to *Chriſt*, who came to bring all purity and

SUNDAY

II.

soberness into the world, and therefore must not have that coming of his remembered in any other manner.

20. Other Dayes there are also set apart in *memory* of the *Apostles*, and other *Saints*, wherein we are to give hearty thanks to God, for his graces in them particularly, that they were made instruments of *revealing* to us *Christ Jesus*, and the way of salvation, as you know the *Apostles*, were by their Preaching throughout the world. And then farther, we are to meditate on those *Examples* of holy life, they have given us, and stir up our selves to the imitation thereof. And whoever does uprightly set himself to make these *uses* of these several *Holy dayes*, will have cause, by the *benefit* he shall finde from them, to thank and not to blame the *Church* for ordering them.

The Fasts.

21. Another sort of dayes there are, which we are likewise to observe, and those are dayes of *Fasting* and *Humiliation*; and whatever of this kinde the *Church* enjoyns, whether constantly at set times of the *year*, or upon a *special* and more sudden occasion, we are to observe in such manner as she directs; that is not only a bare abstaining from *meat*, which is only the bodies punishment; but in afflicting our souls, humbling them deeply before God in a *heartly* confessing, and bewailing of our own, and the *nations* sins, and earnest prayer for Gods *pardon*, and *forgiveness*, and for turning away of those *judgements*, which threaten

Part. 2. of Gods Word, &c.

51

SUNDAY
II.

sins have called for: but above all, in *turning* our selves from our *sins*, *loosing* the bands of wickedness, as *Isaiah* speaks, Chap. 58. 6. and exercising our selves in *works* of *mercy*, *dealing* our bread to the hungry, and the like, as it there follows.

22. *Fourthly*, we are to express our *Re- Gods word.*
verence to God, by *Honouring* his *Word*; and this we must certainly do, if we do indeed *honour* him; there being no surer signe of our despising any person, then the setting light, by what he *says* to us; as on the contrary, if we value One, every word he speaks will be of weight with us. Now this *Word* of *God* is expressly contained in the *holy Scriptures*, the *Old* and *New Testament*, where he speaks to us; to shew us his *Will* and our duty. And therefore to this *word* of his, we are to bear a wonderful respect, to look upon it, as the *rules* by which we must frame all the actions of our life; and to that end to study it much, to read in it as often as we can, if it may be, never to let a day pass us without *reading* or *bearing* some part of it read. *The holy Scriptures.*

23. But then that is not all: we must not only read, but we must mark what we read, we must diligently observe, what *Duties* there are which God commands us to perform, what *faults* they are, which God there charges us not to commit, together with the *rewards* promised to the one, and the *punishment* threatened to the other. When we have thus marked, we must lay them up in our memorie, not

SUNDAY so loosely & carelessly that they shall presently drop out again ; but we must so fasten them there by often thinking and meditating on them, that we may have them ready for our use. Now that use is the directing of our lives and therefore when ever we are tempted to the committing of any evil, we are then to call to minde this is the thing which in such a Scripture is forbidden by God, and all his vengeances threatned against it ; and so in like manner when any opportunity is offered us of doing good, to remember, this is the duty which was exhorted to in such a Scripture, and such glorious rewards promised to the doing of it and by these considerations strengthen ourselves for resisting of the evil and performing of the good.

24. But besides this of the written Word it hath pleased God to provide yet further for our instruction by his Ministers whose Office it is to teach us Gods Will not by saying any thing contrary to the written Word (for whatsoever is so, can never be Gods Will) but by Explaining it, and making it easier to our understandings, and then applying it to our particular occasions and exhorting and stirring us up to the practice of it ; all which is the end at which both their Catechizing and then their Preaching aimeth. And to this we are to bear also a due respect by giving diligent heed thereto, not only being present at Catechizings and Sermons, and either sleep out the time, or thin

of somewhat else, but carefully marking what is said to us. And surely if we did but rightly consider, how much it *concerns* us, we should conclude it very reasonable for us to do so.

25. For *first* as to that of *Catechizing*, *Catechizing* is the laying the *foundation* upon which all *Christian practice* must be built, for that is the teaching us our *duty*, without which it is impossible for us to perform it. And though it is true, that the *Scriptures* are the *Fountains*, from whence this *knowledge* of *duty* must be fetched, yet there are many who are not able to *draw* it from this *Fountain* themselves, and therefore it is absolutely *necessary* it should be thus brought to them by others.

26. This *Catechizing* is generally look't on as a thing belonging only to the *youth*, and so indeed it ought, not because the *oldest* are not to learn, if they be ignorant, but because all *children* should be so instructed, that it should be impossible for them, to be ignorant when they come to years. And it nearly concerns every *Parent*, as they will free themselves from the guilt of their childrens eternal undoing, that they be careful to seethem instructed in all necessary things; to which purpose it will be fit early to teach them some short *Catechisme*, of which sort none so fit as the *Church Catechisme*; yet are they not to rest on these endeavours of their own; but also to call in the *Ministers* help, that he may build them up farther in *Christian knowledge*.

SUNDAY
II.

27. But alas! It is too sure that *parents* have very much neglected this *Duty*, and by that means it is that such multitudes of men and women that are called *Christians*, know more of Christ or any thing that concerns their own Souls, then the meerest *Heathen*.

28. But although it were their *Parents* fault that they were not instructed when they were young, yet it is now their own if they remain still ignorant; and it is sure it will be their own ruine and misery if they wilfully continue so. Therefore whoever it be, of what age or condition soever, that is in this ignorant estate, or in any such degree of it, that he wants any part of necessary saving knowledge, let him as he loves his soul, as ever he would escape eternal damnation, seek out for *instruction*, and let no fear of shame keep him from it: for *first*, it is certain the shame belongs only to the wilful continuing in ignorance, which the desire of learning is directly contrary, and is so far from a shameful, that it is a most commendable thing, and will be sure to be accounted by all wise and good men. But *secondly*, suppose some prophane, senseless people should deride it, yet sure that shame were in all reason to be undergone joyfully rather then venture on that confusion of face which will at the Day of *Judgement* befall those, who avoid a little false shame amongst men, have gone on in a wilful ignorance of their duty, which ignorance will be so far from excusing any sins they shall commit, that it addes on

great and heavie sin to all the rest, even the *despising* that knowledg which is offered to them. How hainous a sin that is, you may learn in the first Chapter of the *Proverbs*; where *hating knowledge*, v. 29. is said to be the thing that draws down those sad vengeance forementioned, even *Gods forsaking men, laughing* at their calamity in stead of helping them: which is of all other conditions in the world the most miserable, and surely they are madly desperate that will run themselves into it.

29. As for those who have already this foundation laid by the knowledg of the *grounds* of *Christian Religion*, there is yet for them a farther help provided by *Preaching*. And it is no more then needs, for God knows those that understand their duty well enough are too apt to forget it; nay, sometimes by the *violence* of their own *lusts* to transgress i. even when they do remember it, and therefore it is very useful we should be put in minde of it to prevent our *forgetting*, and also often *exhorted* and *assisted* to *withstand* those *lusts* which draw us to those transgressions. And to these purposes preaching is intended, *first*, to warn us to be upon our guard against our spiritual enemy, and then to furnish us with weapons for the fight; that is, such means and helps as may best enable us to beat off *temptations* and get the victory over them.

30. Since therefore this is the end of *Preaching*, we must not think we have done our duty when we have heard a *Sermon*, though

SUNDAY never so attentively, but we must lay up in our hearts those *instructions* and advices we there meet with, and use them faithfully to that end *overcoming* our sins. Therefore when ever thou comest to the *Physician* of thy *Soul*, do as thou wouldst with the *Physician* of thy *Body*; when thou comest to him not only to hear him *talk* and tell thee what will cure thee, but also to do according to his directions; and if thou dost not so here, thou art as vain as he that expects a bare *receipt* from his *Doctor* shall cure him though he never make use of it. Nay, thou art much more vain and ridiculous, for though it do him no good will do him no harm, he shall never be the worse for having been taught a *medicine* though he use it not; but in these *Spiritual Receipts* it is otherwise; if we use them not to our good they will do us a great deal of harm, they will rise up in judgement against us, and make our condemnation so much the heavier. Beware therefore not to bring that danger upon thy self, but when thou hast heard a *Sermon*, consider with thy self what *directions* there were in it for enabling thee to eschew evil, or to do good. And if there were any thing especially concern'd thine own *bosom*-sin, lay that close to thy heart, and all the week after make it matter of meditation, think of it even whilst thou art at thy work, if thou wantest other time; and not only think of it, but set to the practice of it, do what thou wert advised to, for the *subduing* sin and quickning *grace* in thee. Finally, look

carefully to practice the counsel of the Apostle, **SUNDAY**
Jam. 1. 22. *Be ye doers of the Word, not hearers* II.
only deceiving your own souls. To hope for

good from the Word without doing of it, is, it seems, nothing but a deceiving our selves: Let us never therefore measure our godliness by the number of Sermons which we hear, as if the hearing many were the certain mark of a good Christian; but by the store of *fruit* we bring forth by them, without which all our hearing will serve but to bring us into that heavier portion of *stripes*, which belongs to him that *knows his Masters will and does it not*, Luke 12. 47. But this reverence which is due to *Preaching* we must not pay to all that is now a dayes called so, for God knows there are many *false Prophets gone out into the world*, as the Apostle speaks. 1 *John* 4. 1. And now, if ever, is that advice of his necessary, *To try the spirits whether they be of God.* But what I have said, I mean only of the Preaching of those who first have a *lawful calling* to the Office, & secondly frame their doctrine according to the right rule, the written Word of God. But if any man say, he is not able to *judge* whether the Doctrine be according to the Word or no, let him at least try it by the common known rules of *duty* which he doth understand, and if he find it a Doctrine giving men libertie to commit those things which are by all acknowledged *sins*, such as *rebellion, injustice, unmercifulness, uncleanness*, or the like, he may conclude, it is utterly contrary to God and his Word, and

SUNDAY & then *abhorrence*, & not *reverence* belongs to it.

II.
The Sacraments.

31. *Fifthly*, we are to express our *honouring* of God by *reverencing* his *Sacraments*: those are two; *Baptisme*, and the *Supper of the Lord*. And this we are to do; *First* by our *high esteem* of them, *Secondly*, by our *reverent usage* of them; we are *first* to prize them at a *high rate*, looking on them, as the instruments of bringing to us the greatest blessings we can receive. The *first* of them *Baptisme*, that enters us into covenant with God, makes us *members* of *Christ*, and so gives us right to all those precious benefits, that flow from him, to wit, *pardon of sins*, *sanctifying grace* and *heaven* it self, on condition we perform our parts of the *Covenant*. And as for the *Lords Supper*, that is not only a *signe* and *remembrance* of *Christ* and his *Death*; but it is actually the *giving* *Christ*, and all the *fruits* of his *death* to every worthy receiver; and therefore there is a most high estimation, and value due to each of them.

Of Baptisme.

32. And not only so; but in the *second* place we must shew our *reverence* in our *usage* of them; and that, *first*, *before*, *Secondly*, *At*, *thirdly*, *After* the time of *Receiving* them. It is true that the *Sacrament* of *Baptisme* being now administered to us, when we are *Infants*, it is not to be expected of us, that we should in our *own persons* do any thing, either before or at the time of receiving it, those performances were strictly required of all persons, who were *baptized* when they were of *years*. But for

us,

Part. 2. *The Vow of Baptisme, &c.* 59

us, it suffices to give us this right to *Baptisme*, SUNDAY
 that we are *born* within the pale of the *Church*, II.
 that is, of *Christian parents*; and all that is
 required at that time is what we can only per-
 form by others, they in our stead *promising* that
 when we come to *years* we will *perform* our
 parts of the *Covenant*. But by how much the
 less we are then able to do so much, the greater
 bond lies on us to perform those *after-duties*
required of us, by which we are to supply the
want of the former.

33. Now if you would know what those *The vow of*
duties are, look over those *promises* which your *Baptisme.*
Godfathers and *Godmothers* then made in your
 name, and you may then learn them. I can-
 not give you them in a better form then that
 of our *Churches Catechisme*, which tells, *That*
our Godfathers and Godmothers did promise
and vow three things in our names; first, *that*
we should forsake the Devil and all his works,
the pomps and vanities of this Wicked world,
and all the sinful lusts of the flesh. Where, by
 the *Devil* is meant, first, the *worshipping* of
 all *false gods*, which is indeed but *worshipping*
the Devil: A sin which at the time of *Christs*
 coming into the world was very common,
 most part of *mankind* then living in that vile
Idolatriy. And therefore when *Baptisme* was
 first ordained, it was but needful to make the
forsaking of those *false Gods* a principal part
 of the *vow*. And though those *false worships*
 are now much rarer, yet there was one spe-
 cial part of them, which may be feared to be
 yet

SUNDAY yet too common among us, and that is all sorts
 II. of *uncleanness*, which though we do not make
Ceremonies of our Religion as the *Heathens* did
 of theirs, yet the *committing* thereof is a most
 high provocation in Gods eyes, such as drew
 him to destroy whole *Cities with fire and brim-*
stone, as you may read, *Gen. 19.* Nay, the *whole*
world with water, *Gen. 6.* and will not fail to
 bring down judgements, and strange ones, on
 any that continue therein; and therefore the *for-*
saking them well deserves to be look't on as an
 especial part of this *promise*. Besides this, all
 dealing with the *Devil* is here *vowed* against,
 whether it be by *practising witchcraft* our
 selves, or consulting with those that do, upon a
 ny occasion whatever, as the *recovery* of our
health, our *goods*, or whatever else; for this is a
 degree of the former *sin*, it is the *forsaking* of
 the Lord, and setting up the *Devil* for our God,
 whilst we go to him in our needs for help.

34. But we also *renounce* all the *works* of
 the *Devil*, and those are either in general all
 those which the Devil tempts us to, or else
 those particular kinds of *sin* which have most
 of his *image* on them; that is, those which he
 himself most *practises*, such are *Pride* (which
 brought him from being an *Angel of light* to
 the accursed condition he is now in) and *Lying*;
 he is, as our Saviour saith, *John 8. 44.* A
lyar, and the Father of it, and such also are *Ma-*
lice and *Envy*, especially *Killing* and *Destroying*
 of others, for he was a *murderer from the begin-*
ning, *John 8. 48.* But above all there is nothing
 wherein

Part. 2. *The Vow of Baptisme, &c.* 61

wherein we become so like him, as in *Tempting* SUNDAY
and drawing others to sin, which is his whole II.
trade and bulineſs, and if we make it any part of
ours, we become like that *roaring Lion, that goes*
about ſeeking Whom he may devour, 1 Pet. 5. 8.

35, The *ſecond* thing we *Vow* to *forſake*, is
the *Pomps and Vanities of this wicked world*.
By the pomps and vanities there are ſeveral
things meant; ſome of them ſuch as were uſed
by the *Heathens* in ſome *Unlawful ſports* of
theirs, wherein we are not now ſo much con-
cern'd, there being none of them remaining a-
mong us: but beſides that, there is meant all
exceſs, either in diet, or ſports, or apparel, when
we keep not thoſe due meaſures, which either
by the general rules of ſobriety, or the particu-
lar circumſtances of our qualities and callings
we are bound to. Next, by the *wicked world*,
we may underſtand, *firſt*, the *wealth and great-
neſs* of the *world*, which though we do not ſo
totally renounce, that it is unlawful for a Chri-
ſtian to be either rich or great, yet we thus far
promise to *forſake* them, that we will not ſet
our hearts upon them, nor either get or *keep*
them by the leaſt unlawful means. *Secondly*, by
the *wicked world*, we may underſtand the *com-
panies and cuſtomes* of the *world*, which ſo far as
they are wicked, we here renounce; that is, we
promise never to be drawn by *company* to the
commiſſion of a ſin, but rather to forſake
the moſt delightful company then be enſnared
by it; nor yet by *cuſtome*, but rather venture the
ſhame of being thought ſingular, ridiculous
perſons;

SUNDAY

II.

persons, walk as it were in a path by our selves; then put our selves into that *broad way that leads to destruction*, by giving our selves over to any *sinful custome* how common soever it be grown. If this part of our *vow* were but thoroughly considered, it would arm us against most of the *temptations* the world offers us, *company* and *custome* being the two special *instruments* by which it works on us.

36. A *third* thing we renounce, is all the *sinful lusts* of the *flesh*; where the *flesh* isto be understood in that sense wherein the *Scripture* often uses it, for the fountain of all disordered affections. For though those unclean desires which we ordinarily call the *lusts* of the *flesh* are here meant, yet they are not the *only things* here contained, there being divers *other things* which the *Scripture* calls the *works of the flesh*; I cannot better inform you of them then by setting down that list *S. Paul* gives of them, *Gal. 5. 19, 20, 21. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like.* This, with those other descriptions, you will finde scattered in severall places of *Scripture*, will shew you there are many things contained under this part of your *vow*, the forsaking all the *sinful lusts* of the *flesh*.

37. The *second* thing our *Godfathers* and *Godmothers* promised for us, was, that we should
br.

Part. 7. The Vow of Baptism, &c. 63

believe all the *Articles of the Christian Faith.* SUNDAY
II.

These we have summed up together in that which we call the *Apostles Creed*, which since we promise to *believe*, we are supposed also to promise to learn them, and that not only the words, but likewise the plain *sense* of them, for who can believe what he either never heard of, or knows not any thing of the meaning of it? Now by this *believing* is meant not only the consenting to the *truth* of them, but also the *living* like them that do believe. As for Example, our *believing* that *God created* us, should make us live in that *subjection* and *Obedience* to him which becomes *Creatures* to their *Creator*; the *believing* that *Christ Redeemed* us, should make us yield up our selves to him as his *purchase*, to be disposed wholly by him, and *employed* only in his *service*. The *believing* a *judgement* to come, should give us care so to walk that we may not be *condemned* in it. And our *believing* the *life everlasting*, should make us *diligent* so to imploy our *short* moment of time here, that our *everlasting* life may be a life of *joy*, not of *miser*y to us. In this manner from all the *Articles* of the *Creed*, we are to draw *Motives* to *confirm* us in all *Christian Practice* to which end it is that our *learning* and *believing* of them *tends*, and therefore without it we are very far from making good this part of our *vow*, the *believing* all the *Articles of the Christian faith*.

38. The last part of our *Vow* is, that we should keep *Gods holy will and Commandments*,
and

SUNDAY *and walk in the same all the dayes of our lives.*
II.

Where by *our keeping of Gods holy will and commandments*, is meant our doing of all those things, which he hath made known to us to be his *will* we should perform; wherein he hath given us his *holy Word* to *instruct* us, and *teach* us, what it is that he requires of us, and now he *expects* that we should faithfully do it without *favouring* our selves in the breach of any one of his *commands*. And then in this entire obedience, we must walk *all the dayes of our lives*: That is, we must go on in a constant course of obeying God, not only fetch some few steps in his wayes, but walk in them, and that not for some part of our time, but *all the dayes of our lives*, never turn out of them, but go on constantly in them, as long as we live in this world.

The strict
obligation
of this
Vow of
Baptisme.

39. Having now thus briefly explained to you this Vow made at your BAPTISME, all I shall adde concerning it, is only to remember you how neerly you are concern'd in the keeping it: and that first in respect of *justice*, *secondly*, in respect of *advantage* and *benefit*. That you are in *justice* bound to it, I need say no more, but that it is a *promise*, and you know justice requires of every man the keeping of his promise. But then this is of all other *promises* the most solemn and binding, for it is a *vow*; that is, a *promise* made to God; and therefore we are not only *unjust*, but *forsworn*, whenever we break any part of it.

40. But *secondly*, we are also highly con-
cern'd

Part. 2. *The Vow of Baptism, &c.* 65

SUNDAY
II.

cern'd to keep it, in respect of our own benefit. I told you before, that *Baptisme* entred us into *Covenant* with God; now a *Covenant* is made up of *two* parts, that is, something *promised* by the one *party*, and something by the other of the parties that make the *Covenant*. And if one of them break his part of the *Covenant*, that is, perform not what he hath agreed to, he can in no reason look that the other should make good his. And so it is here, God doth indeed promise those benefits before mentioned, and that is his part of the *Covenant*. But then we also undertake to perform the several things contained in this *Vow* of *Baptisme*, and that is our *part* of it, and unless we do indeed perform them, God is not tyed to make good his, and so we forfeit all those precious benefits and advantages, we are left in that *natural* and *miserable* estate of ours, *children of wrath*, *enemies to God*, and *heirs of eternal damnation*. And now what can be the pleasure that any or all sins can afford us that can make us the least degree of recompence for such a loss, the *loss* of Gods favour and grace here, and the loss of our own souls hereafter? For as our Saviour saith, *Mark 8.36. What shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?* Yet this mad bargain we make when ever we break any part of this our *vow* of *Baptisme*. It therefore most nearly concerns us to consider sadly of it, to remember that every sin we commit is a direct breach of this *Vow*, and therefore when thou art tempted to any sin, seem it never so

F

light,

SUNDAY light, say not of it as *Lot* did of *Zoar*, Gen. 6. 20.

II. *Is it not a little one?* But consider that whatever it is, thou hast in thy *Baptism* vowed against it, and then be it never so little it draws a great one at the heels of it, no less then that of being *forsworn*, which whoever commits, God hath in the *third Commandment* pronounced, *He will not hold him guiltless*. And that we may the better keep this *vow*, it will be very *useful* often to repeat to our selves the several *branches* of it, that so we may still have it ready in our mindes to set against all *temptations*, and surely it is so excellent a *weapon*, that if we do not either *cast* it aside, or use it *verie negligently*, it will enable us, by Gods help, to put to *flight* our *spiritual* adversarie. And this is that *reverence* we are to pay to this first *Sacrament*, that of *Baptisme*.

PAR.



PARTITION III.

of the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, of Preparation before, as examination of Repentance, Faith, Obedience, of duties to be done at the Receiving and afterwards, &c.

§.1. **N**OW follows the Reverence due to the Sacrament of the LORDS SUPPER; and in this I must follow my first division, and set down first, what is to be done *Before*; secondly, *At*, and thirdly, *After* the time of Receiving; for in this Sacrament we cannot be excused from any one of these, though in the former we are.

2. And first, for that which is to be done *Before*, S. Paul tells us it is *Examination*, 1 Cor. 11. 28. *But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup.* But before I proceed to the particulars of this *Examination*, I must in the general tell you, that the *Special* business we have to do in this Sacrament, is to repeat and renew that Cove-

The Lords Supper.

Things to be done before receiving

Examinations

SUNDAY
III,

nant we make with God in our *Baptism*, which we having many wayes grievously *broken*, it pleases God in his great mercy to suffer us to come to the *renewing* of it in this *Sacrament*, which if we do in sincerity of heart, he hath promised to accept us, and to give us all those benefits in this, which he was ready to bestow in the *other* *Sacrament*, if we had not by our own fault forfeited them. Since then the *renewing* of our *Covenant* is our business of this time, it follows that these three things are necessary towards it: *First*, that we understand what that *Covenant* is; *Secondly*, that we consider, what our *Breaches* of it have been; and *Thirdly*, that we resolve upon a *strict* observance of it, for the rest of our life. And the trying our selves in every one of these particulars is that *Examination* which is required of us before we come to this *Sacrament*.

3. And *first*, we are to *Examine* whether we understand what this *Covenant* is; this is exceeding necessary, as being the foundation of both the other, for it is neither possible to discover our past sins, nor to settle *purposes* against them for the future without it. Let this therefore be your first business, *Try* whether you rightly understand what that *Covenant* is which you entred into at your *Baptisme*, what be the *Mercies* promised on Gods part, and the *Duties* on yours. And because the *Covenant* made with each of us in *Baptisme* is only the applying to our particular

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

69

SUNDAY
III.

Particulars the *Covenant* made by God in Christ with all mankind in general, you are to consider whether you *understand* that; if you do not, you must immediately seek for instruction in it. And till you have means of gaining better, look over what is briefly said in the entrance to this Treatise, concerning the SECOND COVENANT, which is the foundation of that *Covenant* which God makes with us in our *Baptisme*. And because you will there finde, that Obedience to all Gods Commands is the *condition* required of us, and is also that which we expressly *Vow* in our *Baptisme*, it is necessary you should likewise know what those *Commands* of God are. Therefore if you finde you are ignorant of them, never be at rest till you have got your self instructed in them, and have gained such a measure of knowlede as may direct you to do that *Whole Duty of Man* which God requires. And the giving thee this instruction is the only aim of *This Book*, which, the more ignorant thou art, the more earnestly I shall intreat thee diligently to read. And if thou hast heretofore approacht to this *Holy Sacrament* in utter ignorance of these necessary things, bewail thy sin in so doing, but presume not to come again till thou hast by gaining this necessary knowledge fitted thy self for it, which thou must hasten to do. For though no man must come to the *Sacrament* in such ignorance, yet if he wilfully continue in it, that will be no *excuse* to him for keeping from this holy Table.

SUNDAY

III.

Sins.

Several
sorts.

4. The *second* part of our *Examination* is, concerning our *Breaches* of this *Covenant*; and here thou wilt finde the use of that *knowledge* I spake of. For there is no way of discovering what our *Sins* have been, but by *trying* our *Actions* by that which should be the *rule* of them, the *Law* of God. When therefore thou settest to this part of *Examination*, remember what are the several branches of thy *duty*, and then ask thy own heart in every particular, how thou hast *performed* it. And content not thy self with knowing in *general*, that thou hast broken Gods *Law*, but do thy utmost to discover in what *particulars* thou hast done so. Recall, as well as thou canst, all the passages of thy life, and in each of them consider what part of that duty hath been transgressed by it. And that not onely in the *grosser* act, but in *word* also, nay, even in thy most *secret* thoughts: For though mans *Law* reaches not to them, yet Gods doth; so that whatever he forbids in the act he forbids likewise in the *thoughts* and desires, and sees them as clearly as our most publick *acts*. This particular search is exceeding necessary; for there is no promise of forgiveness of any sin but onely to him that confesseth and forsaketh it. Now to both these it is necessary that we have a direct and particular *knowledge* of our sins. For how can he either confess his Sin, that knows not his guilt of it? Or how can he *resolve* to *forsake* it, that discerns not himself to have formerly cleaved to it? Therefore we may
sure-

Part.3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

71

SUNDAY
III.

surely conclude, that this *Examination* is not only useful but necessary towards a full and compleat repentance; for he that does not take this particular view of his *sins*, will be likely to repent but by *halves*, which will never avail him towards his pardon; nothing but an entire forsaking of *every evil way*, being sufficient for that. But surely of all other times it concerns us, that when we come to the *Sacrament* our repentance be full and compleat; and therefore this strict search of our own hearts is then especially necessarie. For although it be true, that it is not possible by all our diligence to discover or remember *every* sin of our whole lives: and though it be also true, that what is so unavoidably hid from us, may be forgiven without any more particular confession then that of *Dauids*, Psal. 19. 12. *Cleanse thou me from my secret faults*; Yet this will be no plea for us if they come to be *secret* onely because we are negligent in searching. Therefore take heed of *deceiving* thy self in this weighty business, but search thy soul to the *bottom*, without which it is impossible that the wounds thereof should ever be thoroughly cured.

5. And as you are to enquire thus narrowly concerning the several *Sorts* of sins, so also must you concerning the *Degrees* of them, for there are divers *Circumstances* which increase and heighten the Sin. Of this sort there are many, as *first*, when we sin against *knowledge*, that is, when we certainly *know* such a thing

SUNDAY
III.

to be a *sin*, yet for the present pleasure or profit (or whatever other motive) adventure of it. This is by Christ himself adjudged to be a great *heightning* of the *sin*. *He that know his Masters will and doth it not, shall be beaten with many stripes*, Luke 12. 47. Secondly, when we sin with *Deliberation*, that is, when we do not fall into it of a sudden ere we are aware, but have time to consider of it, this is another degree of the *sin*. But *thirdly*, a yet higher is, when we do it against the *Resistances* and checks of our own *conscience*, when that at the time tells us, this thing thou oughtest not to do: nay, layes before us the *danger* as well as the *sin* of it, yet in spite of these admonitions of conscience we go on and commit the *sin*; this is a huge increase of it, such as will raise the least *sin* into a most *high provocation*. For it is plain, a *sin* thus committed must be a *wilful* one, and then be the *matter* of it never so *light* it is most hainous in Gods eyes. Nay, this is a *circumstance* of such force, that it may make an *indifferent* action, that is in it self no *sin*, become one. For though my *conscience* should erre in telling me such a thing were *unlawful*, yet so long as I were so *perswaded*, it were *sin* for me to do that thing; for in that case my *Will* consents to the doing a thing which I believe to be displeasing to God, and God (who judges us by our *Wills*, not *understandings*) imputes it to me as a *sin* as well as if the thing were in it self *unlawful*, and therefore surely we may conclude

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

73

SUNDAY
III.

clude, that any thing which is in it self sinful, is made much more so by being committed against the checks of *conscience*. A *fourth aggravation* of a sin, is, when it hath been *often repeated*, for then there is not only the guilt of so many more *acts*, but every Act growes also so much *worse*, and more *inexcusable*. We alwayes judge thus in faults committed against our selves, we can forgive a *single* injury more easily then the same when it hath been *repeated*, and the oftner it hath been so repeated, the more hainous we account it. And so surely it is in faults against God also. *Fifthly*, the sins which have been committed after *vows* and *Resolutions* of amendment are yet more grievous; for that contains also the breaking of those *promises*. Somewhat of this there is in every *wilful* sin, because every such is a breach of that *Vow* we make at *Baptisme*. But besides that, we have since bound our selves by *new vows*, if at no other time, yet surely at our coming to the *Lords Supper*, that being (as was formerly said) purposely to repeat our *vow* of *Baptisme*. And the more of these vows we have made, so much the greater is our guilt, if we fall back to any sin we then renounced. This is a thing very well worth weighing, and therefore examine thy self particularly at thy approach to the *Sacrament* concerning thy breaches of *former vows* made at the *Holy Table*. And if upon any other *occasion*, as *sickness*, *trouble* of minde, or the like, thou hast at any time made any other, call thy self to a
strict

SUNDAY

III.

strict account how thou hast performed them also, and remember that every sin committed against such *vows*, is besides its own natural guilt a *Perjury* likewise. *Sixthly* a yet higher step is, when a Sin hath been *often committed* that we are come to a *custom* and *habit* of it : and that is indeed a high degree.

6. Yet even of Habits some are worse than others, as *first*, if it be so confirmed that we are come to a *hardness* of heart, have no sense at all of the sinne: Or, *secondly*, if we go on in it against any *extraordinary* means used by God to reform us, such as *sickness*, or any other affliction which seems to be sent on purpose for our reclaiming. Or *thirdly*, if all *Reproofs* and Exhortations either of Ministers or private friends work not on us, but either make us angry at our reprovers, or sets us on defending the sin. Or *lastly*, if this sinful Habit be so strong in us as to give us a *love* to the sin, not only in our selves but in others, if, as the Apostle saith, *Rom. 1. 31. We do not only do the things, but take pleasure in them that do them*, and therefore intice and draw as many as we can into the same sins with us : Then it is risen to the highest step of wickedness, and is to be look't on as the utmost degree both of *sin* and *danger*. Thus you see how you are to Examine your selves concerning your sins, in each of which you are to consider how many of these heightning circumstances there have been,

been, that so you may aright *measure* the *hainousness* of them. SUNDAY III.

7. Now the end of this *Examination* is, *Humiliation* to bring you to such a sight of your sins, *on* as may truly *humble* you, make you sensible of your own danger, that have provoked so great a *Majesty*, who is able so sadly to revenge himself upon you. And that will surely even to the most carnal heart appear a reasonable ground of sorrow. But that is not all, it must likewise bring you to a sense and *abhorrence* of your baseness, and *ingratitude*, that have thus offended so good and gracious a God, that have made such unworthy and unkinde returns to those tender and rich mercies of his. And this consideration especially must melt your hearts into a deep *sorrow* and contrition, the degree whereof must be in some measure answerable to the degree of your sins. And the greater it is, provided it be not such as shuts up the hope of Gods Mercy, the more acceptable it is to God, who hath promised not to *despise a broken and contrite heart*, *Psalms* 51. 17. And the more likely it will be also to bring us to amendment: For if we have once felt what the smart of a wounded Spirit is, we shall have the less minde to venture upon sin again.

8. For when we are tempted with any of the short pleasures of sinne, we may then out of our own experience see

SUNDAY
III.

Contrition.

set against them the sharp pains and terrors of an accusing conscience, which will to any that hath felt them be able infinitely to outweigh them. Endeavour therefore to bring your souls to this melting temper, to this deep unfeigned sorrow, and that not only for the danger you have brought upon your self; for though that be a consideration which may and ought to work sadness in us, yet where that alone is the motive of our sorrow, it is not that sorrow which will avail us for pardon; and the reason of it is clear, for that sorrow proceeds only from the love of our selves, we are sorry because we are like to smart. But the sorrow of a true penitent must be joyned also with the love of God, and that will make us grieve for having offended him, though there were no punishment to fall upon our selves. The way then to stir up this sorrow in us, is first, to stir up our love of God, by repeating to our selves the many gracious acts of his mercy towards us, particularly, that of his sparing us, and not cutting us off in our sins. Consider with thy self how many and how great provocations thou hast offered him, perhaps in a continual course of many years wilful disobedience, for which thou mightest with perfect justice have been ere this sent quick into hell: Nay, possibly thou hast before thee many examples of less sinners than thou art, who have been suddenly snatcht away in the midst of their sins. And what cause canst thou give, why thou hast thus long escaped, but only because He

Part-3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

77

SUNDAY
III.

ye hath spared thee? And what cause of that *sparing*, but his tender *compassions* towards thee, his unwillingness that thou should'st *perish*? This consideration if it be prest home upon thy soul, cannot chuse (if thy heart be not as hard as the *nether Milstone*) but awake somewhat of *love* in thee towards this gracious, this long-suffering God, and that *love* will certainly make it appear to thee, that it is an *evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the Lord, Jer. 2. 19.* That thou hast made such wretched requitals of so great mercy; it will make thee both ashamed and angry at thy self that thou hast been such an unthankful creature. But if the consideration of this one sort of mercy, Gods *forbearance* only, be such an engagement and help to this godly sorrow, what will then be the multitude of those other *mercies* which every man is able to reckon up to himself? And therefore let everie man be as *particular* in it as he can, call to minde as many of them as he is able, that so he may attain to the greater degree of true contrition.

9. And to all these endeavours must be added *earnest prayers to God*, that he by his *holy Spirit* would shew you your sins, and soften your hearts, that you may thoroughly bewail and lament them.

10. To this must be joyned an humble *Confession* of sins to God, and that not only in general, but also in particular, as far as your memorie of them will reach, and that with all those heightning circumstances of them, which
you

SUNDAY you have by the forementioned examination
III. discovered. Yea, even secret and *forgotten* sins must in general be acknowledged, for it is certain there are multitudes of such; so that it is necessary for every one of us to say with David, *Psal. 19. 12. Who can understand his errors? Cleanse thou me from my secret faults.* When you have thus confessed your sins with this hearty sorrow, and sincere hatred of them, you may then (and not before) be concluded to feel so much of your disease, that it will be seasonable to apply the remedy.

Faith.

11. In the *next* place therefore you are to look on him whom God *hath set forth to be the propitiation of our sins, Rom. 3. 25. Even Jesus Christ, that Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world, John 1. 29.* And earnestly beg of God, that by his most *precious blood* your sins may be washed away; and that God would for his sake be reconciled to you. And this you are to believe will surely be done, if you do for the rest of your time *forsake* your sins, and give your selves up sincerely to *obey God* in all his *commands*. But without that, it is vain to hope any benefit from Christ, or his sufferings. And therefore the *next* part of your *preparation* must be the setting those *resolutions of obedience*, which I told you was the *third* thing you were to examine your selves of, before your approach to the holy Sacrament.

**Resolutions
 of Obedi-
 ence.**

12. Concerning the *particulars* of this *resolution*, I need say no more, but that it must answer every part, and branch of our duty.

Part. 3. The Lords Supper, &c.

79

SUNDAY
III.

ry, that is, we must not only in *general resolve* that we will observe *Gods Commandments*, but we must resolve it for *every Commandment* by it self; and especially where we have found our selves most to have failed heretofore, there especially to renew our resolutions. And herein it nearly concerns us to look that these resolutions be *sincere* and *unfeigned*, and not only such slight ones as people use out of custome to put on at their coming to the Sacrament, which they never think of keeping afterwards. For this is a certain truth, that whosoever comes to this holy Table without an *entire hatred* of everie sin, comes *unworthily*; and it is as sure, that he that doth entirely *hate* all sin, will resolve to forsake it; for you know *forsaking* naturally follows *hatred*, no man willingly abides with a thing or person he *hates*. And therefore he that doth not so resolve, as that God the searcher of hearts may approve it as sincere, cannot be supposed to hate sin, and so cannot be a worthy receiver of that holy Sacrament. Therefore try your resolutions throughly, that you deceive not your selves in them, it is your own great danger, if you do; for it is certain you cannot deceive God, nor gain acceptation from him by any thing which is not perfectly hearty and unfeigned.

13. Now as you are to resolve on this *new Obedience*, so you are likewise to resolve on the *Means*, which may assist you in the performance of it. And therefore consider in every

SUNDAY every duty, what are the *means* that may help
 III. you in it, and resolve to make use of them, how
 uneasie soever they be to your flesh; so on the
 other side consider what things they are, that
 are likely to *lead* you to sin, and resolve to
 shun and avoid them: this you are to do in re-
 spect of all sins whatever, but especially in
 those, whereof you have *formerly* been guilty.
 For there it will not be hard for you to finde,
 by what steps and *degrees* you were drawn into
 it, what *Company*, what *Occasion* it was that
ensnared you, as also to what sort of *Temp-
 tations* you are aptest to *Yield*. And therefore
 you must particularly fence your self against the
 sin, by avoiding those *occasions* of it.

14. But it is not enough that you resolve
 you will do all this hereafter, but you must
 instantly set to it, and begin the course by
 doing at the *present* whatsoever you have op-
 portunitie of doing. And there are several
 things, which you may, nay, must do at the
present, before you come to the Sacrament.

*Present re-
 nouncing of
 sin.*

15. As first you must cast off everie *sin*, not
 bring any one unmortified lust with you to that
 Table; for it is not enough to purpose to cast
 them off afterwards, but you must then actu-
 ally do it by with-drawing all *degrees* of love
 and *affection* from them; you must then give
 a bill of divorce to all your old beloved sins,
 or else you are in no fit way to be married to
 Christ. The reason of this is clear; for this
 Sacrament is our spiritual nourishment; now
 before we can receive spiritual nourishment

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

83

we must have *spiritual life*. (for no man gives **SUNDAY**
food to a *dead* person) But whosoever continues not only in the *act*, but in the *love* of any **III.**

one known sin, hath no spiritual life, but is in Gods account no better then a dead carcass, and therefore cannot receive that spiritual food. It is true, he may *eat* the *bread*, and *drink* the *wine*, but he receives not Christ, but in stead of him, that which is most dreadful; the Apostle will tell you what, *1 Cor. 11. 29. He eats and drinks his own damnation.* Therefore you see how great a necessitie lies on you thus actually to put off every sin, before you come to this Table.

16. And the same necessitie lies on you for a *second* thing to be done at this time, and that is the putting your soul into a heavenly and Chrillian temper; by possessing it with all those *Graces* which may render it acceptable in the eyes of God. For when you have turned out Satan and his accursed train, you must not let your soul lie emptie; if you do, Christ tells you, *Luke 11. 26. He will quickly return again, and your last estate shall be worse then your first.* But you must by earnest prayer invite into it the holy Spirit, with his Graces, or if they be in some degree there already, you must pray that he will yet more fully possess it, and you must quicken and *stir* them up.

*Imbracing
 vertue.*

17. As for *example*, you must *quicken* your *humility*, by considering your many and great *Quickning
 of graces.*
sins; your *Faith*, by *meditating* on Gods *promises* to all *penitent* sinners; your *love* to God
 G by

SUNDAY
III.

by considering his *mercies*, especially those remembred in the *Sacrament*, his giving Christ to die for us : and your *love* to your *neighbour*, nay, to your *enemies*, by considering that great example of his *suffering* for us that were enemies to him. And it is most particularly required of us when we come to this *Table* that we copy out this pattern of his in a perfect forgiveness, of all that have offended us, and not only forgiveness, but such a kindness also as will express it self in all offices of *love* and friendship to them.

Charity.

18. And if you have formerly so quite forgot that blessed example of his, as to do the direct contrary, if you have done any unkindness or injury to any person, then you are to seek forgiveness from him ; and to that end first acknowledge your fault, & secondly Restore to him, to the utmost of your power, whatsoever you have deprived him of, either in goods or credit. This *Reconciliation* with our bretheren is absolutely necessary towards the making any of our services acceptable with God, as appears by that precept of Christ *Matth. 5. 23, 24.* *If thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee, leave there thy gift before the Altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.* Where you see, that though the gift be already at the *Altar*, it must rather be left there *unoffered* then be offered by a man that is not at perfect peace with his neighbour.

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.* 85

neighbour. And if this *charity* be so necessary in all our services, much more in this, where by a joynt partaking in the same holy mysteries, we signifie our being *united* and knit not only to Christ our head, but also to each other, as fellow-members. And therefore if we come with any *malice* in our hearts, we commit an act of the highest *Hypocrisie* by making a solemn profession in the *Sacrament* of that *charity* and *brotherly* love, whereof our hearts are quite void.

SUNDAY
III.

19. Another most necessary grace at this time is that of *devotion*, for the raising whereof we must allow our selves some time to *withdraw* from our worldly affairs, and wholly to set our selves to this business of *preparation*; one very special part of which preparation lies in raising up our souls to a devout and heavenly temper. And to that it is most necessary that we cast off all thoughts of the world, for they will be sure as so many clogs to hinder our souls in their mounting towards heaven. A special exercise of this devotion is *Prayer*, wherein we must be very frequent and earnest at our coming to the Sacrament, this being one great instrument wherein we must obtain all those other graces required in our preparation. Therefore be sure this be not omitted; for if you use never so much endeavour besides, and leave out this, it is the going to work in your *own strength* without looking to God for his help, and then it is impossible you should prosper in it: *For we are*

Devotion.

SUNDAY
III.

not able of our selves to think any thing, as of our selves, but our sufficiency is of God, 2 Cor. 3. 5. Therefore be instant with him so to assist you with his grace, that you may come so fitted to this holy Table, that you may be partakers of the benefits there reached out to all worthy receivers.

*Necessity of
these gra-
ces.*

20. These and all other *spiritual Graces* our Souls must be clothed with when we come to this *Feast*, for this is that *Wedding garment*, without which, whosoever comes is like to have the entertainment mentioned in the parable of him who came to the *marriage* without a *wedding garment*, Mat. 22. 13. *who was cast into utter darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of teeth*; for though it is possible he may fit it out at the present and not be snatcht from the *Table*, yet *S. Paul* assures him, *he drinks damnation to himself*, and how soon it may fall on him is uncertain: But it is sure, it will, if repentance prevent it not, and as sure that whenever it does come it will be *intolerable*, for *who among us can dwell with everlasting burnings?* 1/a. 33. 14.

*The usefulness
of a
spiritual
guide.*

21. I shall adde but one thing more concerning the things which are to be done before the *Sacrament*, and that is an advise, that if any person upon a serious view of himself cannot satisfie his own Soul of his *sincerity*, and so doubts whether he may come to the *Sacrament*, he do not rest wholly on his own judgement in the case: for if he be a truly *humbled Soul*, it is likely he may judge too hardly of himself; if he be not, it is odds, but

if he be left to the satisfying of his own doubts, he will quickly bring himself to pass too favourable a sentence. Or whether he be the one or the other, if he come to the *Sacrament* in that doubt, he certainly plunges himself into farther doubts and scruples, if not into sin: on the other side, if he forbear because of it, if that fear be a *causeless* one, then he *groundlessly* absents himself from that Holy Ordinance, and so deprives his Soul of the benefits of it. Therefore in the midst of so many dangers which attend the mistake of himself, I would, as I said before, exhort him not to trust to his own judgement, but to make known his case to some *discreet* and *godly Minister*, and rather be guided by his, who will probably (if the case be duly and without any disguise discovered to him) be better able to judge of him then he of himself. This is the counsel the *Church* gives in the *exhortation* before the *Communion*, where it is advised, that if any by *other means* there fore-mentioned, cannot quiet his own conscience, but require farther counsel and comfort, then let him go to some discreet and learned Minister of Gods Word and open his grief, that he may receive such ghostly counsel, advice and comfort that his conscience may be relieved, &c. This is surely such advice as should not be neglected neither at the time of coming to the *Sacrament*, nor any other when we are under any fear or reasons of doubt concerning the state of our Souls. And for want of this,

SUNDAY many have run into very great *mischief*, having let the doubt fester so long that it hath either plunged them into deep *distresses* of *conscience*, or which is worse, they have, to still that disquiet within them, betaken themselves to all *sinful pleasures*, and so quite cast off all care of their souls.

Not to be
ashamed to
discover
our selves
to one.

22. But to all this it will perhaps be said, that this cannot be done without discovering the nakedness and *blemishes* of the *soul*, and there is *shame* in that, and therefore men are unwilling to do it. But to that I answer, that it is very unreasonable that should be a hindrance. For, *first*, I suppose you are to chuse only such a person as will faithfully keep any secret you shall commit to him, and so there can be no *publick shame* you can fear. And if it be in respect of that single person, you need not fear that neither; for, supposing him a good man, he will not think the worse of you, but the better, that you are so desirous to set all right between God and your Soul. But if indeed there were *shame* in it, yet as long as it may be a means to cure both your trouble and your sin too (as certainly *godly* and *faithful counsel* may tend much to both) that *shame* ought to be despised, and it is sure it would if we loved our Souls as well as our Bodies: for in bodily diseases, be they never so *foul* or *shameful*, we count him a fool who will rather miss the cure then discover it, and then it must here be so much a greater folly by how much the soul is more precious then the body.

Part.3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

89

23. But God knows, it is not only *doubting* persons, to whom this advice might be useful, there are *others* of another sort, whose *confidence* is their *disease*, who presume very groundlessly of the goodness of their estates: And for those it were most happie, if they could be brought to hear some more equal judgements, then their own in this so weighty a business. The truth is, we are generally so apt to favour our selves, that it might be very *useful* for the most, especially the more ignorant sort, sometimes to advise with a *spiritual* guide, to enable them to pass right judgements on themselves; and not only so, but to receive directions, how to subdue and *mortifie* those sins they are most inclined to, which is a matter of so much difficultie, that we have no reason to despise any means that may help us in it.

SUNDAY
III.

As necessary to the confident as to the doubtful.

24. I have now gone through those several parts of duty we are to perform *Before* our Receiving. In the next place, I am to tell you, what is to be done *At the time of Receiving*. When thou art at the Holy Table; *first*, humble thy self in an unfeigned acknowledgement of thy great *unworthiness* to be admitted there; and to that purpose remember again between God and thine own soul, some of thy greatest, and foulest sins, thy breaches of former *Vows* made at that Table, especially since thy *last* Receiving. Then meditate on those *Bitter Sufferings* of *Christ*, which are set out to us in the Sacrament, when thou seest the

At the time of receiving. Meditation of thy unworthiness.

The sufferings of Christ.

SUNDAY bread broken, remember how His *Blessed Body* was torn with nails upon the Crois; when thou seest the *Wine poured out*, remember how His *precious Blood* was spilt there; and then consider, it was thy sins that caused both. And here think, how unworthy a wretch thou art to have done that which occasioned such *tortments* to Him: How much worse then his very *crucifiers*. They crucified him once, but thou hast, as much as in thee lay, crucified him daily. They crucified him because they *knew* him not. But thou hast known both what he is in himself, *The Lord of Glory*, and what he is to thee, a most tender and *merciful Saviour*, and yet thou hast still continued thus to crucifie him afresh. Consider this, and let it work in thee, first a great sorrow for thy sins past, and then a great *hatred* & a firm *resolution* against them for the time to come.

The atonement wrought by them.

25. When thou hast a while thus thought on these *sufferings* of *Christ* for the increasing thy humilitie and contrition; then in the second place think of them again, to stir up thy *Faith*, look on him as the *Sacrifice* offered up for thy sins, for the appeasing of Gods wrath, and procuring his favour and mercies toward thee. And therefore believingly, yet humbly beg of God to accept of that *Satisfaction* made by his innocent and beloved Son, and for the merits thereof to pardon thee whatever is past, and to be fully reconciled to thee.

The thankfulness owing for them.

26. In the *third* place consider them again to raise thy *Thankfulness*. Think how much both

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

91

SUNDAY
III.

both of *shame and pain* he there endured, but especially those great *agonies* of his *Soul*, which drew from him that bitter cry, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* Matth. 27. 45. Now all this he suffered only to keep thee from perishing. And therefore consider what unexpressible *thanks* thou owest him; and endeavour to raise thy *Soul* to the most zealous and heartie thanksgiving: for this is a principal part of *ducie* at this time, the praising and magnifying that *mercie* which hath redeemed us by so dear a price. Therefore it will here well become thee to say with David, *I will take the Cup of Salvation and will call upon the Name of the Lord.*

27. *Fourthly*, look on these *sufferings* of *Christ* to stir up this *love*; and surely there cannot be a more effectual means of doing it, for here the *love* of *Christ* to thee is most manifest, according to that of the Apostle, 1 John 3. 16. *Hereby perceive we the love of God towards us, because he laid down his life for us.* And that even the highest degree of *love*, for as himself tells us, John 15. 13. *Greater love then this hath no man, then that a man lay down his life for his friend.* Yet even greater *love* then this had he, for he not only died, but died the most *painful* and most *reproachful* death, and that not for his friends, but his utter enemies. And therefore if after all this *love* on his part there be no return of *love* on ours, we are worse then the vilest sort of men, for even the *Publicans*, Matthew 5. 46.

*The great
love of
Christ in
them.*

love

SUNDAY *Love those that love them.* Here therefore
 III. chide and reproach thy self that thy *love* to him is so faint and cool, when His to thee was so zealous and affectionate. And endeavour to enkindle this holy flame in thy Soul, to *love* him in such a degree that thou mayest be ready to copy out his example, to part with all things, yea, even life it self when ever he calls for it, that is, whensoever thy *obedience* to any command of his shall lay thee open to those sufferings. But in the mean time to resolve never again to make any league with his enemies, to entertain or harbour any *sin* in thy brest. But if there have any such hitherto remained with thee, make this the season to kill and crucifie it; offer it up at this instant a sacrifice to him who was sacrificed for thee, and particularly for that very end that *he might redeem thee from all iniquity*, Therefore here make thy solemn resolutions to forsake every sin, particularly, those into which thou hast most frequently fallen. And that thou mayest indeed perform those resolutions, earnestly beg of this crucified Saviour that he will, by the power of his death, mortifie and kill all thy corruptions.

The benefits of the New Covenant sealed in the Sacrament.

28. When thou art about to receive the *Consecrated Bread and Wine*, remember that God now offers to *Seal* to thee that *New Covenant* made with mankind in his Son. For since he gives that his Son in the Sacrament, he gives with him all the benefits of that *Covenant*, to wit, *Pardon of Sins, Sanctifying grace* and

Part.3. *The Lords Supper, &c.* 93

and a *Title* to an eternal inheritance. And **SUNDAY**
 here be astonished at the infinite goodness of **III.**
 God, who reaches out to thee so precious a
 treasure. But then remember that this is all
 but on condition that thou perform thy part
 of the *Covenant*. And therefore settle in thy
 soul the most serious purpose of obedience, and
 then with all possible devotion joyn with the
Minister in that short, but excellent prayer,
 used at the instant of giving the *Sacrament*,
The Body of our Lord, &c.

29. So soon as thou hast Received, offer up *Upon Re-*
 thy devoutest *Praises* for that great mercie, to- *ceiving*
 gether with thy most earnest *prayers* for such *give*
assistance of Gods Spirit as may enable thee to *thanks.*
 perform the *Vow* thou hast now made. Then *Pray.*
 remembring that Christ is a *propitiation not*
for our sins only, but also for the sins of the
whole world; let thy charitie reach as far as his
 hath done, and *pray* for all mankind that everie
 one may receive the benefit of that Sacrifice of
 His; commend also to God the estate of the
Church, that particularly whereof thou art a
 Member. And forget not to pray for all to
 whom thou owest *Obedience*, both in *Church*
 and *State*; and so go on to pray for such par-
 ticular persons as either thy *Relations* or their
wants shall present to thee. If there be any
Collection for the *poor* (as there alwayes ought
 to be at this time) give freely according to thy
 abilitie; or if by the default of others, there
 be no such *Collection*, yet do thou privately
 designe something towards the relief of thy
poor.

SUNDAY poor brethren, and be sure to give it the next
III. fitting opportunitie that offers it self. All this
 thou must contrive to do in the time that o-
 thers are *receiving*, that so when the *publick*
prayers, after the *Administration* begin, thou
 mayst be ready to joyn in them, which thou
 must likewise take care to do with all devoti-
 on: thus much for thy behaviour *At the time*
of receiving.

After the
Sacrament.

30. Now follows the *third* and last thing;
 that is, what thou art to do *After thy Receiv-*
ing. That which is immediately to be done,
 is as soon as thou art *retir'd* from the Congre-
 gation, to offer up again to God thy Sacri-
 fice of *Praise* for all those precious mercies con-
 veyed to thee, in that holy Sacrament, as also
 humbly to intreat the *continued* assistance of
 his grace to enable thee to make good all
 those *purposes* of obedience thou hast now
 made. And in whatsoever thou knowest thy
 self most in *danger*, either in respect of a-
 ny former *habit*, or *natural inclination*,
 there especially desire and earnestly beg his
 aid.

Private
Prayer and
Thankgi-
ving.

Not pre-
sently to
fall to
worldly
affairs.

31. When thou hast done thus, do not
 presently let thy self loose to thy worldly cares
 and business. But spend all that *day*, either
 in meditating, praying, reading, good confe-
 rences, or the like; so as may best keep up that
 holy flame that is enkindled in thy heart. Af-
 terwards, when thy calling requires thee to
 fall to thy usual affairs, do it, but yet still re-
 member that thou hast a greater business than
 that

Part. 3. *The Lords Supper, &c.*

95

that upon thy hands; that is, the *performing* of all those *promises*, thou so lately madest to God, and therefore whatever thy outward imployments are, let thy heart be set on that, keep all the particulars of thy resolution in *memory*, and whenever thou art tempted to any of thy *old sins*; then consider, this is the thing thou so *solemnly vowedst* against, and withal remember what a horrible guilt it will be, if thou shouldst now wilfully do any thing contrarie to that vow; yea, and what a horrible mischief also it will be to thy self. For at thy receiving, God and thou entredst into *Covenant*, into a league of friendship and kindness. And as long as thou keepest in that friendship with God, thou art safe, all the malice of men or devils can do thee no harm: for as the *Apostle* saith, *Rom. 8. 31. If God be for us who can be against us?* But if thou breakest this *league* (as thou certainly dost, if thou yield to any wilful sin) then God and thou are enemies, and if all the world then were for thee, it could not avail thee.

SUNDAY
III.

*To keep thy
resolutions
still in me-
mory. . .*

*The danger
of breaking
them.*

*Making
God thy
enemy.*

*Thy own
conscience.*

32. Nay, thou wilt get an enemy within thine own bosome, thy conscience accusing and upbraiding thee; and when God and thine own conscience are thus against thee, thou canst not but be extreamly miserable even in this life, besides that fearful expectation of wrath which awaits thee in the next. Remember all this when thou art set upon by any *temptation*, and then sure thou canst not but look upon that temptation as a *cheat*, that comes

SUNDAY to rob thee of thy *Peace*; thy *God*, thy very *Soul*. And then sure it will appear as unfit to entertain it, as thou wouldest think it to harbour one in thy house who thou knowest came to rob thee of what is *dearest* to thee.

*Gods forme
er pardons
no incou-
ragement
to sin.*

33. And let not any experience of Gods mercy in *pardon*ing thee heretofore encourage thee again to provoke him; for besides that it is the highest degree of wickedness and unthankfulness to make that *goodness of his which should lead thee to repentance* an encouragement in thy sin: Besides this, I say, the oftner thou hast been pardoned, the less reason thou hast to expect it again, because thy sin is so much the *greater* for having been committed against so much mercy. If a *King* have several times pardoned an offender, yet if he still return to commission of the same fault, the King will at last be forced if he have any love to Justice, to give him up to it. Now so it is here, God is as well just as merciful, and his *Justice* will at last surely and heavily avenge the abuse of his Mercy; and there cannot be a greater abuse of his mercy then to sin in *hope* of it: so that it will prove a miserable deceiving of thy self thus to presume upon it.

*The obligation of this
vow perpe-
tual:*

34. Now this care of making good thy *Vow* must not abide with thee some few dayes only and then be cast aside, but it must continue with thee all thy dayes. For if thou break thy *Vow*, it matters not whether *sooner* or *later*. Nay, perhaps the guilt may in some respects be more, if it be late, for if thou have for a good while

while gone on in the observance of it, that shews the thing is *possible* to thee; and so thy after breaches are not of infirmity, because thou canst not avoid them, but of perversness, because thou wilt not: Besides the use of Christian walking must needs make it more easie to thee. For indeed all the difficulty of it is but from the custome of the contrary: And therefore if after some acquaintance with it, when thou hast overcome somewhat of the hardness, thou shalt then give it over, it will be most inexcusable. Therefore be careful all the dayes of thy life to keep such a watch over thy self, and so to avoid all occasions of temptations, as may preserve thee from all wilful breaches of this vow.

35. But though the obligation of every such single *vow* reach to the utmost day of our lives, yet are we often to renew it, that is, we are often to receive the holy Sacrament, for that being the means of conveyeing to us so great and unvaluable benefits; and it being also a command of Christ, that we should *do this in remembrance of him*, we are in respect both of reason and duty to omit no fit opportunity of partaking of that holy Table. I have now shewed you what that reverence is which we are to pay to God in His Sacrament.

*Let often to
be renewed*

PARTITION IV.

Honour due to Gods name; Sins against it; Blasphemy; Swearing of Assertory, Promissory, Unlawful Oaths: of Perjury; vain Oaths, and the Sin of them, &c.

*Honour due
to Gods
Name.*

§. I. **T**He last thing wherein we are to express our *Reverence* to Him, is, the *Honouring* his Name. Now what this Honouring of his Name is, we shall best understand by considering what are the things by which it is dishonoured, the avoiding of which will be our way of honouring it.

Sins against it.

Blasphemy.

The first is, all *Blasphemies*, or speaking any evil thing of God, the highest degree whereof is *cursing* him, or if we do not speak it with our *mouths*, yet if we do it in our *hearts* by thinking any unworthy thing of him; it is looked on by God, who sees the heart, as the vilest dishonour. But there is also a blasphemy of the *actions*, that is, when men who profess to be the servants of God, live so wickedly that they bring up an evil report on him whom they own as their Master and Lord. This Blasphemy the Apostle takes notice of *Rom. 2. 24.* Where he tells those who profess to be observers of the *Law*, *That by their wicked*

actions, the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles. Those Gentiles were moved to think ill of God, as the favourer of sin, when they saw those, who called themselves his servants, commit it.

SUNDAY
IV.

A second way of Dishonouring Gods Name is, by swearing, and that is of two sorts, either by false Oaths, or else by rash and light ones. A false Oath may also be of two kinds, as first, that by which I affirm somewhat, or secondly, that by which I promise. The first is when I say such or such a thing was done so or so, and confirm this saying of mine with an Oath; if then I know there be not perfect truth in what I say, this is a flat perjury, a downright being forsworn: Nay, if I swear to the truth of that whereof I am only doubtful, though the thing should happen to be true, yet it brings upon me the guilt of Perjury; for I swear at a venture, and the thing might for ought I knew be as well false as true, whereas I ought never to swear to any thing, the truth of which I do not certainly know.

Swearing.

Affertory
Oaths.

2. But besides this sort of Oathes, by which I affirm any thing, there is the other sort, that by which I promise somewhat. And that promise may be either to God or Man, when it is to God, we call it a vow of which I have already spoken, under the head of the Sacraments, I shall now only speak of that to man; & this may become a false oath, either at, or after the time of taking it. At the time of taking, it is false if either I have then no real purpose of

Promissory.

H

make-

SUNDAY making it good, or else take it in a sense different from that which I know, he to whom I make the promise understands it; for the use of Oaths being to assure the persons to whom they are made, they must be taken in their sense. But if I were never so sincere at the taking the Oath, if afterwards I do not perform it, I am certainly perjured.

Unlawful
Oaths.

3. The nature of an Oath being then thus binding, it nearly concerns us to look that the Matter of our oaths be lawful, for else we run our selves into a woful snare. For Example, suppose I swear to kill a man, if I perform my oath I am guiltie of Murder, if I break it, of perjury. And so I am under a necessity of following one way or other: but there is nothing puts us under a greater degree of this unhappy necessitie, then when we swear two Oaths, whereof the one is directly cross and contradictory to the other. For if I swear to give away my whole estate and afterwards swear to give all or part of that estate to another, it is certain I must break my oath to one of them, because it is impossible to perform it to both, and so I must be under a necessity of being forsworn. And into this unhappie straight everie man brings himself that takes any oath which crosses some other which he hath formerly taken, which should make all that love either God or their own souls, resolve never thus miserably to entangle themselves by taking one oath cross and thwarting to another. But it may perhaps here be asked, what a person

Part. 4. Of Oaths, &c.

101

that hath already brought himself into such a condition shall do? I answer, he must first heartily *repent* the great sin of *taking* the *unlawful oath*, and then stick only to the *lawful*, which is all that is in his power towards the repairing his fault, and qualifying him for Gods pardon for it.

SUNDAY
IV.

4. Having said this concerning the *kindes* of this sin of *Perjury*, I shall only adde a few words to shew you how greatly *Gods Name* is *dishonoured* by it. In all *oaths* you know, God is solemnly called to witness the truth of that which is spoken; now if the thing be *false*, it is the basest affront and dishonour that can possibly be done to God. For it is in reason to signifie one of these two things, either that we believe he knows not whether we say *true* or no, (and that is to make him no *God*, to suppose him to be as *deceivable*, and easie to be deluded as one of our ignorant neighbours) or else that he is willing to countenance our *Lyes*; the former robs him of that great attribute of his, his *knowing all things*, and is surely a great dishonouring of him, it being even amongst men accounted one of the greatest disgraces to account a man fit to have cheats put upon him; yet even so we deal with God if we venture to forswear upon a hope that God discerns it not. But the other is yet worse, for the supposing him willing to *countenance* our *lies*, is the making him a party in them; and is not only the making him no *God* (it being impossible that God should either *lie* him-

God great-
ly dishonoured by per-
jury.

SUNDAY
IV.

self or approve it in another) but it is the making him like the very *Devil*. For he is that is a *liar*, and the *Father* of it, *John* 44. And surely I need not say more to prove that this is the highest degree of dishonouring *Gods Name*.

The punish-
ments of it.

5. But if any yet doubt the *hainousness* of this sin, let him but consider what *God* himself sayes of it in the *Third commandment* where he solemnly professes, *He will not be him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain* and sure the adding that to this *Commandment* and none of the rest, is the marking this out for a most *hainous* guilt. And if you look into *Ze* 5. you will there finde the punishment is answerable, even to the utter destruction, not only the man, but his house also. Therefore it concerns all men as they love either their temporal or eternal welfare to keep them most strictly from this sin.

Vain oaths

But besides this of *forswearing*, I told you there was another sort of *Oaths* by which *Gods Name* is dishonoured, those are the *vain* and light *Oaths*, such as are so usuall in our common discourse, and are expressly forbidden by *Christ* *Mat.* 5. 34. *But I say unto you, swear not at all neither by Heaven, for it is Gods throne, nor by the Earth, for it is his foot-stool: where you are we are not allowed to swear even by meer creatures, because of the relation they have to God. How great a wickedness is it then to profane his holy Name by rash and vain Oaths this is a sin that is (by I know not what ch*

Part. 4. Of Oathes, &c.

103

SUNDAY
IV.

of *Satans*) grown into a fashion among us; and now its being so, draws dayly more men into it. But it is to be remembred that when we shall appear before Gods *Judgement seat* to answer for those profanations of his Name, it will be no excuse to say, it was the *fashion* to do so: it will rather be an increase of our *guilt*, that we have by our own *practise* helped to confirm that *wicked* custome which we ought to have beat down and *discountenanced*.

6. And sure whatever this profane Age thinks of it, this is a sin of very high nature. For besides that it is a direct breach of the *Precept of Christ*, it shews *first*, a verie mean and low esteem of God: everie *Oath* we swear is the appealing to God to judge the truth of what we speak, and therefore being of such greatness and Majestie, requires that the matter concerning which we thus appeal to him should be of great weight and moment, somewhat wherein either his own *glory*, or some considerable *good* of man is concern'd. But when we *swear* in common discourse, it is far otherwise; any the triflingest or lightest thing serves for the matter of an *Oath*, nay, often men *swear* to such vain and *foolish* things, as a considering person would be ashamed barely to speak. And is it not a great despising of God to call him solemnly to judge in such childish, such wretched matters? God is the great *King* of the world; now though a King be to be resorted unto in *weighty* ca-

The sin of them.

SUNDAY
IV.

They lead
to perjury.

ses, yet sure he would think himself much despised if he should be called to judge between *Boyes* at their *childish games*: and God knows many things whereto we frequently swear, are not of greater weight, and therefore are a sign that we do not rightly esteem of God.

7. Secondly, This common swearing is a sin which leads directly to the former of *forswearing*, for he that by the use of swearing hath made *Oathes* so familiar to him, will be likely to take the *dreadfullest Oath* without much consideration. For how shall he that swears hourly, look upon an *Oath* with any reverence? and he that doth not, it is his chance, not his care, that is to be thanked, if he keep from *Perjury*. Nay, further; he that swears commonly, is not only prepared to *forswear* when a *solemn Oath* is rendred him, but in all probability does actually *forswear* himself often in these *suddener Oathes*: for supposing them to come from a man ere he is aware (which is the best can be said of them) what assurance can any man have who swears ere he is aware, that he shall not *lie* so too? And if he doth both together, he must necessarily be *forsworn*. But he that observes your common swearers will be put past doubt that they are often *forsworn*. For they usually swear indifferently to things *true* or *false*, *doubtful* or *certain*. And I doubt not but if men who are guilty of this sin would but impartially examine their own practice, their hearts would second me in this observation.

8. Third

Part.4. Of Oaths, &c.

105

8. *Thirdly*, This is a sin to which there is no temptation, there is nothing either of *pleasure* or *profit* got by it: Most other sins offer us somewhat either of the one or the other, but this is utterly emptie of *both*. So that in this sin the *Devil* does not play the *Merchant* for our *Souls*, as in others he does, he doth not so much as cheapen them, but we give them *freely* into his hands without any thing in *exchange*. There seems to be put one thing possible for men to hope to *gain* by it, and that is to be *believed* in what they say when they thus bind it by an *oath*. But this also they constantly fail of, for there are none so little *believed* as the common *swearers*. And good reason, for he that makes no conscience thus to *profane Gods Name*, why shall any man *believe* he makes any of *lying*? Nay, their forwardness to confirm every the *slightest* thing by an *oath*, rather gives jealousy that they have some inward guilt of *falseness*, for which that *oath* must be the *cloak*. And thus you see in how little stead it stands them, even to this onely purpose for which they can pretend it *useful*: and to any other advantage it makes not the least claim, and therefore is a sin without *temptation*, and consequently without excuse; for it shews the greatest *contempt*, nay, unkindness to God, when we will provoke him thus, without any thing, to tempt us to it. And therefore though the *commonness* of this *sin* have made it pals but for a *small* one, yet it is verie far from being so, either in it self, or in Gods *account*.

SUNDAY

IV.

No temptation to them.

SUNDAY

IV.

Necessity of
abstaining
from them.

9. Let all therefore who are not yet fallen into the *custome* of this sin, be most careful never to yield to the least *beginnings* of it, and for those who are so miserable, as to be already ensnared in it, let them immediately, as they tender their Souls, get out of it. And let no man plead the *hardness* of leaving an *old custome*, as an excuse for his continuing in it, but rather the longer he hath been in it, so much the more *haste* let him make out of it, as thinking it too too much, that he hath so long gone on in so great a sin. And if the length of the *custome* have increased the difficulty of leaving it, that is in all reason to make him set immediately to the calling it off, lest that *difficulty* at last grow to an *impossibility*; and the harder he findes it at the present, so much the more *diligent* and watchful he must be in the use of all those *means*, which may tend to the overcoming that *sinful* habit: some few of those means it will not be amiss here to mention.

Means for
it.Sense of
the guilt
and dan-
ger.

10. First let him possess his mind *fully* of the *hainousness* of the sin, and not to measure it onely according to the *common* rate of the world. And when he is fully perswaded of the *guilt*, then let him adde to that, the consideration of the *danger*, as that it puts him out of Gods favour at the present, and will, if he continue in it, cast him into *Hell* for ever. And sure if this were but thoroughly laid to heart, it would *restrain* this sin: For I would ask a man, that pretends *impossibility* of leaving the

the *custome*, whether if he were sure he should be *hanged* the next *oath* he swore, the fear of it would not keep him from *swearing*? I can scarce believe any man in his wits so little *Master* of himself, but it would. And then surely *damning* is so much worse then *hanging*, that in all reason the fear of that ought to be a much greater *restraint*. The doubt is, men do either not heartily *believe* that this *sin* will *damn* them, or if they do, they look on it, as a thing a *great* way off, and so are not much *moved* with it; but both these are very *unreasonable*. For the First, it is *certain*, that everie one that continues wilfully in any sin is so long in a state of *damnation*, and therefore this being so continued in, must certainly put a man in that *condition*. For the *second*, it is verie possible, he may be deceived in *thinking* it so far off, for how knows any man that he shall not be *struck* dead with an *oath* in his mouth? Or if he were sure not to be so, yet *eternal damnation* is surely to be dreaded above all things, be it at what distance soever.

11. A *second means* is to be exactly *true* in all thou speakest; that all men may *believe* thee on thy bare word, and then thou wilt never have occasion to *confirm* it by an *oath*, to make it more *credible*, which is the onely colour or reason can at any time be pretended for *swearing*.

Truth in
speaking.

12. *Thirdly*, Observe what it is that most *burayes* thee to this sin, whether *drink*, or *anger*,

Forfaking
the occasi-
ons.

SUNDAY
IV.

anger or the company and example of others, or what ever else, and then if ever thou mean to forsake the sin, forsake those occasions of it.

Reverence
of God.

13. *Fourthly*, Endeavour to possess thy heart with a continual Reverence of God, and if that once grow into a *custom* with thee, it will quickly turn out that *contrary* one of *prophaning*. Use and accustom thy self therefore to this reverence of God, and particularly to such a respect to His Name, as if it be possible, never to mention it without some *lifting up* of thy heart to him. Even in thy ordinary discourse, when ever thou takest his Name into thy mouth, let it be an occasion of raising up thy *thoughts* to him. But by no means permit thy self to use it in idle by-words, or the like. If thou doest *accustom* thy self to pay this reverence to the bare mention of his name, it will be an excellent fence against the *prophaning* it in oaths.

Watchful-
ness.

14. A *fifth* means is a diligent and constant watch over thy self, that thou thus offend not with thy tongue, without which all the former will come to nothing. And the *last* means is Prayer, which must be added to all thy endeavours, therefore pray earnestly, that God will enable thee to overcome this wicked custom; say with the Psalmist, Set a watch O Lord over my mouth, and keep the door of my lips; and if thou doest sincerely set thy self to the use of means for it, thou mayest be assured, God will not be wanting in his assistance. I have been

Prayer.

been the longer on this, because it is so reigning a sin. God in his mercy give all that are guiltie of it a true sight of the *hainousness* of it.

15. By these several wayes of *dishonouring Gods Name* you may understand what is the dutie of *honouring* it, viz. A strict *abstaining* from everie one of these, and that abstinence founded on an *awful* respect and *reverence* to that sacred Name which is *Great, Wonderful and Holy*, Psal. 99. 3. I have now past through the several branches of that great Duty of *Honouring of God*.

SUNDAY
V.

What it is
to honour
Gods
Name.

PARTITION V.

Of Worship due to Gods Name. Of Prayer, and its several parts. Of publick Prayers in the Church, in the Family. Of Private Prayer. Of Repentance, &c. Of Fasting.

§.1. **T**HE *Eighth* Dutie we owe to God is **WORSHIP**; this is that great dutie by which especially we acknowledge his *Godhead*, *Worship* being proper only to God, and therefore it is to be lookt on as a most weightie dutie. This is to be performed; *first*, by our *Souls*, *secondly*, by our *Bodies*: the *Souls* part is *Praying*. Now *Prayer*, its *prayer parts*.

WOR.
SHIP.

Prayer, its
prayer parts.

SUNDAY *prayer* is a speaking to God, and there are divers parts of it, according to the different things about which we speak.

V.

Confession. 2. As *first*, There is *Confession*, that is, the acknowledging our sins to God. And this may be either *general* or *particular*; the *general* is when we only *confess* in *gross*, that we are sinful; the *particular*, when we mention the *several* sorts and acts of our sins. The *former* is necessarie to be alwayes a part of our solemn prayers, whether publick or private. The latter is proper for *private prayer*, and there the oftner it is used the better; yea, even in our daily private prayer it will be fit constantly to remember some of our *greatest* and *fondest* sins, though never so long since past. For such we should never think sufficiently confest and bewailed. And this *bewailing* must alwayes go along with *Confession*; we must be heartily sorrie for the sins we *confess*, and from our souls acknowledge our own great unworthiness in having committed them. For our *confession* is not intended to instruct God, who knows our sins much better then our selves do, but it is to humble our selves, and therefore we must not think to have confest aright till that be done.

Petitions.

For our
Souls.

3. The *second* part of *prayer* is *Petition*; that is, the begging of God whatsoever we want either for our Souls or Bodies. For our *Souls* we must *first* beg pardon of sins, and that for the sake of *Jesus Christ*, who shed his blood to obtain it. Then we must also beg the
grace

Part: 5. *The Duty of Prayer, &c.* 111

SUNDAY
V.

grace and assistance of Gods *Spirit* to enable us to forsake our sins, and to walk in *obedience* to him. And herein it will be needful particularly to beg all the several *virtues*, as *Faith*, *Love*, *Zeal*, *Purity*, *Repentance*, and the like, but especially those which thou most wantest: And therefore observe what thy wants are, and if thou beest *proud*, be most *instant* in praying for *humility*; if *lustful*, for *chastity*, and so for all other *Graces*, according as thou findest thy *needs*. And in all these things that concern thy Soul, be verie earnest and importunate, take no *denyal* from God, nor give over, though thou do not presently obtain what thou suest for. But if thou hast never so long prayed for a *grace*, and yet findest it not, do not grow *weary* of praying, but rather search what the *cause* may be which makes thy *prayer* so ineffectual; see if thou do not thy self hinder them; perhaps thou prayest to God to enable thee to conquer some sin, and yet never goest about to fight against it, never makest any *resistance*, but *yieldest* to it as often as it comes, nay, putteth thy self in its way, in the road of all *temptations*. If it be thus, no wonder though thy *prayers* avail not, for thou wilt not let them. Therefore amend this, and set to the doing of thy part sincerely, and then thou needest not fear but God will do his.

4. Secondly, We are to petition also for our *bodies*; that is, we are to ask of God such *necessaries* of life as are needful to us, while

Bodies.

SUNDAY while we live here. But these only in such a degree and measure, as his wisdom sees best for us; we must not presume to be our own carvers, and pray for all that wealth, or greatness, which our own vain hearts may perhaps desire, but only for such a condition, in respect of outward things, as he sees may most tend to those great ends of our living here, the glorifying him, and the saving of our own Souls.

Deprecation.

of Sin.

5. A third part of Prayer is *Deprecation*, that is, when we pray to God to turn away some evil from us. Now this evil may be either the evil of *sin* or the evil of *punishment*: The evil of *sin* is that we are especially to pray against, most earnestly begging of God, that he will by the power of his grace, preserve us from falling into sin. And whatever sins they are to which thou knowest thy self most inclined, there be particularly earnest with God to preserve thee from them. This is to be done daily, but then more especially, when we are under any present temptation, and in danger of falling into any sin; in which case we have reason to cry out as *S. Peter* did when he found himself sinking, *Save Lord, or I perish*; humbly beseeching him either to withdraw the temptation, or strengthen us to withstand it, neither of which we can do for ourselves.

of punishment.

6. Secondly, We are likewise to Pray against the evil of *Punishment*, but principally against *Spiritual punishments*, as the anger of God

God, the *withdrawing* of his *Grace*, and *Eternal damnation*. Against these we can never pray with too much earnestness: But we may also pray against temporal punishments, that is, any *outward* affliction, but this with *submission* to Gods will, according to the example of Christ, *Mat. 26. 39. Not as I will, but as thou wilt.*

7. A *Fourth* part of *Prayer* is *Intercession*, that is, *praying* for others: This in general we are to do for all mankind, as well *strangers* as *acquaintance*, but more particularly, those to whom we have any especial *Relation*, either publick, as our *Governours*, both in *Church* and *State*, or *private*, as *Parents*, *Husband*, *Wife*, *Children*, *Friends*, &c. We are also to pray for all that are in *affliction*, and such particular persons as we discern especially to be so: Yea, we are to pray for those that have done us *injury*, those that *despightfully* *use* us and *persecute* us, for it is expressly the command of Christ, *Mat. 5. 44.* And that whereof he hath likewise given us the highest example in *praying* even for his verie *crucifiers*, *Luke 23. 34. Father forgive them.* For all these sorts of persons we are to *pray*, and that for the verie same good things we beg of God for our selves, that God would give them in their several places and callings, all *spiritual* and *temporal blessings* which he sees wanting to them, and turn away from them all *evil* whether of *sin* or *punishment*.

Intercession

8. The *fifth* part of *Prayer* is *Thanksgiving*; *that* *Thanksgiving.*

SUNDAY

V.

that is, the *Praising* and *Blessing* God for all his mercies, whether to our own *persons*, and those that immediately relate to us, or to the *Church* and *Nation* whereof we are members, or yet more general to all *mankind*; and this for all his mercies both spiritual and temporal. In the *Spiritual*, *first*, for those wherein we are all in *common* concerned, as the giving of his *Son*, the sending of his *Spirit*, and all those means he hath used to bring sinful men unto himself. Then *secondly*, for those *mercies* we have in our own *particulars* received, such are the having been born within the *pale* of the *Church*, and so brought up in *Christian Religion*, by which we have been partakers of those *precious advantages* of the *Word* and *Sacraments*, and so have had, without any care or pains of ours, the *means* of *eternal life* put into our hands. But besides these, there is none of us but have received other spiritual mercies from God.

*Spiritual
Mercies.*

9. As *first*, Gods *patience* and long-suffering, *waiting* for our Repentance, and not cutting us off in our sins, *Secondly*, his *calls* and invitations of us to that *repentance*, not only *outward*, in the ministry of the *Word*, but also *inward*, by the motions of his *Spirit*. But then if thou be one that hath by the help of Gods *grace* been wrought upon by these calls, and brought from a *profane* or worldly, to a *Christian* course of life, thou art surely in the highest degree tyed to magnifie and praise his goodness, as having received from him the greatest of mercies.

10. We

Part. 5. *The duty of Prayer, &c.*

115

SUNDAY

V.

Temporal.

10. We are likewise to give thanks for *Temporal* blessings, whether such as concern the *publick*, as the *prosperity* of the *Church* or *Nation*, and all remarkable *deliverances* afforded to either; or else such as concern our particulars; such are all the good things of this life which we enjoy, as *Health*, *Friends*, *Food*, *Raiment*, and the like; also for those *minutely* preservations, whereby we are by Gods gracious providence kept from danger, and the *especial* deliverance which God hath given us in time of greatest *perils*. It will be impossible to set down the several mercies which everie man receives from God, because they differ in *kind* and *degree* between one man and another. But it is sure that he which receives *least* hath yet enough to imploy his whole life in *praises* to God. And it will be verie fit for everie man to consider the *several* passages of this life, and the *mercies* he hath in each received, and so to gather a kind of *List* or *Catalogue* of them, at least the *principal* of them, which he may alwayes have in his *memorie*, and often with a thankful heart repeat before God.

11. These are the several parts of *Prayer*, *Publick* and all of them to be used both *publickly* and *privately*. The *publick* use of them is *first*, *prayer in the Church.* that in the *Church*, where all meet to joyn in those *prayers* wherein they are in *common* concerned. And this (where the *prayers* are such as they ought to be) we should be verie constant at, there being an *especial* blessing
I pro-

SUNDAY

V.

promised to the *joynt* requests of the faithful, and he that without a necessarie cause absents himself from such *publick prayers*, cuts himself off from the *Church*, which hath alwayes been thought so unhappie a thing, that it is the *greatest punishment* the *Governours* of the *Church* can lay upon the worst offender; and therefore it is a strange madness for men to inflict it upon themselves.

In the Fa-
mily:

*12. A *second* sort of *publick Prayer* is that in a *Family*, where all that are members of it joyn in their common supplications; and this also ought to be verie carefully attended to, *first* by the *Master* of the *Family*, who is to look that there be such *prayers*, it being as much his part thus to provide for the Soules of his Children and Servants, as to provide food for their Bodies. Therefore there is none, even the meanest housholder, but ought to take this care. If either himself or any of his *Family* can read, he may use some prayers out of some good book, if it be the *Service Book* of the *Church*, he makes a good choice; if they cannot read, it will then be necessarie they should be taught without Book some form of prayer which they may use in the *Family*, for which purpose again some of the *Prayers* of the *Church* will be very fit, as being most easie for their memories by reason of their shortness, and yet containing a great deal of matter. But what choice soever they make of prayers, let them be sure to have some, and let no man that professes himself a Christian,

keep

keep so *heathenish* a *Family*, as not to see God be daily worshipped in it. But when the *Master* of a *Family* hath done his dutie in this providing, it is the dutie of everie member of it to make use of that provision, by being constant and diligent at thoe *Family-Prayers*.

13. *Private* or *secret* prayer is that which is used by a man *alone* apart from all others, wherein we are to be more *particular*, according to our particular needs, then in *publick* it is fit to be. And this of *private* prayer is a dutie which will not be excused by the performance of the other of *publick*. They are *both* required, and one must not be taken in exchange for the other. And whoever is diligent in *publick* prayers, and yet negligent in *private*, it is much to be feared he rather seeks to *approve* himself to *men* then to *God*, contrarie to the command of our Saviour, *Mat. 6.* who enjoyns this *private* prayer, this *praying to our Father in secret*, from whom alone we are to expect our *reward*, and not from the *vain praises of men*.

14. Now this dutie of *Prayer* is to be *often* performed, by none seldomer then *Evening* and *Morning*, it being most necessarie that we should thus *begin* and *end* all our works with God, and that not only in respect of the dutie we owe him, but also in respect of our selves, who can never be either prosperous or *safe*, but by committing our selves to him; and therefore should tremble to venture on the perils either of *day* or *night* without his safeguard. How

SUNDAY
V.Private
Prayer.Frequency
in Prayer.

SUNDAY much oftner this duty is to be performed, must
V. be judged according to the *business* or *leasure* men have ; where, by *business*, I mean not such business as men unprofitably make to themselves, but the necessary business of a mans *Calling*, which with some will not afford them much time for set and solemn Prayer. But even these men may often in a day lift up their hearts to God in some short Prayers, even whilest they are at their work. As for those that have *more leasure*, they are in all reason to bestow *more time* upon this duty. And let no man that can finde time to bestow upon his *vanities*, nay, perhaps his *sins*, say he wants leasure for Prayer, but let him now endeavour to redeem what he hath mis-spent, by imploying more of that leasure in this duty for the future. And surely if we did but rightly weigh how much it is our own advantage to perform this duty, we should think it wisdom to be as frequent as we are ordinarily seldome in it.

The advantages of Prayer.

Honour.

15. For *first* it is a great *Honour* for us poor worms of the earth to be allowed to speak so freely to the *Majesty* of heaven. If a *King* should but vouchsafe to let one of his meanest *Subjects* talk *familiarly* and freely with him, it would be looked on as a huge honour ; that man how despiseable soever he were before, would then be the *envy* of all his neighbours ; and there is little question, he would be willing to take all opportunities of receiving so great a *grace*. But alas!

this

Part. 5. *The duty of Prayer, &c.* 119

this is nothing to the honour is offered us, who are allowed, nay, invited to speak to, and converse with the *King of Kings*, and therefore how forward should we in all reason be to it? SUNDAY V.

16. *Secondly*, It is a great *Benefit*, even the greatest that can be imagined; for *Prayer* is the instrument of fetching down all good things to us, whether *spiritual* or *temporal*; no *prayer*, that is qualified as it ought to be, but is sure to bring down a blessing, according to that of the *Wise man*, Ecclef. 35. 17. *The Prayer of the humble pierceth the clouds, and will not turn away till the highest regard it.* You would think him a happie man that had one certain means of helping him to whatever he *wanted*, though it were to *cost* him much pains and labour; now this happie man thou mayest be if thou wilt. *Prayer* is the never-failing means of bringing thee, if not all that thou thinkest thou wantest, yet all that indeed thou dost, that is, all that God sees fit for thee. And therefore be there never so much *weariness* to thy flesh in the dutie, yet considering in what continual *want* thou standest of something or other from God, it is madness to let that *uneasiness* dishearten thee, and keep thee from this so sure means of *supplying* thy wants. *Benefit.*

17. But in the *third* place, this dutie is in it self so far from being uneasie, that it is verie *pleasant*. God is the *fountain of happiness*, and at his right hand are pleasures for evermore, *Psalms* 16. 11. And therefore the nearer we draw *Pleasantness.*

SUNDAY

V.

draw to him, the *happier* we must needs be, the very *joyes* of heaven arising from our *nearness* to God. Now in this life we have no way of *drawing* so near to him, as by this of *Prayer*, and therefore surely it is that, which in it self is apt to afford *abundance* of *delight* and *pleasure*, if it seem otherwise to us, it is from some *diltemper* of our own hearts, which like a *sick* palate cannot relish the most pleasant meat. *Prayer* is a *pleasant* duty, but it is withall a *spiritual* one; and therefore if thy heart be carnall. If that be set either on the contrary pleasures of the flesh, or dross of the world: no marvail then, if thou taste no pleasantness in it, if like the *Israelites* thou *despise Manna* whilest thou lonigest after the *flesh pots of Egypt*. Therefore if thou finde a weariness in this duty, suspect thy self, purge, and refine thy heart from the love of all sin, and endeavour to put it into a heavenly and spirituall frame, and then thou wilt find this no unpleasant exercise, but full of delight and satisfaction. In the mean time complain not of the hardness of the duty, but of the untowardness of thy own heart.

*Carnality
one reason
of its seem-
ing other-
wise.*

*Want of use
another.*

18. But there may also be another *reason* of its seeming unpleasant to us, and that is *want of use*. You know there are many things, which seem *uneasie* at the first tryall, which yet after we are accustomed to them seem very *delightfull*, and if this be thy case, then thou knowest a ready *cure*, *viz.* to use it oftner, and so this consideration naturally inforces the

Part. 5. Of Prayer, &c.

121

the exhortation of being frequent in this duty. SUNDAY V.

19. But we are not only to consider how often, but how well we perform it. Now to do it well, we are to respect, *first* the matter of our Prayers, to look that we ask nothing that is *unlawful*, as *revenge* upon our enemies, or the like; *secondly* the manner; and that must be *first* in Faith, we must believe, that if we ask as we ought, God will either give us the thing we ask for, or else something which he sees better for us. And then *secondly* in *humility*; we must acknowledge our selves utterly *unworthy* of any of those good things we beg for, and therefore sue for them only for *Christs sake*; *thirdly* with *attention*, we must *minde* what we are about, and not suffer our selves to be carried away to the thought of other things. I told you at the first, that prayer was the business of the soul, but if our minds be wandering, it is the work onely of the tongue and lips, which make it in Gods account no better then vain babling, and so will never bring a blessing on us. Nay as *Jacob* said to his mother, *Gen. 27. 12.* It will be more likely to bring a *curse* on us then a *blessing*, for it is a *profaning* one of the most solemn parts of Gods service, it is a piece of *Hypocrisie*, the drawing near to him with our lip, when our hearts are far from him, and a great slighting and despising that dreadful Majesty we come before: And as to our selves it is a most *ridiculous* folly, that we who come to

To ask nothing unlawful.

To ask in Faith.

In humility

With attention.

SUNDAY
V.

God upon such weighty errands, as are all the concerns of our souls and bodies, should in the midst forget our business, and pursue every the lightest thing that either our own vain fancies or the Devil, whose business it is here to hinder us, can offer to us. It is just as if a Malefactor, that comes to sue for his life to the King, should in the midst of his supplication happen to espie a Butter-fly, and then should leave his suit, and run a chase after that Butter-fly: Would you not think it pity, a pardon should be cast away upon so wretched a creature? And sure it will be as unreasonable to expect that God should attend and grant those suits of ours, which we do not at all consider our selves.

Helps a-
gainst wan-
ding.

Considera-
tion of
Gods Ma-
jesty.
Our needs.

Prayer for
Gods aid.

Watchful-
ness.

20. This *Wandering in Prayer* is a thing we are much concerned to arm our selves against, it being that to which we are naturally wonderfull prone. To that end it will be necessary first to possess our hearts at our coming to Prayers with the greatness of that Majesty we are to approach, that so we may dread to be vain and arising in his presence. Secondly, We are to consider the great concernment of the things we are to ask, some whereof are such that if we should not be heard, we were of all creatures the most miserable, and yet this wandering is the way to keep us from being heard. Thirdly, We are to beg Gods aid in this particular: And therefore when thou settest to Prayer, let thy first petition be for this grace of attention.

21. Lastly, be as watchfull as is possible o-
ver

verthy heart in time of prayer to keep out all *wandering* thoughts, or if any have gotten in let them not find entertainment, but as soon as ever thou discernest them, suffer them not to abide one moment, but cast them out with indignation, and beg Gods pardon for them. And if thou dost thus sincerely and diligently strive against them, either God will enable thee in some measure to overcome, or he will in his mercy pardon thee what thou canst not prevent: But if it be through thy own negligence, thou art to expect neither, so long as that negligence continues.

22. In the *fourth* place, we must look our Prayers be with *Zeal* and *earnestness*, it is not enough that we so far attend them as barely to know what it is we say, but we must put forth all the affection and devotion of our souls and that according to the severall parts of prayer before mentioned. It is not the cold, faint request that will ever obtain from God. We see it will not from our selves; for if a *beggar* should ask relief from us, and do it in such a scornfull manner that he seemed indifferent whether he had it or no, we should think he had either little *want* or great *pride*; and so have no heart to give him. Now surely the things we ask from God are so much above the rate of an ordinary *Alms*, that we can never expect they should be given to slight and heartless petitions. No more in like manner will our *Sacrifice* of *praise* and *thanksgiving* ever be accepted by him, if it be not offered from

With Zeal,

SUNDAY from a heart truly affected with the *sense* of his *mercies*; it's but a kind of *formall complementing*, which will never be approved by him who requires *the heart*, and not the *lips* onely. And the like may be said of all the other *parts* of *Prayer*. Therefore be carefull when thou drawest nigh to God in *Prayer*, to raise up thy soul to the highest pitch of *zeal* and *earnestness* thou art able. And because of *thy self* alone thou art not able to do any thing, beseech God that he will inflame thy *heart* with this *heavenly fire* of *Devotion*, and when thou hast obtained it, beware that thou neither *quench* it by any wilful sin, nor let it go out again for want of *stirring* it up and *implying* it.

With purity 23. *Fifthly*, We must *Pray* with *Purity*, I mean, we must purge our hearts from all affections to sin. This is surely the meaning of the Apostle, 1 *Tim.* 2. 8. when he commands men to *lift up holy hands in Prayer*, and he there instances in one *speciall* sort of sin, *wrath* and *doubling*; where, by *doubling*, is meant those *unkind disputes* and *contentions* which are so common amongst men. And surely he that cherishes that or any other sin in his heart, can never lift up those holy hands which are required in this duty. And then sure his *prayers* be they never so many or earnest, will little avail him: The *psalmist* will tell him, he shall not be *heard*. *Psalm* 66. 18. *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me*. Nay, *Solomon* will tell him yet worse, that his *prayers* are not onely *vain*, but

Part.5. The duty of Prayer, &c. 125

but abominable, Prov. 15. 8. *The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.* And thus to have our prayers turned into sin, is one of the heaviest things can befall any man; we see it is set down in that sad Catalogue of curses, Psal. 109. 7. Therefore let us not be so cruel to our selves as to pull it upon our own heads, which we certainly do if we offer up prayers from an impure heart.

24. In the last place we must direct our prayers to right ends; and that either in respect of the prayer it self, or the things we pray for; First, we must pray not to gain the praise of devotion amongst men, like those hypocrites, Mat. 6. 5. Nor yet onely for company or fashion sake to do as others do: But we must do it, first, as an act of worship to God; secondly, as an acknowledgement, that he is that great spring, from whence alone we expect all good things. And thirdly, to gain a supplie of our own or others needs. Then in respect of the Things prayed for; we must be sure to have no ill aims upon them; we must not ask that we may consume it upon our lusts, Jam. 4. 3. as those do who pray for wealth, that they may live in riot and excess, and for power, that they may be able to mischief their enemies, and the like. But our end in all must be Gods glorie first, and next that, our own and others Salvation, and all other things must be taken in onely as they tend to those, which they can never do if we abuse them to sin. I have now done with that

SUNDAY that *first* part of *worship*, that of the *Soul*.

V.
**Bodily
Worship.**

25. The other is that of the *Body*, and that is nothing else but such *humble* and *reverent* *gestures* in our approaches to God, as may both express the inward reverence of our *Souls*, and may also pay him some *tribute* from our *verie Bodies*, with which the *Apostle* commands us to *glorifie* God, as well as with our *souls*; and good reason, since he hath *created* and *redeemed* the one as well as the other: whensoever therefore thou offerest thy prayers unto God, let it be with all lowliness as well of bodie as of mind, according to that of the *Psalmist*, *Psal.* 95. 6. *O come let us worship, let us fall down and kneel before the Lord our maker.*

**REPEN-
TANCE.**

26. The *Ninth* DUTY to God is REPEN-
TANCE: That this is a dutie to God we are taught by the *Apostle*, *Acts* 20. 21. where speaking of *repentance*, he stiles it *repentance towards* God. And there is good reason this should be a dutie to *him*, since there is no *sin* we commit but is either *mediately* or *immediately* against him. For though there be *sins* both against our selves and our *neighbours*, yet they being forbidden by God, they are also *breaches* of his *Commandments*, and so *sins* against him.

*Turning
from sin to
God.*

This *repentance* is, in short, nothing but a *turning* from *sin* to God, the casting off all our *former evils*, and in stead thereof constantly *practising* all those *Christian duties* which God requireth of us. And this is so necessary

Part. 5. Of Repentance, &c.

127

cessarie a dutie, that without it we certainly **SUNDAY**
perish, we have *Christs* word for it, *Luke 13.* **V.**

5. *Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.*

27. The *directions* for performing the several parts of this dutie have been already given in the *preparation* to the *Lords Supper*, *Times for this Duty.* and thither I refer the Reader. Only I shall

here mind him, that it is not to be lookt upon as a *duty* to be *practised* only at the time of receiving the *Sacrament*: For this being the onely remedie against the poyson of sin, we must renew it as often as we repeat our sins, that is, daily. I mean we must *every day* repent of the sins of that day, for what *Christ* saith of other evils, is true also of this, *sufficient to the day is the evil thereof*; we have sins enough of *each day* to exercise a *daily repentance*, and therefore everie man must thus daily call himself to account. *Daily.*

28. But as it is in *accounts*, they who constantly set down their *daily expences*, have *At set times.* yet some set time of casting up the whole summe, as at the end of the *week* or *month*; so should it also be here, we should set aside sometime to humble our selves solemnly before God for the sins, not of that *day* only, but of our *whole lives*. And the *frequenter* these times are, the *better*. For the oftner we thus cast up our *accounts* with God, and see what *vast debts* we are run in to him, the more *humblly* shall we think of our selves, and the more shall thirst after his *mercy*, which two are the *special*

SUNDAY *Special* things that must qualifie us for his *par-*
V. *don.* He therefore that can assign himself one
 day in the *week* for this purpose, will take a
thriving courie for his soul. Or if any mans
 state of life be so *busie* as not to afford him to
 do it so often, let him yet come as near to that
frequency as is possible for him, remembering
 alwayes, that none of his *worldly* employ-
 ments can bring him in near so *gainful* a re-
 turn as this *spiritual* one will do, and there-
 fore it is verie ill husbandrie to pursue them to
 the neglect of this.

*In the time
 of afflicti-
 on.*

29. Besides these *constant* times, there are
 likewise *occasional* times for the performance
 of this dutie, such especially are the times of *ca-*
lamity and *affliction*, for when any such befalls
 us, we are to look on it as a message sent from
 heaven to call us to this dutie, and therefore
 must never neglect it when we are thus sum-
 moned to it, lest we be of the number of
 them who *despise the chastisements of the Lord*,
 Heb. 12. 5.

At death.

30. There is yet another time of *repent-*
ance, which in the practice of men hath gotten
 away the custome from all those, and that is
 the *time of death*, which, it is true, is a time
 verie fit to *renew our repentance*, but sure not
 proper to *begin* it; and it is a most *desperate*
madness for men to defer it till then. For to
 say the *wildest* of it, it is the *venturing* our
 Souls upon such *miserable uncertainties* as no
 wise man would trust with any thing of the
 least *value*.

For

Part. 5. Of Repentance, &c.

129

For *first*, I would ask any man that means to repent at his *death*, how he knows he shall have an *hours* time for it? Do we not daily see men snatch'd away in a moment? And who can tell that it shall not be his own case? But *secondly*, suppose he have a more *leisurely* death, that some disease give him warning of its approach, yet perhaps he will not understand that warning, but will still flatter himself, as verie often sick people do, with hopes of life to the last: and so his death may be sudden to him, though it comes by never so slow degrees. But again, *thirdly*, if he do discern his *danger*, yet how is he sure he shall then be able to *repent*? Repentance is a *grace* of God, not at our command; and it is just and usual with God, when men have a long time refused and rejected that *grace*, resisted all his calls and invitations to conversion and amendment, to give them over at last to the hardness of their own hearts, and not to afford them any more of that grace they have so despised. Yet suppose in the *fourth* place, that God in his infinite patience should still continue the *offer* of that *grace* to thee, yet thou that hast resisted, it may be *thirty*, or *forty*, or *fifty* years together, how knowest thou that thou shalt put off that *habit* of resistance upon a *sudden*, and make use of the *grace* afforded? It is sure thou hast many more advantages towards the doing it *now* then thou wilt have *then*.

SUNDAY

V.

The danger of deferring it till then.

The disadvantages of a death bed repentance.

The custom of postponing sin.

31. For *first*, The longer sin hath kept

possession

SUNDAY

V.

possession of the heart, the harder it will be to drive it out. It is true, if *Repentance* were nothing but a present *ceasing* from the *acts* of sin, the *death-bed* were fittest for it, for then we are disabled from committing most sins; but I have formerly shewed you *repentance* contains much more than so, there must be in it a *sincere hatred* of sin, and *love* of God. Now how unlikely is it that he which hath all his life loved sin, cherished it in his bosome, and on the contrary abhorred God and *goodness*, should in an instant quite change his *affections*, hate that sin he loved and love God and *goodness*, which before he utterly hated?

Bodily
pains.

32. And *secondly*, The bodily pains that attend a *death bed* will distract thee and make thee unable to attend the work of *repentance*, which is a business of such weight and difficulty, as will imploy all our powers even when they are at the freshest.

Danger of
insincerity.

33. Consider those *disadvantages* thou must then struggle with, and then tell me what *hope* there is thou shalt then do that, which now upon much *easier* terms thou wilt not. But in the *third* place there is a *danger* behind beyond all these, and that is, that the *repentance* which death drives a man to, will not be a true *repentance*, for in such a case it is plain, it is only the fear of *Hell* puts him on it, which though it may be a good *beginning*, where there is time after to *perfect* it, yet where it goes alone it can never avail for *Salvation*. Now that *death-bed repentances* are often on-

ly

Part.5. Of Repentance, &c.

131

SUNDAY
V.

ly of this sort, is too likely when it is observed, that many men who have seemed to *repent*, when they have thought *Death* approaching, have yet, after it hath pleased God to restore them to *health*, been as wicked (perhaps worse) as ever they were before; which shews plainly that there was no *real* change in them, and then surely had such a man died in that *seeming repentance*, God, who tries the heart, would not have accepted it, which he saw was *unsincere*. When all these dangers are laid together, it will surely appear a most *desperate* adventure for any man to trust to a *Death-bed repentance*. Nor is it ever the less for that example of the *penitent Thief*, *Luke* 23. 43. which is by many so much depended on. For it is sure, his case and ours differ widely, he had never heard of Christ before, and so more could not be expected of him then to embrace him as soon as he was tendred to him: But we have had him *offered*, nay *prest* upon us from our *Cradles* and yet have *rejected* him. But if there were not this *difference*, it is but a *faint* hope can be raised onely from a *single example*, and another we finde not in the whole *Bible*. The *Israclites* we read were *fed with Manna from Heaven*, but would you not think him stark mad that should out of expectation of the like, neglect to provide himself any food? Yet it is full as reasonable to depend upon this *example* as the other. I conclude all in the words of the Wise man, *Eccles.* 12. 1. *Remember thy Creator in the dayes of thy*

SUNDAY *youth before the evil dayes come.*

V.
Fasting.

34. To this dutie of repentance, *Fasting* is verie proper to be annexed. The Scripture usually joyns them together; among the *Jews* the great day of *atonement* was to be kept with *Fasting*, as you may see by comparing *Levis*. 16. 31. with *Isa*. 58. 5. and this by Gods especial appointment. And in the prophets when the people are called on to repent and *humble* themselves, they are also called on to *Fast*, Thus it is, *Joel* 2. 12. *Therefore now thus saith the Lord, Turn ye unto me with all your hearts, with fasting, and with weeping, &c.* Yea, so proper hath *Fasting* been accounted to *Humiliation*, that we see even *wicked Ahab* would not omit it in his, *2 Kings* 21. 27. Nor the *Heathen Ninivites* in theirs, *Jonah* 3. 5. Nor is it less fit or leis acceptable since *Christ*, then it was before him. For we see he supposes it as a dutie sometimes to be performed, when he gives directions to avoid *vain glory* in it, *Mat*. 6. 6. And also assures us that if it be performed, as it ought, not to *please men* but *God*, it will surely be rewarded by him. And accordingly we finde it practised by the *Saints*: *Anna*, *Luke* 2. 37. *Served God with fasting and prayer*: where it is observable, that it is reckoned as a service of *God*, fit to be joyned with *Prayers*. And the *Christians* of the *first times* were generally verie frequent in the practice of it. Now though *fasting* be especially proper to a time of *humiliation*, yet is it not so restrained to it but

Part. 5. Of Fasting, &c.

133

SUNDAY
V.

but it may be *seasonable*, whensoever we have any *extraordinary* thing to request from God. Thus when *Esther* was to endeavour the *deliverance* of her people from destruction, she and all the *Jews* kept a *solemn Fast*, *Esther* 4. 16. And thus when *Paul* and *Barnabas* were to be *Ordained Apostles*, there was *fasting* joyned to prayer, *Acts* 13. 3. And so it will be verie fit for us, whensoever we have need of any *extraordinary* directions, or assistance from God, whether concerning our *temporal* or *spiritual* concerns, thus to quicken our prayers by *Fasting*. But above all occasions, this of *Humiliation* seems most to require it, for besides the advantages of *kindling* our *zeal*, which is never more necessarie then when we beg for pardon of *sins*, *Fasting* carries in it somewhat of *revenge*, which is reckoned as a *special* part of *repentance*, 2 *Cor.* 7. 11. For by denying our bodies the refreshment of our ordinary food, we do inflict somewhat of *punishments* upon our selves for our former *excesses*, or whatever other sins we at that time accuse our selves of; which is a proper effect of that *indignation* which everie sinner ought to have against himself. And truly he that is so tender of himself that he can never find in his heart so much as to miss a *meal*, by way of punishment for his *faults*, shews he is not much fallen out with himself, for committing them, and so wants that indignation which the Apostle in the forenamed text mentions as a part of true repentance.

*Fasting a
revenge up-
on our
selves.*

SUNDAY

V.

Such re-
venges ac-
ceptable
with God.

Yet no sa-
tisfaction
for sins.

Times of
fasting.

35. There is no doubt, but such *holy revenges* upon our selves for sins are very *acceptable* to God ; yet we must not think that either those, or any thing else we can do, can make *satisfaction* for our offences, for that nothing but the *blood of Christ* can do. And therefore on *that*, and not on any of *our* performances we must depend for pardon. Yet since that *blood* shall never be *applied* to any but penitent sinners, we are as much concern'd to *bring forth all the fruits of repentance*, as if our *hopes* depended on them onely.

36. How *often* this duty of *fasting* is to be performed, we have no direction in Scripture. That must be allotted by mens own *piety*, according as their *health*, or other *considerations* will allow. But as it is in *humiliation*, the frequenter returns we have of set times for it, the better ; so it is likewise in *fasting*, the *oftenner*, the *better*, so it be not *hurtfull* either to our *healths*, or to some other *duty* required of us. Nay perhaps *fasting* may help some mento more of those times for *humiliation*, then they would otherwise gain. For perhaps there are some, who cannot, without a manifest *hinderance* to their *calling*, allow a whole *day* to that work, yet such an one may at least afford that *time*, he would otherwise spend in *eating* : And so *fasting* will be *doubly* usefull towards such a mans *humiliation*, both by helping him in the duty, and gaining him *time* for it.

37. I have now gone through the *first*
branch

Part.5. Of Fasting, &c.

135

branch of our Dutie to God, to wit, the *acknowledging* him for our God. The *Second* is the *having no other*. Of which I need say little, as it is a *forbidding* of that grosser sort of *Heathenish Idolatrie*, the worshipping of *Idols*, which though it were once common in the world, yet is now so rare, that it is not likely any that shall read this will be concerned in it. Only I must say, That to pay *Divine Worship* to any creature, be it *Saint* or *Angel*, yea, or the *Image* of *Christ* himself, is a *transgression* against this second branch of our dutie to God, it being the *imparting* that to a creature which is due onely to God, and therefore is strictly to be abstained from.

SUNDAY

V.

Second
Branch of
our Duty
to God.

38. But there is another sort of *Idolatry* of *Inward* which we are generally guiltie, and that is, when *Idolatry*. we pay those affections of *Love*, *Fear*, *Trust*, and the like, to any creature in a higher degree then we do to God: for that is the setting up that thing, whatsoever it is, for our God. And this *inward* kind of *Idolatrie* is that which provokes God to *jealousie* as well as the *outward* of worshipping an *Idol*. I might enlarge much upon this, but because some severals of it have been toucht on in the former *discourse*, I suppose it needless. And therefore shall now proceed to the *second* head of DUTY, that to our SELVES.

PARTITION VI.

DUTY to our SELVES ; of Sobriety ;
of Humility ; the great Sin of
Pride ; of Vain Glory, the Dan-
ger, Folly ; the Means to prevent
it : of Meekness ; &c.

Duty to our
SELVES.

§. 1. **T**HIS DUTY to our SELVES is by
S. Paul in the forementioned Text,
Titus 2. 12. summed up in this one
word, *Soberly*. Now by *Soberly*, is meant our
keeping within those due bounds which God
hath set us. My business will therefore be to
tell you what are the particulars of this *sobriety*;
and that *first*, in respect of the *soul* ; *secondly*,
in respect of the *body* : The *sobriety* of the *soul*
stands in right governing its *passions* and *affecti-
ons* ; and to that are many *Virtues* required. I
shall give you the particulars of them.

Humility.

2. The *first* of them is *Humility*, which may
well have the prime place, not only in respect
of the excellency of the *virtue*, but also of its
usefulness towards the *obtaining* of all the rest.
This being the foundation on which all others
must be built. And he that hopes to gain them
without this, will prove but like that foolish
builder Christ speaks of, *Luke 6. 49.* who
built his house on the sand. Of the *Humility*

Part. 6. *The duty of Humility, &c.* 137

towards God I have already spoken, and shewed the necessity of it, I am now to speak of Humility, as it concerns our selves, which will be found no less necessarie then the former.

SUNDAY
VI.

3. This *Humility* is of two sorts, the *first* is, the having a mean and low opinion of our selves, the *second* is the being content that others should have so of us. The first of these is contrary to pride, the other to vain glorie. And that both these are absolutely necessarie to Christians, I am now to shew you; which will, I conceive, best be done by laying before you *first*, the sin, *secondly*, the danger, *thirdly*, the contrarie vices.

4. And *first*, for *Pride*; the sin of it is so great, that it cast the *Angels* out of heaven, and therefore if we may judge of sin by the punishment, it was not onely the *first*, but the greatest sin that ever the Devil himself hath been guiltie of: Put we need no better proof of the hainousness of it, then the extream hatefulness of it to God; which besides that instance of his punishing the Devil, we may frequently finde in the Scriptures, *Prov. 16. 5. Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord.* And again, *Chap. 6. 16.* where there is mention of several things the Lord hates, a *proud look* is set as the first of them: so *1am. 4. 7. God resisteth the proud*; and divers other texts there are to the same purpose, which shew the great hatred God bears to this sin of Pride. Now since it is certain, God who is all goodness hates nothing, but

*The great
sin of
Pride.*

SUNDAY VI. as it is evil, it must needs follow, that where God hates in so great a degree, there must be a great degree of evil.

The danger

Drawing
into other
sins.

5. But *secondly*, PRIDE is not onely very finfull but very dangerous ; and that *first*, in respect of drawing us to other sins ; *secondly*, of betraying us to *punishments*. *First*, Pride, draws us to other *sins*, wherein it shews it self indeed to be the direct contrary to humility ; for as that is the root of all Vertue, so is this of all Vice. For he that is proud sets himself up as his own God, and so can never submit himself to any other rules or Laws then what he makes to himself. The ungodly, sayes the Psalmist, *is so proud that he careth not for God*, Psal. 10. 4. Where you see it is his pride that makes him despise God. And when a man is once come to that, he is prepared for the commission of all sins. I might instance in a multitude of particular sins that naturally flow from this of pride ; as *first Anger*, which the wise man sets as the effect of pride, *Pro. 21.24* calling it *pride a wrath* ; *secondly, strife and contention* ; which he again notes to be the off-spring of pride, *Prov, 13.10. Onely by pride cometh contention*. And both these are indeed most naturall effects of pride : For he that thinks very highly of himself expects much submission and observance from others, and therefore cannot but rage and quarrel whenever he thinks it not sufficiently paid. It would be infinite to mention all the fruits of this bitter root : I shall name but one more, and that is, that

Part. 6. Sin of Pride, &c.

139

SUNDAY
VI.

that pride not onely betrayes us to many sins, but also makes them incurable in us, for it hinders the working of all remedies.

6. Those remedies must either come from God or man, if from God, they must be either in the way of meekness and gentleness, or else of sharpness and punishment. Now if God by his goodness essay to lead a proud man to repentance, he quite mistakes Gods meaning, and thinks all the mercies he receives are but the reward of his own desert, and so long 'tis sure he will never think he needs repentance. But if on the other side God use him more sharply, and lay afflictions and punishments upon him, those in a proud heart work nothing but murmuring and hating of God, as if he did him injury in those punishments. As for the remedies that can be used by man, they again must be either by way of *correction*, or *exhortation*; corrections from man will sure never work more on a proud heart, then those from God, for he that can think God unjust in them, will much rather believe it of man. And exhortations will do as little. For let a proud man be admonished though never so mildly and lovingly, he looks on it as a disgrace. And therefore instead of *confessing* or amending the fault, he falls to reproaching his reprover as an over-busie or censorious person, and for that greatest and most precious act of kindness, looks on him as his enemy. And now one that thus stubbornly resists all means of cure, must be concluded
in

Frustrating of remedies.

SUNDAY

VI.

Betraying
so punish-
ment.

in a most dangerous estate.

7. But besides this danger of sin, I told you there was another, that of *punishment*; and of this there will need little proof when it is considered, that God is the proud mans Profeſt enemy, that he hates and reſiſts him, as appeared in the Texts forecited: And then there can be little doubt, that he which hath ſo mighty an adverſary ſhall be ſure to ſmart for it. Yet beſides this generall ground of con- cluſion, it may not be amiſs to mention ſome of thoſe *texts* which particularly threaten this ſin, as *Prov.* 16. 18. *Pride goeth before de- ſtruction, and an haughty ſpirit before a fall:* Again, *Prov.* 16. 5. *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord, though hand joyn in hand, yet they ſhall not be unpunished.* The decree it ſeems is unalterable, and whatever endeavours are uſed to preſerve the proud man they are but vain, for he *ſhall not go unpunished.* And this is very remarkable in the ſtory of *Nebuchadnezzar*, *Dan.* 4. who though a King, the greateſt in the world, yet for his pride was *driven from among men* to dwell and feed with beaſts. And it is moſt frequently ſeen, that this ſin meets with very *extraordinary* judgements even in this life. But if it ſhould not, let not the proud man think that he hath eſcaped *Gods vengeance*, for it is ſure there will be a moſt ſad reckoning in the next; for if God ſpared not the Angels for this ſin, but caſt them into hell, let no man hope to ſpeed better.

Part.6. Sin of Pride, &c.

141

SUNDAY

VI.

The Folly.

8. In the *third* place I am to shew you the great *Folly* of this sin; and to do that, it will be necessary to consider the severall things whereof men use to be proud; they are of three sorts, either those which we call the *goods of Nature*, or the *goods of Fortune*, or the *goods of Grace*.

9. By the *Goods of Nature*, I mean *Beauty*, *strength*, *Wit*, and the like, and the being proud of any of these is a huge *folly*: For *first*, we are very apt to mistake and think our selves Handsome or Witty when we are not, and then there cannot be a more *Ridiculous Folly* then to be proud of what we have not, and such every one esteems in another man, though he never supposes it his own case, and so never discerns it in himself. And therefore there is nothing more despiseable amongst all men, then a *Proud fool*, yet no man that entertains high opinions of his own wit but is in danger to be thus deceived, a mans own judgement of himself being of all others the least to be trusted. But *secondly*, suppose we be not out in judging, yet what is there in any of these *naturall* endowments which is worth the being Proud? There being scarce any of them which some creature or other hath not in a greater degree then man. How much does the whiteness of the *Lilly*, and the redness of the *Rose* exceed the white and red of the fairest face? What a mul-

In respect
of the goods
of Nature.

SUNDAY VI. multitude of creatures is there, that far surpass man in *strength* and *swiftness*? And divers others there are which as far as concerns any useful end of theirs, act much more wisely then most of us; and are therefore oftentimes in Scripture proposed to us by way of *Example*. It is therefore surely great unreasonableness for us to think highly of our selves for such things as are common to us with beasts and plants. But *thirdly*, if they were as excellent as we fancie them, yet they are not at all durable, they are impaired and lost by sundrie means; a *phrensie* will destroy the rarest wit, a *sickness* decay the freshest beautie, the greatest strength, or however old *age* will be sure to do all. And therefore to be proud of them is again a folly in this respect. But lastly, whatever they are, we gave them not to our selves. No man can think he did any thing towards the procuring his natural beautie or wit, and so can with no reason value himself for them.

*The goods
of fortune.*

10. In the *second* place, the folly is as great to be proud of the *goods* of *Fortune*; by them I mean wealth and honour, and the like; for it is sure, they adde nothing of true worth to the man, somewhat of outward pomp and braverie they may help him to, but that makes no change in the person. You may load an Ass with money, or deck him with rich *Trappings*, yet still you will not make him a whit the nobler kind of beast by either of them. Then *secondly*, these are things we have no hold

Part.6. *Sin of Pride, &c.*

143

SUNDAY

VI:

bold of, they vanish many times, ere we are aware, he that is rich to day, may be poor to morrow, and then will be the less pitied by all in his povertie, the prouder he was when he was rich. *Thirdly*, we have them all, but as *Stewards*, to lay out for our *Masters* use, and therefore should rather think how to make our accounts, then pride our selves in our receipts. *Lastly*, whatever of these we have, they, as well as the former, are not owing to our selves. But if they be lawfully gotten, we owe them onely to God, whose blessing it is, that maketh rich, *Prov.* 10. 22. If unlawfully, we have them upon such terms that we have very little reason to brag of them. And thus you see in these several respects, the folly of this second sort of pride.

II. The *third* is that of the *goods of grace*; that is, any virtue a man hath. And here I can not say, but the things are verie valuable, they being infinitely more precious, then all the world, yet nevertheless this is of all the rest the highest folly. And that not onely in the foregoing respect, that we help not our selves to it, grace being above all things most immediately Gods work in us; but especially in this, that the being proud of grace, is the sure way to lose it. God, who gives grace to the humble, will take it from the proud. For if, as we see in the parable, *Mat.* 25. 28. the talent was *taken from him* who had onely put it to no use at all, how shall he hope to have it

The goods of Grace.

con-

SUNDAY

VI.

continued to him that hath put it to so ill, that instead of trading with it for *God*, hath trafficked with it for *Satan*? And as he will lose the *Grace* for the future, so he will lose all *Reward* of it for the time past. For let a man have done never so many good acts, yet if he be proud of them, that pride shall be charged on him to his destruction, but the good shall never be remembered to his reward. And this proves it to be a most wretched folly to be proud of grace. It is like that of *children*, that pull those things in pieces they are most fond of, but yet much worse than that of theirs, for we not only lose the thing (and that the most precious that can be imagined) but we must also be eternally punished for doing so, there being nothing that shall be so sadly reckoned for in the next world as the abuse of *Grace*, and certainly there can be no greater abuse of it, than to make it serve for an end so directly contrary to that for which it was given, it being given to make us humble, not proud; to magnifie *God*, not our selves.

*Means of
Humility.*

12. Having shewed you thus much of this sin, I suppose it will appear very necessary to be eschewed; to which purpose it will first be usefull to consider what hath been already said concerning it, and that so seriously, as may work in thee not some slight dislike, but a deep and irreconcilable hatred of the sin: *secondly*, to be very watchfull over thine own heart that it cherish not any beginnings of it; never

Part.6. Of Humility, &c.

145

SUNDAY
VI.

never suffer it to feed on the fancie of thy own worth, but when ever any such thought arises, beat it down immediately with the remembrance of some of thy follies or sins, and so make this verie motion of pride an occasion of humilitie. *Thirdly*, Never to compare thy self with those thou thinkest more foolish or wicked then thy self, that so thou mayest like the *Pharisee*, Luk. 16. 11. extol thy self for being better; but if thou wilt compare, do it with the Wise and Godly, and then thou wilt finde thou comest so far short as may help to pull down thy high esteem of thy self. *Lastly*, To be verie earnest in Prayer, that God would root out all degrees of this sin in thee, and make thee one of those *poor in Spirit*, Mat. 5. 3. to whom the blessing, even of Heaven it self, is promised.

13. The *second* contrarie to humility I told you was *vain glory*. That is, a great thirst after the praise of men. And *first*, that this is a sin, I need prove no otherwise, then by the words of our Saviour, *John 5. 44. How can ye believe, that receive honour one of another?* Where it appears, that it is not onely a sin but such an one, as hinders the receiving of Christ into the heart, for so *believing* there signifies. This then in the *second* place shews you likewise the great dangerousness of this sin, for if it be that, which keeps Christ out of the heart, it is sure it brings infinite danger, since all our safetie, all our hope of escaping the wrath to come, stands in receiving him.

Vain glory.

The sin.

The danger.

But

SUNDAY
VI.

But besides the authority of this text, common experience shews, that where ever this sin hath possession, it endangers men to fall into any other. For he that so considers the praise of men, that he must at no hand part with it when ever the greatest sins come to be in fashion and credit (as God knows many are now adayes) he will be sure to commit them rather then run the disgrace of being too single and precise; I doubt there are many consciences can witness the truth of this, so that I need say no more to prove the *danger* of this sin.

The Folly.

14. The *third* thing I am to shew, is the *folly* of it; and that will appear *first*, by considering what it is we thus hunt after, nothing but a little *air*, a *blast*, the *breath* of men, it brings us in nothing of reall advantage: for I am made never the wiser nor the better for a mans saying I am wise and good. Besides, if I am commended, it must be either before my face or behind my back; if the former, it is very often flattery, and so the greatest abuse that can be offered, and then I must be very much a fool to be pleased with it. But if it be behind my back, I have not then so much as the pleasure of knowing it, and therefore it is a strange *folly* thus to pursue what is so utterly gainless. But *secondly*, it is not onely gainless, but painfull and uneasie also. He that eagerly seeks praise is not at all master of himself, but must fix all his actions to that end, and in stead of doing

doing what his own reason and conscience (nay perhaps his worldly conveniencie) directs him to, he must take care to do what will bring him in *commendations*, and so enslaves himself to everie one that hath but a tongue to commend him. Nay, there is yet a further uneasiness in it, and that is, when such a man fails of his aim, when he misses the praise, and perhaps meets with the contrarie reproach, (which is no mans lot more often then the vain-glorious, nothing making a man more despised) then what disturbances and disquiets, and even tortures of minde he is under? A lively instance of this you have in *Achitophel*, 2 *Sam.* 17. 23. who had so much of this upon *Absoloms* despising his counsel, that he chose to rid himself of it, by hanging himself. And sure this painfulness that thus attends this sin, is sufficient proof of the folly of it. Yet this is not all, it is yet further verie hurtful. For if this *vain glory* be concerning any good, or Christian action, it destroys all the fruit of it; he that prays or gives alms to be seen of men, *Matth.* 6. 2. must take that as his reward, *Verily I say unto you, they have their reward*; they must expect none from God, but the portion of those Hypocrites that love the praise of men more then the praise of God. And this is a miserable folly to make such an exchange. It is like the Dog in the Fable, who seeing in the water the shadow of that meat he held in his mouth, catcht at the shadow, &c so let go his meat. Such

SUNDAY
VI.

dogs, such unreasonable creatures are we when we thus let go the eternal rewards of Heaven to catch at a few good words of men. And yet we do not only lose those eternal joyes, but procure to our selves the contrary eternal miseries, which is sure the highest pitch of *folly* and madness. But if the *vain glory* be not concerning any vertuous action, but only some indifferent thing, yet even there also it is very hurtful; for *vain glory* is a sin that wheresoever it is placed, endangers our eternal estate, which is the greatest of all mischiefs. And even for the present it is observable, that of all other sins it stands the most in its own light, hinders it self of that very thing it pursues. For there are very few that thus hunt after praise, but they are discerned to do so, and that is sure to *eclipse* whatever praise-worthy thing they do, and brings scorne upon them in stead of reputation. And then certainly we may justly condemn this sin of *folly* which is so ill a manager even of its own design.

Helps a-
gainst vain
glory.

15. You have seen how wretched a thing this *vain glory* is in these several respects, the serious consideration whereof may be one good means to subdue it, to which it will be necessary to adde, *first*, a great watchfulness over thy self; observe narrowly whether in any *Christian duty* thou at all considerest the *praise of men*, or even in the most indifferent action, look whether thou have not too eager a desire of it, and if thou findest thy self inclined that way, have a very strict eye
upon

upon it, and where ever thou findest it stirring check and resist it, suffer it not to be the end of thy actions : But in all matters of Religion let thy Duty be the Motive ; in all indifferent things of common life let Reason direct thee ; and though thou mayest so far consider in those things the opinion of men, as to observe the rules of *common decency*, yet never think any praise that comes in to thee from any thing of that kinde, worth the contriving for : *Secondly*, set up to thy self *another aime*, viz. that of *pleasing God* let that be thy enquiry when thou goest about any thing, whether it be approved by him. And then thou wilt not be at leisure to consider what praise it will bring thee from men. And surely he that weighs of how much more moment it is to please God, who is able eternally to reward us, then men, whose applause can never do us any good, will surely think it reasonable to make the former his only care. *Thirdly*, if at any time thou art praised, do not be much overjoyed with it, nor think a jot the better of thy self ; but if it be *Virtue* thou art praised for, remember it was God that wrought it in thee, and give him the glory, never thinking any part of it belong to thee : If it be some *indifferent action*, then remember that it cannot deserve praise, as having no goodness in it : But if it be a *bad one*, (as amongst men such are sometimes likest to be commended) then it ought to set thee a trembling in stead of rejoycing, for

SUNDAY

VI.

then that woe of our Saviours belongs to thee, *Luke 6. 26. Woe unto you when men speak well of you, for so did their Fathers to the false Prophets, and there is not a greater sign of a hardened heart, then when men can make their sins the matter of their glory. In the last place let thy prayers assist in the fight with this corruption.*

MEEK-
NES.Advanta-
ges of it.

16. A second VERTUE is MEEKNES, That is a calmness and quietness of spirit, contrary to the Rages and impatiencies of Anger. This Vertue may be exercised, either in respect of God, or our neighbour. That towards God I have already spoken of, under the head of *Humility*, and that towards our neighbour I shall hereafter. All I have here to say of it is, how it becomes a duty to our selves; that it does, in respect of the great *advantage* we reap by it; which in mere kindness to our selves, we are to look after. And to prove that brings us this great *advantage*, I need say no more, but that this *meekness* is that to which Christ hath pronounced a blessing, *Mat. 5. 5. Blessed are the meek, and not only in the next world, but even in this too, they shall inherit the earth.* Indeed none but the *meek* person hath the true enjoyment of any thing in the world, for the angry and impatient are like sick people, who we use to say, cannot enjoy the greatest prosperities: For let things be never so fair without, they will raise storms within their own breasts. And surely whoever hath either in himself, or others ob-
served

Part. 5. *Vertue of Meekness, &c.* 151

served the great uneasiness of this passion of **SUNDAY**
anger, cannot chuse but think meekness a most **VI.**
pleasant thing.

17. Besides, it is also a most honourable thing, for it is that whereby we resemble Christ, *Learn of me*, saith he, *for I am meek and lowly in heart*, Matth. 11. 28. It is also that whereby we conquer our selves, overcome our own unruly passions, which of all *victories* is the greatest and most noble. Lastly, it is that which makes us behave our selves like men, whereas anger gives us the fierceness and wildness of Savage Beasts. And accordingly the one is by all esteemed and loved, whereas the other is hated and abhorred, everie man shunning a man in rage as they would a furious beast.

18. Farther yet, meekness is the sobriety of the mind, whereas anger is the direct madness; it puts a man wholly out of his own power, and makes him do such things as himself in his sober temper abhors; how many men have done those things in their rage, which they have repented all their lives after? And therefore surely as much as a man is more honourable then a beast, a sober man then a mad man, so much hath this vertue of *Meekness* the advantage of *Honour* above the contrarie vice of Anger.

19. Again, meekness makes any condition tolerable and *easy* to be endured. He that meekly bears any suffering, takes off the edge of it that it cannot wound him, whereas he

SUNDAY
VI.

that frets and rages at it; whets it and makes it much sharper then it would be; nay, in some cases makes that so, which would not else be so at all, as particularly in the case of *reproachful words*, which in themselves can do us no harm, they neither hurt our bodies nor lessen our estates, the only mischief they can do us is to make us angry, and then our anger may do us many more; whereas he that meekly passes them by is never the worse for them, nay, the better, for he shall be rewarded by God for that patience. Much more might be said to recommend this vertue to us, in respect of our *own present advantage*, but I suppose this may suffice to perswade men to esteem of it. The harder matter will be to gain them to the practice of it, wherein men pretend I know not what difficulties of natural constitutions, and the like; yet sure there is no man of so *Cholerick* a temper, but if he did heartily set about it, would find it were not impossible in some good measure to subdue it: But then he must be diligent in using means to that end. Divers of these *Means* there are, I shall mention some few.

*Means of
obtaining
it.*

20. As *first*, The imprinting deep in our minds the loveliness and benefits of meekness, together with the ugliness and mischiefs of anger. *Secondly*, To set before us the examples of Christ, who endured all reproaches, yea, torments with perfect patience, that was led as a sheep to the slaughter, Isaiah 53. 7. That when he was reviled, reviled not again; when

Part. 6. Vertue of Consideration, &c. 153

SUNDAY
VI.

he suffered, threatned not, 1 Pet. 2. 23. And if he, the Lord of glory suffered thus meekly and unjustly from his own creatures, with what face can we ever complain of any injury done to us? *Thirdly*, To be verie watchful to prevent the verie first beginnings of anger, and to that purpose to mortifie all inward peevishness and frowardness of minde, which is a sin in it self, though it proceed no farther, but will also be sure, if it be cherished, to break out into open effects of anger. Therefore when ever thou findest the least rising of it within thee, make as much haste to check it as thou wouldest to quench a fire in thy house; but be sure thou bring no fuel to it, by entertaining any thoughts that may increase it. And at such a time especially keep a most strict watch over thy tongue, that it break not out into any angry speeches, for that breath will fan the fire, not only in thine adversarie, but thy self too; therefore though thy heart be hot within, stifle the flame, and let it not break out; and the greater the temptation is, the more earnestly lift up thy heart to God to assist thee to overcome it. *Fourthly*, Often remember how great punishments thy sins have deserved, and then whether thy sufferings be from God or man, thou wilt acknowledge them to be far short of what is due to thee, and therefore wilt be ashamed to be impatient at them.

21. The third Vertue is CONSIDERATION, and this in a most special manner we

CONSIDERATION.

SUNDAY

VI.

Of our
State.The Rule
by which
to try our
State.

owe to our Souls. For without it we shall, as rash unadvised people use to do, rush them into infinite perils. Now this *Consideration* is either of our *State*, or of our *Actions*. By our *State*, I mean what our condition is to Godward, whether it be such that we may reasonably conclude our selves in his favour. This it much concerns us to consider and examine, and that not by those easie rules men are apt to frame to themselves, as whether they believe that Christ died for their sins; that they are of the number of the Elect, and shall certainly be saved, if these and the like were all that were required to put us into Gods favour, none but some melancholy person could ever be out of it; for we are apt enough generally to believe comfortably of our selves. But the Rules God hath given us in his Word are those by which we must be tryed at the last day, and therefore are certainly the only safe ones by which to try our selves now. And the summe of those are, that whosoever continues in any *one wilful sin*, is not in his favour, nor can if he do so *die* hope for any mercy at his hand.

22. Now it is highly necessary we should consider what our condition is in this respect: for since our life is nothing but a puffe of breath in our nostrils, which may for ought we know be taken from us the next minute, it nearly concerns us to know how we are provided for another world, that so in case we want at present that oile in our Lamps where-
with

with we are to meet the Bridegroom, *Mat.* SUNDAY
25. 8. we may timely get it, and not for want VI.

of it be ever shut out like the foolish Virgins
from his presence. The neglect of this *consi-* *The danger*
deration hath undone many souls; some by *of inconfi-*
deration. too easie a belief that they were in a good con-
dition, without considering and trying them-
selves by the foregoing Rule, but presuming
either upon some slight outward performances,
or upon such a false faith as I even now de-
scribed; others by the wretched careless go-
ing on, without so much as asking themselves
what their condition is, but hope they shall do
as well as their neighbours, and so never en-
quiring farther; which wretched carelessness
will as certainly undoe the spiritual, as the like
would do the temporal estate; yet in that eve-
rie man is wise enough to foresee, that a man
that never takes any accounts of his estate to
see whether he be worth something or nothing,
will be sure to be a beggar in the end. But in
this far weightier matter we can generally be
thus improvident.

23. The *second* thing we are to consider, is *Our actions*
our *Actions*, and those either before or after
the doing of them. In the first place, we are to
consider before we act, and not to do any *Before we*
thing rashly or headily; but *first*, to advise *do them.*
with our consciences, whether this be lawful
to be done, for he that follows his own in-
clination, and does everie thing which that
moves him to, shall be sure to fall into a mul-
titude of sins. Therefore consider soberly and
be

SUNDAY
VI.

be assured of the lawfulness of the thing before thou venture to do it. This advisedness is in all worldly things accounted so necessary a part of wisdom, that no man is accounted wise without it; a rash man we look upon as the next degree to a fool: And yet it is sure there is not so much need of looking about us in any thing as in what concerns our souls, and that not only in respect of the great value of them above all things else, but also in regard of the great danger they are in, as hath been shewed more at large in the beginning of the Treatise.

*After they
are done.*

24. *Secondly*, We are to consider the actions when they are *past* also, that is, we are to examine whether they have been such as are allowable by the Laws of Christ. This is very necessary whether they be good or bad; if they be good, the recalling them helpeth us to the comfort of a *good conscience*, and that comfort again encourageth us to go on in the like; and besides, it stirs us up to thankfulness to God, by whose grace alone we were enabled to do them. But if they be bad, then it is especially necessary that we thus examine them, for without this it is impossible we should ever come to amendment; for unless we observe them to have been amiss, we can never think it needful to amend, but shall still run on from one *wickedness to another*, which is the greatest curse any man can lie under.

*Frequency
of Consideration.*

25. The oftner therefore we use this *consideration* the better, for the less likely it is that

Part. 4. Of Meekness, &c.

157

SUNDAY
VI.

that any of our sins shall escape our knowledge. It is much to be wisht that every man should thus *every night try the actions of the day*, that so if he have done any thing amiss he may soon check himself for it, and settle his resolutions against it, and not let it grow on to a habit and course. And that he may also early beg Gods pardon, which will the easier be had the sooner it is asked, every delay of that being a great increase of the sin. And surely whoever means to take an account of himself at all, will finde this the easier course, it being much easier to do it so a little at a time, and while passages are fresh in his memorie, then to take the account of a long time together. Now if it be considered, that everie wilful sin must have a particular repentance before it can be pardoned, methinks men should tremble to sleep without that repentance; for what assurance hath any man that lies down in his bed that he shall ever rise again? And then how dangerous is the condition of that man that sleeps in an unrepented sin? The weighing of these several Motives may be a means, by Gods blessing, to bring us to the practice of this dutie of *Consideration* in all the parts of it.

*Danger of
omitting it.*

PAR-

PARTITION VII.

Of Contentedness and the Contraries to it ; Murmuring, Ambition, Covetousness, Envy ; Helps to Contentedness ; of duties which concern our Bodies ; of Chastity, &c. Helps to it ; of Temperance.

CON-
TEN-
TEDNES

S. 1. **T**HE *Fourth* VIRTUE is CONTENTEDNES, and this surely is a duty we must owe to our selves, it being that without which it is impossible to be happy. This *Contentedness* is a well-pleasedness with that condition, whatever it is, that God hath placed us in, not *murmuring* and repining at our lot, but cheerfully welcoming whatsoever God sends. How great, and withal how *pleasant* a virtue this is may appear by the contrariety it hath to several great and painful vices ; so that where this is rooted in the heart, it subdues not only some such single sin, but a cluster of them together.

Contrary to
murmuring.

2. And first it is contrarie to all *murmuring* in general, which is a sin most hateful to God, as may appear by his *sharp punishments* of it on the Israelites in the wilderness, as you may read in several places of the book of *Exodus* and

Part. 7. *Vertue of Contentedness, &c.* 159

and *Numbers*. And surely it is also verie **SUNDAY**
 painful and uneasie to a mans self, for if, as **VII.**
 the Psalmist saith, it be a *joyful & pleasant thing*
to be thankful, we may by the Rule of contra-
 ries conclude, it is a sad and unpleasant thing
 to be *murmuring*; and I doubt not everie
 mans own experience will confirm the truth
 of it.

3. *Secondly*, It is contrarie to *Ambition*; the **To Ambit-**
ambitious man is alwayes *disliking* his present **one**
 condition, and that makes him so greedily to
 seek a higher, whereas he that is content with
 his own lies quiet out of the road of this temp-
 tation. Now *ambition* is not only a great sin
 in it self, but it puts men upon many other:
 There is nothing so horrid, which a man that
 eagerly seeks greatness will stie at; lying, per-
 jury, murder, or any thing will down with him,
 if they seem to tend to his advancement: And
 the uneasiness of it is answerable to the sin.
 This none can doubt of that considers what a
 multitude of fears and jealousies, cares and di-
 stractions there are that attend *ambition* in its
 progress, besides the great and publick ruines
 that usually befall it in the end. And therefore
 sure *Contentedness* is in this respect as well a
 Happiness as a Vertue.

4. *Thirdly*, It is contrary to *Covetousness*; **To Cove-**
 this the Apostle witnesseth, *Hebrews 13. 5. Let* **tousness.**
your conversation be without covetousness, and
be content with such things as ye have; where
 you see contentedness is yet as the direct con-
 trary to *covetousness*. But of this there needs

SUNDAY
VII.

no other proof then common experience; for we see the covetous man never thinks he hath enough, and therefore can never be content; for no man can be said to be so that thirsts after any thing he hath not. Now that you may see how excellent and necessary a virtue this is that secures us against *covetousness*, it will not be amiss a little to consider the nature of that sin.

Covetousness contrary to our duty to God.

5. That it is a very great crime, is most certain, for it is contrary to the very foundation of all good life; I mean those *three great Duties*, to God, to our *Selves*, to our *Neighbour*. *First*, It is so contrary to our Duty to God, that Christ himself tells us, *Luke 16. 13. We cannot serve God and Mammon*: he that sets his heart upon wealth, must necessarily take it off from God. And this we daily see in the *covetous* mans practice, he is so eager in the gaining of riches, that he hath no time or care to perform duty to God; let but a good bargain, or opportunity of gain come in his way, *Prayer* and all duties of Religion must be neglected to attend it. Nay, when the committing the greatest sin against God may be likely either to get or save him ought, his love of wealth quickly perswades him to commit it.

To our Selves.

6. *Secondly*, It is contrary to the Duty we owe our *Selves*, and that both in respect of our Souls and Bodies. The covetous man despises his Soul, sells that to eternal destruction for a little pelf: for so every man does that

that by any unlawfull means seeks to enrich himself; nay, though he do it not by unlawfull means, yet if he have once set his heart upon wealth, he is that covetous person upon whom the Apostle hath pronounced; *That he shall not enter into the Kingdome of God,* 1 Cor. 6. 10. Nor doth he only offend against his Soul but his Body too. For he often denies that those necessarie refreshments it wants, and for which his wealth (as far as it concerns himself) was given him. This is so constantly the custom of rich Misers that I need not prove it to you.

7. In the *third* place, *Covetousness* is contrary to the duty we owe to our *neighbours*. And that in both the parts of it, Justice and Charity: he that loves money immoderately, will not care whom he cheats and defrauds so he may bring in gain to himself: and from hence spring those many tricks of deceit and cousternage, so common in the world. As for Charity, that is never to be hoped for from a covetous man who dreads the lessening of his own heaps more then the starving of his poor brother. You see how great a sin this is, that we may well say of it as the Apostle doth, 1 Tim. 6. 10. *The love of money is the root of all evil.* And it is not much less uneasie then wicked, for between the care of getting and the fear of losing, the covetous man enjoys no quiet hour. Therefore everie man is deeply concerned, as he tends his happiness either in this world or the next, to guard him-

To our
neighbours.

SUNDAY himself against this sin, which he can no way
VII. do, but by possessing his heart with this vertue
 of *contentedness*.

*Contented-
 ness contra-
 ry to envy.*

8. In the *fourth* place, it is contrary to *en-
 vy*, for he that is content with his own
 condition, hath no temptation to *envy* ano-
 thers: How unchristian a sin this of *envy* is,
 shall hereafter be shewed: At the present, I
 need say no more, but that it is also a very un-
 easie one, it frets and gnaws the very heart of
 him that harbours it. But the worse this sin is,
 the more excellent still is this grace of *con-
 tentedness*, which frees us from it. I suppose I have
 said enough to make you think this a very
 lovely and desireable Vertue. And sure it were
 not impossible to be gain'd by any, that would
 but observe these few directions.

*Helps to
 Contented-
 ness.*

9. *first*, To consider, that whatever our
 estate and condition in any respect be, it is
 that which is allotted us by God, and therefore
 is certainly the best for us, he being much bet-
 ter able to judge for us, then we for our selves;
 and therefore to be displeased at it, is in ef-
 fect to say, we are wiser then he. *Secondly*,
 Consider thorowly the vanity of all worldly
 things, how very little there is in them, while
 we have them, and how uncertain we are to
 keep them; but above all, in how little stead
 they will stand us at the day of death or
 judgement, and then thou canst not think any
 of them much worth the desiring, and so wilt
 not be discontented for want of them.
Thirdly, Suffer not thy fancy to run on things
 thou

Part. 7. Of Contentedness, &c. 163

SUNDAY
VII.

thou hast not : many have put themselves out of love with what they have, only by thinking what they want. He that sees his neighbour possess somewhat, which himself hath not, is apt to think how happy he should be, if he were in that mans condition, and in the mean time never thinks of enjoying his own, which yet perhaps in many respects may be much happier, then that of his neighbours which he so much admires. For we look but upon the *outside* of other mens conditions, and many a man that is envied by his neighbours, as a wonderful happy person, hath yet some *secret trouble*, which makes him think much otherwise of himself. Therefore never compare thy condition in any thing with those thou countest more prosperous then thy self, but rather do it with those thou knowest more unhappy, and then thou wilt finde cause to rejoyce in thine own portion. *Fourthly*, Consider how far thou art from deserving any good thing from God, and then thou canst not but with *Jacob*, *Gen. 32. 10.* confess, that thou art *not worthy of the least of those mercies* thou enjoyest; and in stead of murmuring that they are no more, wilt see reason to admire, and praise the bounty of God, that they are so many. *Fifthly*, be often thinking of the joyes laid up for thee in Heaven; look upon that as thy home, on this world, only as an *Inne*, where thou art fain to take up in thy passage; and then as a Traveller expects not the same conveniences at an *Inne*, that he hath

M

at

SUNDAY

VII.

Fasting.

at home, so thou hast reason to be content with what ever entertainment thou findest here, knowing thou art upon thy journey to a place of *infinite happiness*, which will make an abundant amends for all the uneasiness, and hardship thou canst suffer in the way. *Lastly*, Pray to God, from whom all good things do come, that he will to all his other blessings, add this of a contented minde, without which thou canst have no taste or relish of any other.

DILIGENCE.

Watchfulness against sin.

10. A *fifth Duty* is DILIGENCE: this is made up of two parts, *watchfulness*, and *industry*, and both these we owe to our Souls.

11. *First*, *Watchfulness*, in observing all the dangers that threaten them. Now since nothing can endanger our Souls, but sin, this *watchfulness* is principally to be employed against that: And as in a *besieged City*, where there is any weak part, there it is necessary to keep the strongest guard; so it is here, wherever thou findest thy inclinations such, as are most likely to betray thee to sin, there it concerns thee to be especially *watchful*: Observe therefore carefully to *what sin* either thy natural temper, thy company, or thy course of life do particularly incline thee, and *watch* thy self verie narrowly in those; Yet do not so lay out all thy care on those, as to leave thy self open to any other, for that may give *Satan* as much advantage on the other side; but let thy *watch* be general, against all sin, though in a special manner against those, which are like oftenest to assault thee.

12. The

Part.7. Vertue of Diligence, &c. 165

12. The *second* part of *diligence*, is *industry*, or *labour*, and this also we owe to our Souls, for without it they will as little prosper as that vineyard of the sluggard, which *Solomon* describes, *Prov.* 24. 30. For there is a husbandry of the Soul, as well as of the estate, and the end of the one, as of the other, is the increasing, and *improving* of its riches. Now the riches of the Soul are either Natural, or Divine. By the natural I mean its faculties of reason, wit, memorie, and the like; by the Divine I mean the graces of God, which are not the Souls natural portion, but are given immediately by God, and both these we are to take care to improve, they being both talents intrusted to us for that purpose.

SUNDAY
VII.
*Industry in
improving
gifts.*

13. The way of improving the *natural* is by employing them so, as may bring in most honour to God: we must not let them lye idle by us, through sloth, neither must we overwhelm them with intemperance, and brutish pleasures, which is the case of too many, but we must employ them, and set them on work. But then we must be sure it be not in the Devils service, like many, who set their wit only to the profaning of God, or cheating their neighbours, and stufte their memories with such filthiness, as should never once enter their thoughts; our use of them must be such, as may bring in most glorie to God, most benefit to our neighbours, and may best fit us to make our accounts, when God shall come to reckon with us for them.

Of Natures.

SUNDAY

VII.

Of grace.

14. But the other part of the *Souls riches*, is yet more precious, that is *grace*, and of this we must be especially carefull, to husband and improve it. This is a duty expressly commanded us by the Apostle, *2 Pet. 3. 18. Grow in grace.* And again, in the first Chapter of that *Epistle*, verse 5. *give all diligence to add to your faith vertue, and to vertue knowledge, &c.* Now the especiall means of improving *grace* is by imploying it, that is, by doing those things for the enabling of us whereunto it was given us: This is a sure means, not only in respect of that easiness, which a custome of any thing brings in the doing of it, but principally, as it hath the promise of God, who hath promised, *Matthew 25. 29. That to him that hath (that is, hath made use of what he hath) shall be given, and he shall have abundance.* He that diligently and faithfully employs the first beginnings of *grace*, shall yet have more, and he that in like manner husbands that more, shall yet have a greater degree; so that what *Solomon* saith of temporal riches, is also true of spiritual, *The hand of the diligent maketh rich.*

To improve
good moti-
ons.

15 Therefore when ever thou findest any good motion in thy heart, remember that is a season for this spiritual husbandry: If thou hast but a check of conscience against any sin, thou livest in, drive that on till it come to a hatred, and then that hatred, till it come to a resolution, then from that resolution, proceed to some endeavours against it. Do this
faith-

Part. 7. Of Diligence, &c.

167

SUNDAY
VII.

faithfully, and sincerely, and thou shalt certainly finde the grace of God assisting thee, not only in every of these steps, but also enabling thee to advance still higher, till thou come to some victory over it. Yet to this industry thou must not fail to adde thy prayers also, there being a promise, that God will give *the holy Spirit to them that ask it*, Matth 7. 11. And therefore they that ask it not, have no reason to expect it. But it must be asked with such an earnestness, as is some way answerable to the value of the thing, which being infinitely more precious then all the world, both in respect of its own worth, and its usefulness to us, we must beg it with much more zeal and earnestness, then all temporal blessings, or else we shew our selves despisers of it.

16. Having directed you to the means of improving grace, I shall to quicken you to it, mention the great *danger* of the *contrary*; *The danger of the contrary.* And that is not as in other things, the losing only those further degrees, which our industry might have helped us to, but it is the losing even of what we already have; *For from him that hath not (that is again hath not made use of what he hath) shall be taken away even that which he hath*, Matth. 25. 29. God will withdraw the grace, which he sees so neglected, as we see in that parable, the Talent was taken from him that had onely hid it in a Napkin, and had brought in no gain to his Lord. And this is a most sad punishment, the greatest that can befall any man, before he

SUNDAY
VII.

comes to Hell, indeed it is some kinde of fore-taste of it, it is the delivering him up to the power of the Devil, and it is the banishing him from the face of God, which are not the least parts of the misery of the damned. And it is also the binding a man over to that fuller portion of wretchedness in another world; For that is the last doom of the *unprofitable servant*, Matth. 25.30. *Cast the unprofitable servant into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.* You see there are no light dangers that attend this neglect of grace, and therefore if we have any love, nay any common pity to our Souls, we must set our selves to this industry. I have now done with those VERTUES, which respect our SOULS, I come now to those which concern our BODIES.

CHASTITY.

17. The first of which is *Chastity*, or *Purity*, which may well be set in the front of the duties we owe to our bodies, since the Apostle, 1 Cor. 6. 18. sets the contrary as the especial sin against them, *He that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own Body.*

18. Now this vertue of *chastity* consists in a perfect abstaining from all kindes of uncleanness; not only that of adultery, and fornication, but all other more unnatural sorts of it, committed either upon our selves, or with any other. In a word, all acts of that kinde are utterly against Chastity, save only in *lawful marriage*. And even there men are not to think themselves let loose to please their

Part. 7. *Vertue of Chastity, &c.* 169

SUNDAY
VII.

their brutish appetites, but are to keep themselves within such rules of moderation, as agree to the end of marriage, which being these two, the begetting of Children, and the avoiding of fornication, nothing must be done which may hinder the first of these ends; and the second aiming only at the subduing of lust, the keeping men from any sinful effects of it, is very contrary to that end to make marriage an occasion of heightning, and enflaming it.

19. But this vertue of *chastity* reacheth not only to the restraining of the grosser act, but to all lower degrees; it sets a guard upon our eyes, according to that of our Saviour, *Mat. 5. 28. He that looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart*; and upon our hand, as appears by what Christ adds in that place, *If thy hand offend thee, cut it off*: so also upon our tongues, that they speak no immodest or filthy words, *Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth*, *Ephes. 4. 29*. Nay upon our very thoughts, and fancies, we must not entertain any foul or filthy desires, not so much as the imagination of any such thing. Therefore he that forbears the grosser act, and yet allows himself in any of these, it is to be suspected that it is rather some outward restraint, that keeps him from it, then the conscience of the sin. For if it were that, it would keep him from these too, these being sins also, and very great ones in Gods sight.

*Unclean-
ness for-
bidden in
the very
lowest de-
grees.*

SUNDAY
VII.

Besides, he that lets himself loose to these, puts himself in very great danger of the other, it being much more easier to abstain from all, then to secure against the one, when the other is allowed. But above all, it is to be considered that even these lower degrees are such as make men very odious in Gods eyes who seeth the heart, and loves none that are not pure there.

*The mis-
chiefs of it.*

20 The *loveliness* of this Vertue of *Chastity* needs no other way of describing then by considering the loathsomeness and *mischiefs* of the contrary sin, which is *first*, very brutish; those desires are but the same that the beasts have; and then how far are they sunk below the nature of men, that can boast of their sins of that kinde as of their speciall excellency? When if that be the measure, a *Goat* is the more excellent creature. But indeed they that eagerly pursue this part of Beastiality do often leave themselves little, besides their humane shape, to difference them from beasts: This sin so clouds the understanding, and defaceth the reasonable Soul. Therefore *Solomon* very well describes the young man that was going to the harlots house, *Prov. 7. 22. he goeth after her as an Oxe goeth to the slaughter.*

*To the
Soul.*

*To the Bo-
dy.*

21. Nor *secondly*, are the effects of it better to the body then to the mind. The many foul and filthy, besides *painful* diseases, which often follow this sin, are sufficient witnesses how mischievous it is to the *body*. And alas, how many are there that have thus made them-

themselves the *Divels Martyrs*? Suffered such torments in the pursuit of this sin, as would exceed the invention of the greatest tyrant? Surely they that pay thus dear for damnation, very well deserve to enjoy the purchase.

22. But *thirdly*, Besides the natural fruits of this sin, it is attended with very great and heavy Judgements from God; the most extraordinary and miraculous Judgement that ever befell any place, *Fire and Brimstone from Heaven upon Sodom and Gomorrah*, was for this sin of *uncleanness*. And many examples likewise of Gods vengeance may be observed on particular persons, for this sin. The incest of *Amnon* cost him his life, as you may read, *2 Sam. 13.* *Zimrie* and *Cozbi* were slain in the very act, *Numb. 25. 8.* And no person that commits the like, hath any assurance it shall not be his own case. For how secretly soever it be committed, it cannot be hid from God, who is the sure avenger of all such wickedness. Nay, God hath very particularly threatned this sin, *1 Cor. 3. 17.* *If any man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy.* This sin of *uncleanness* is a kind of *sacrilege*, a polluting those bodies, which God hath chosen for his *Temples*, and therefore no wonder, if it be thus heavily punished.

23. *Lastly*, This sin shuts us out from the Kingdome of Heaven, wherein no impure thing can enter. And we never finde any list of those sins, which bar men thence, but this of *uncleanness* hath a special place in it. Thus

SUNDAY
VII.

*The judgements of
God against
it.*

*It shuts out
from Hea-
vens*

it

SUNDAY VII. it is *Gal*, 5. 19. and so again, 1 *Cor* 6. 9. If we will thus pollute our selves we are fit company only for those black spirits, the Devil and his Angels; and therefore with them we must expect our portion, where our flames of *lust* shall end in flames of fire.

*Helps to
Chastity.*

24. All this layed together, may surely recommend the virtue of *Chastity* to us, for the preserving of which we must be very careful, *first*, to check the *beginnings* of the temptation, to cast away the very *first fancy* of lust with indignation, for if you once fall to parley and talk with it, it gains still more upon you, and then it will be harder to resist; therefore your way in this temptation is to *flie* rather than fight with it. This is very necessary, not only that we may avoid the danger of proceeding to act the sin, but also in respect of the present fault of entertaining such fancies, which of it self, though it should never proceed further, is, as hath been shewed, a great abomination before God. *Secondly*, have a special care to *flie Idleness*, which is the proper soil for these filthy weeds to grow in; and keep thy self alwayes busied in some innocent or virtuous employment, for then these fancies will be less apt to offer themselves. *Thirdly*, never suffer thy self to recal any unclean passages of thy former life with delight, for that is to act over the sin again, and will be so reckoned by God; nay, perhaps thus deliberately to think of it may be a greater guilt then a rash acting of it. For this

Part. 7. *Vertue of Chastity, &c.*

173

SUNDAY
VII.

this both shews thy heart to be set upon filthiness, and is also a preparation to more acts of it. *Fourthly*, forbear the company of such light and wanton persons as either by the filthiness of their discourse, or any other means, may be a snare to thee. *Fifthly*, pray earnestly that God would give thee the Spirit of *Purity*, especially at the time of any present temptation. Bring the unclean Devil to Christ to be *cast out*, as did the man in the Gospel; and if it will not be cast out with *Prayer* alone, adde *Fasting* to it; but be sure thou do not keep up the flame by any high or immoderate feeding. The *last* remedy, when the former prove vain, is *Marriage*, which becomes a duty to him that cannot live innocently without it. But even here there must be care taken lest this which should be for his good, become not to him an occasion of falling for want of sobriety in the use of marriage. But this I have toucht on already, and therefore need adde no more but an earnest intreaty, that men would consider seriously of the foulness and danger of this sin of uncleanness, and not let the commonness of it lessen their hatred of it, but rather make them abhor that shameless impudence of the world, that can make light of this sin against which God hath pronounced such heave curses, *Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge*, Heb. 13. 4. and so he will certainly do all sorts of unclean persons whatsoever.

SUNDAY
VII.
TEMPE-
RANCE.

In Eating.

Ends of eating.

Preserving of life.

Of Health.

25. The *second* VIRTUE that concerns our bodies is TEMPERANCE: And the exercises of that are divers, as first, *Temperance in Eating*, secondly, in *Drinking*, thirdly, in *Sleep*, fourthly in *Recreation*, fifthly, in *apparel*. I shall speak of them severally; and first of *temperance in Eating*. This *temperance* is observed when our eating is agreeable to those ends to which eating is by God and Nature designed; those are first, the being, secondly, the well-being of our bodies.

26. Man is of such a frame that *Eating* becomes necessary to him for the preserving his life, hunger being a naturall disease which will prove deadly if not prevented, and the onely physick for it is *Eating*, which is therefore become a necessary means of keeping us alive. And that is the first end of eating; and as men use not to take physick for pleasure, but remedy, so neither should they eat.

27. But *secondly*, God hath been so bountifull as to provide not only for the being, but the *well being* of our bodies, and therefore we are not tyed to such strictness, that we may eat no more then will just keep us from starving, but we may also eat whatsoever either for kinde or quantity most tends to the *health* and welfare of them: Now that eating which is agreeable to these ends, is within the bounds of *temperance*, as on the contrary whatsoever is contrary to them, is a transgression against it; he therefore that

sets

fers up to himself other ends of eating, as either the pleasing of his taste, (what is yet worse) the pampering of his body that he may the better serve his lust, he directly thwarts and crosses these ends of God; for he that hath those aims doth that which is very contrary to health, yea, to life it self, as appears by the many diseases and untimely deaths which surfeiting and uncleanness daily bring on men.

28. He therefore that will practice this *Vertue of Temperance*, must neither eat so much, nor of any such sorts of meat (provided he can have other) as may be hurtful to his health: what the sorts or quantities shall be is impossible to set down, for that differs according to the several constitutions of men; some men may with temperance eat a great deal, because their stomachs require it, when another may be guiltie of *intemperance* in eating but half so much, because it is more then is useful to him. And so also for the sort of meat, it may be niceness and *luxury* for some to be curious in them, when yet some degree of it may be *necessary* to the infirmities of a weak stomach, which not out of wantonness but disease cannot eat the courser meats. But I think it may in general be said, that to healthful bodies the plainest meats are generally the most wholesome, but everie man must in this be left to judge for himself; and that he may do it aright, he must be careful that he never suffer himself to be enslaved to his palate,

*Rules of
Temperance in
Eating.*

SUNDAY late, for that will be sure to satisfy it self, what-
VII. ever becomes of health or life.

*Means of
 it.*

29. To secure him the better let him consider, *First*, how unreasonable a thing it is that the whole body should be subjected to this one Sense of *Tasting*, that it must run all hazards only to please that. But it is yet much more so that the diviner part, the *Soul*, should also be thus enslaved; and yet thus it is in an intemperate person, his very soul must be sacrificed to this brutish appetite; for the sin of intemperance, though it be acted by the Body, yet the Soul must share in the eternal punishment of it. *Secondly*, Consider how extreme short and *vanishing* this pleasure is, it is gone in a moment, but the pains that attend the excess of it are much more durable, and then surely it agrees not with that common reason, wherewith, as men, we are induced, to set our hearts upon it. But then in the *third* place, it agrees yet worse with the temper of a *Christian*, who should have his heart so purified and refined with the expectation of those higher and spiritual joys he looks for in another world, that he should very much despise these gross and *brutish pleasures*, which beasts are as capable of as we, and to them we may well be contented to leave them, it being the highest their natures can reach to; but for us who have so much more *excellent hopes*, it is an intolerable shame that we should account them as any part of our happiness. *Lastly*, The sin of *Gloomy*

Part.8. Of Temperance in Drinking. 177

SUNDAY
VIII.

is so great and dangerous, that Christ thought fit to give an especial warning against it, *take heed to your selves that your hearts be not overcharged with surfeiting, &c.* Luke 21. 34. And you know what was the end of the rich glutton, Luke 16. He that had *sared deliciously every day*, at last wants a drop of water to cool his tongue. So much for that first sort of Temperance, that of Eating.

PARTITION VIII.

Of Temperance in Drinking, False Ends of drinking, viz. Good Fellowship, putting away Cares, &c.

§.1. **T**He second is *Temperance in Drinking*, and the ends of eating and drinking being much the same, I can give no other direct rules in this, then what were given in the former, to wit, that we drink neither of such sorts of liquor, nor in such quantities as may not agree with the *right ends of drinking*, the preserving of our lives and healths: Only in this there will be need of putting in *one Caution*, for our understandings being in more danger to be hurt by drinking then meat, we must rather care to keep that safe, and rather not drink what we might safely in respect of our health, if it be in danger to distemper our reason.

SUNDAY
VIII.

reason. This I say because it is possible some mens brains may be so weak that their heads cannot bear that ordinarie quantitie of *drink* which would do their bodies no harm. And whoever is of this temper must strictly abstain from that degree of *drink*, or that sort of it which he findes hath that effect, yea, though it do in other respects appear not only safe but useful to his health. For though we are to preserve our healths, yet we are not to do it by a sin, as drunkenness most certainly is.

False ends
of drinking

2. But alas! of those multitudes of *drunkards* we have in the world, this is the case but of very few, most of them going far beyond what their health requires, yea, or can bear, even to the utter destruction thereof. And therefore it is plain men have set up to themselves some *other ends of drinking* then those allowable ones forementioned; it may not be amiss a little to explain what they are, and withall to shew the unreasonableness of them.

Good Fellowship.

3. The *first*, and most owned, is that which they call *Good-fellowship*; one man drinks to keep another company at it. But I would ask such a one, whether if that man were drinking rank poyson he would pledge him for company? If he say he would not, I must tell him, that by the very same, nay, far *greater reason*, he is not to do this. For *immoderate drinking* is that very poyson; perhaps it doth not alwayes work death immediately (yet there want not many instances of its having done even that, very many having died in their *drunken-*

ly fit) but that the custome of it does usually bring men to their ends, is past doubt, and therefore though the poyson work slowly, yet it is still poyson. But however it doth at the present work that which a wise man would more abhor then death; it works madness, and frenzy turns the man into a beast, by drowning that reason which should difference him from one. Certainly the effects of drink are such, that had being drunk been first enjoyned as a punishment, we should have thought him a more then ordinary Tyrant that had invented it.

4. A *second* end of drinking is said to be the maintaining of friendship and *kindness* amongst men. But this is strangely unreasonable, that men should do that towards the maintaining of friendship, which is really the greatest mischief that can be done to any man. Did ever any think to befriend a man by helping to destroy his estate, his credit, his life? Yet he that thus drinks with a man does this and much more, he ruins his reason, yea, his soul, and yet this must be called the way of preserving of friendship; this is so ridiculous that one would think none could own it but when he were actually drunk. But besides, alas! experience shews us, that this is fitter to beget quarrels then preserve kindness, as the many *drunken brawls* we every day see, with the wounds, and sometimes *murders* that accompany them, do witness.

5. A *third* end is said to be the *cheering* of *Cheering*
N *their* the spirits.

SUNDAY
VIII.

their spirits, making them merry and jolly. But sure if the mirth be such that reason must be turned out of doors before it begin, it will be very little worth; one may say with *Solomon*, *Eccl.2. 2. The laughter of such fools is madness.* and sure they that will be drunk to put themselves in this temper, must by the same reason be glad of a Frenzie, if they could but be sure it would be of the merry sort. But little do these merry folks think what sadness they are all this while heaping up to themselves, often in this world, when by some mad *pranks*, they play in their jollity, they bring mischief upon themselves, but however certainly in another, where this mirth will be sadly reckon'd for.

Putting
away
cares.

6. A *fourth* end is said to be the *putting away of cares*; but I shall ask what those *cares* are? Be they such as should be put away? Perhaps they are some *checks* and remorses of *conscience*, which must be thus charmed. And I doubt this hath proved too effectual with many to the laying them asleep: But this is the wickedst folly in the world; for if thou thinkst not these checks to have something considerable in them, why do they trouble thee? But if thou do, it is impossible thou canst hope this can long secure thee from them. Thou mayest thus stop their mouthes for a while, but they will one day cry the louder for it. Suppose a *Thief* or a *Murderer* knew he were pursued to be brought to justice, would he, think you, to put away the fear of being hanged, fall to drinking, and in the mean time take

Part. 3. of Temperance in drinking. 181

SUNDAY
VIII.

So care for his escape? or would you not think him desperately mad if he did? Yet this is the very case here, thy conscience tells thee of thy danger, that thou must ere long be brought before *Gods Judgement Seat*; and is it not madness for thee instead of endeavouring to get thy pardon, to drink away the thought of thy danger? But in the *second* place, suppose these cares be some worldly ones, and such as are fit to be put away; then for shame do not so disgrace thy Reason, thy Christianity, as not to let them be as forcible to that end as a little drink. Thy Reason will tell thee it is in vain to care, where care will bring no advantage: and thy Christianity will direct thee to one on whom thou mayest *safely cast all thy cares, for he careth for thee*, 1 Pet. 5. 7. And therefore unless thou meanest to renounce being both a man and a Christian, never betake thee to this pitiful shift to rid thee of thy cares. But besides, this will not do the deed neither; for though it may at the present, whilst thou art in the height of the drunken fit, keep thee from the sense of thy cares, yet when that is over, they will return again with greater violence; and if thou have any conscience, bring a *new care* with them, even that which ariseth from the guilt of so foul a sin.

7. A *fifth* end is said to be the *passing away of time*. This though it be as unreasonable as any of the former, yet by the way it serves to reproach idleness, which is, it seems, so burdensome a thing, that even this *vilest employment*

SUNDAY
VIII.

ment is preferred before it. But this is in many a very false plea. For they often spend time at the pot not only when they have nothing else to do, but even to the neglect of their most necessary business. However it is in all a most unreasonable one, for there is no man but he may finde somewhat or other to employ himself in. If he have little worldly business of his own, he may yet do somewhat to the benefit of others; but however there is no man but hath a *Soul*, and if he will look carefully to that, he need not complain for *want of business*, where there are so many corruptions to *mortifie*, so many inclinations to *watch over*, so many temptations (whereof this of *drunkenness* is not the least) to *resist*; The *Graces* of God to improve and stir up, and former *neglects* of all these to *lament*, sure there can never want sufficient employment; for all these require time, and so men at their deaths finde; for then those that have all their lives made it their business to drive away their time, would then give all the world to redeem it. And sure where there is much leisure from worldly *affairs*, God expects to have the more time thus employed in Spiritual exercises. But it is not likely those *meaner* sort of persons, to whom this book is intended, will be of the number of those that have much leisure, and therefore I shall no farther insist on it, only I shall say this, that what degrees of leisure they at any time have, it concerns them to employ to the benefit of their souls, and not to bestow it to the ruine of

Part. 8. *Of Temperance in drinking.* 183

of them, as they do, who spend it in drinking. SUNDAY

VIII.

*Preventing
reproach.*

8. A *sixth* end is said to be the preventing of that *reproach* which is by the world cast on those that will in this be stricter then their neighbours; but in answer to this, I shall *first* ask, what is the harm of such reproach? Sure it cannot equal the least of those mischiefs drunkenness betrayes us to. Nay, if we will take our Saviours words it is a happiness, *Blessed*, saith he, *are ye when men shall revile you, and say all manner of evil against you for my sake*, Matt. 5. 11. And S. Peter tells us, 1 Pet. 4. 14. *If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ happy are ye*: and sure to be reproached for obedience to any command of Christs, is to be reproached for his Name. Secondly, Let it be remembred that at our *Baptisme* we solemnly *renounced the world*; and shall we now so far consider it, as for a few scoffs of it to run our selves on all the temporal evils before mentioned; and which is much worse, the wrath of God and eternal destruction? But Thirdly, If you fear reproach, why do ye do that which will bring reproach upon you from all wise and good men, whose opinion alone is to be regarded? And it is certain drinking is the way to bring it on you from all such. And to comfort thy self against that, by thinking thou art still applauded by the foolish and worst sort of men, is as if all the *mad men* in the world should agree to count themselves the only sober persons, and all others mad, which yet sure will never make

SUNDAY
VIII.

them the less mad, nor others the less sober. *Lastly*, consider the heauey doom Christ hath pronounc'd on those that are ashamed of him, and so are all those that for fear of reproach shall shrink from their obedience to him, *Mat. 8. 38. Whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of the Father with the holy Angels.* There is none but will at that day desire to be owned by Christ: but whoever will not here own him; that is, cleave fast to his commands, notwithstanding, all the scorns, nay, persecutions of the world, shall then certainly be cast off by him. And he that will adventure thus to maintain his credit among a companie of Fools and Madmen, deserves well to have it befall him: But after all this, it is not sure that even these will despise thee for thy sobrietie, it is possible they may seem to do so to fright thee out of it; but if their hearts were searched, it would be found they do even against their wills bear a *secret reverence* to sober persons, and none fall more often under their scorn and despising then those that *run with them to the same excess of riot*; for even he that flicks not to be drunk himself, will yet laugh at another that he sees so.

Pleasure of
the drink.

9. There is a *seventh* end, which though everie man thinks too base to own, yet it is too plain it prevails with many. And that is the bare pleasure of the *drink*; but to these

Part.8. Of Temperance in drinking. 185

I confess it will not be fit to say much, for SUNDAY
VIII.
he that is come to this lamentable degree of

fortitishness, is not like to receive benefit by any thing can be said: Yet let me tell even this man, that he of all others hath the most means of discerning his fault, for this being such a ground of drinking as no body will own, he is condemned of himself; yea, and all his fellow drunkards too, for their denying it, is a plain sign they acknowledge it a most abominable thing. And if *Eſau* were called a profane person, *Heb. 12.6.* for *selling but his birth-right for a mess of pottage*, and that too when he had the necessitie of hunger upon him, what name of reproach can be bad enough for him who sells his health, his reason, his God, his soul, for a *cup of drink*, and that when he is so far from needing it, that perhaps he hath already more then he can keep? I shall say no more to this sort of persons, but let me warn all those that go on in the sin on any of the former grounds, that a little time will bring them even to this which they profess to loath; it being dayly seen that those which first were drawn into the sin for the love of the company, at last continue in it for love of the drink.

10. I can think but of one end more, that is, that of *Bargaining*. Men say it is necessary for them to drink in this one respect of trading with their neighbours, bargains being most conveniently to be struck up at such meetings. But this is yet a worse end then

*Bargain-
ing.*

SUNDAY
VIII.

all the rest, for the bottome of it is an aim of cheating and defrauding others; we think when men are in drink we shall the better be able to over-reach them; and so this adds the sin of *consenage* and defrauding to that of drunkenness. Now that this is indeed the intent, is manifest, for if it were only the dispatch of *bargains* were aimed at, we should chuse to take men with their wits about them, therefore the taking them when drink hath distempered them can be for nothing but to make advantage of them. Yet this often proves a great folly as well as a sin; for he that drinks with another in hope to over-reach him, doth many times prove the weaker brain'd, and becomes drunk first, and then he gives the other that opportunity of cheating him which he designed for the cheating of the other. Now this end of drinking is so far from becoming an excuse, that it is a huge heightning of the sin; for if we may not drink intemperately upon any occasion, much less upon so wicked a one as is the *consenning* and *defrauding* of our bretheren.

Degrees of
this sin.

11. I suppose I have now shewed you the unreasonableness of those Motives, which are ordinarily brought in excuse of this sin. I am yet further to tell you, that it is not only that *huge* degree of drunkenness which makes men able neither to go nor speak, which is to be lookt on as a sin, but all *lower* degrees, which do at all work upon the understanding, whether by dulling it and making it less fit for
any

Part.8. Of Temperance in drinking. 187

SUNDAY
VIII.

any imployment, or by making it too light and airy, apt to apish and ridiculous mirth, or what is worse, by inflaming men into rage and furie. These, or whatever else make any change in the man, are to be reckoned into this sin of drunkenness: Nay, further, the drinking beyond the natural ends of drinking, that is, beyond moderate refreshment, is a sin, though by the strength of a mans brain it makes not the least change in him, and therefore those that are not actually drunk, yet can spend whole dayes, or any considerable part of them in drinking, are so far from being innocent, that that greater woe belongs to them, which is pronounced, *Isa. 5. 22.* against those that are *mighty to drink*. For though such a man may make a shift to preserve his wits, yet that wit serves him to verie little purpose when his imployment is still but the same with him that is the most sottishly drunk, that is, to pour down drink.

12. Nay, this man is guilty of the greater waste; *First*. of the good creatures of God: That *drink* which is by Gods providence intended for the refreshing and relieving of us, is abused and mispent when it is drunk beyond that measure which those ends require, and sure there is not the meanest of these creatures we enjoy, but the abuse of them shall one day be accounted for, and he that drinks longest hath the most of that *guilt*. But in the *second* place, this is a waste of that which is much more precious, our time, which is allowed

*The great
guilt of the
strong
drinkers.*

SUNDAY
VIII.

lowed us by God to *work out our Salvation* in, and must be strictly reckoned for, and therefore ought everie minute of it to be most thriftily husbanded to that end in actions of good life; but when it is thus laid out it tends to the direct contrarie, even the working out our damnation. Besides, he that thus drinks, though he escape being drunk himself, he is yet *guilty* of all the drunkenness that any of his company fall under, for he gives them encouragement to drink on by his *Example*, especially if he be one of any authoritie, but if he be one whose company the rest are fond of, his company is then a certain ensnaring of them, for then they will drink too, rather then lose him. There is yet a greater fault that many of these stronger brained drinkers are guiltie of, that is, the setting themselves *purposely* to make others drunk, playing, as it were, a prize at it, and counting it matter of triumph and victorie to see others *fall* before them: This is a most horrible wickedness, it is the making our selves the *Devils Factors*, endeavouring all we can to draw our poor brethren into eternal miserie, by betraying them to so grievous a sin; and therefore it may well be reckoned as the highest step of this vice of *drinking*, as having in it the sin of mischieving others added to the excess in our selves. And though it be lookt upon in the world as a matter onely of *jest* and *merriment* to make others drunk, that we may sport our selves with their ridiculous behaviour, yet that

Part.8. Of Temperance in drinking. 189

SUNDAY
VIII.

that mirth will have a sad conclusion, there being a woe expressly threatned by God to this verie sin, *Hab. 2. 15. Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that puttest thy bottle to him and makest him drunk that thou mayest look on their nakednesse:* And sure he buyes his idle pastime verie dear, that takes it with such a Woe attending it.

13. I have now gone through the several motives to, and degrees of this sin of drunkenness, wherein I have been the more particular because it is a sin so strangely reigning amongst us, no Condition, no Age, or scarce Sex free from it, to the great dishonour of God, reproach of Christianitie, and ruine not only of our own Souls hereafter, but even of all our present advantages and happiness in this life; there being no sin which betrays each single committer to more mischiefs in his understanding, his health, his credit, his estate, then this one doth. And we have reason to believe this sin is one of those common crying guilts which have long layen heave upon this Nation, and pulled down those many sad judgements we have groaned under.

The great mischiefs of this sin.

14. Therefore, *Christian* Reader, let me now intreat, nay conjure thee by all that tendernefs and love thou oughtest to have to the honour of God, the credit of thy Christian profession, eternal welfare of thine own Soul, the prosperitie of the Church and Nation,

Exhortation to forsake it.

SUNDAY
VIII.

tion, whereof thou art a member; Nay, by that love which certainly thou hast to thy own temporal welfare, to think sadly of what hath been spoken; And then judge, whether there be any pleasure in this sin, which can be any tolerable recompence for all those mischiefs, it brings with it; I am confident no man in his wits can think there is, and if there be not, then be ashamed to be any longer that fool, which shall make so wretched a bargain, but begin at this instant a firm and a faithful resolution, never once more to be guilty of this swinish sin, how often soever thou hast heretofore fallen into it, and in the fear of God betake thee to a strict *temperance*, which when thou hast done, thou wilt finde thou hast made not only a gainful but a pleasant exchange; for there is no man that hath tryed both courses but his own heart will tell him there is infinitely more pleasant comfort and pleasure in sobriety and temperance then ever all his drunken revellings afforded him.

The difficulties of
doing so
considered.

Seeming
necessity of
drink.

15. The main *difficulty* is the *first breaking* off the *custome*, and that arises partly from our selves, partly from others. That from *our selves* may be of two sorts; the *first* is, when by the habit of drinking, we have brought such *false thirsts* upon our selves, that our bodies seem to require it, and this wants nothing but a little patience to overcome. Do but *refrain* some few dayes and it will afterwards grow easie; for the hardness arising onely from *custome*, the breaking off *that* does

Part. 8. Of Temperance in drinking. 191

SUNDAY
VIII.

does the business. If thou say, it is verie uneasy to do so, consider, whether if thou hadst some *disease* which would certainly kill thee if thou didst not for some little time refrain immoderate drinking, thou wouldst not rather forbear then die? If thou wouldst not, thou art so brutish a sot, that it is in vain to perswade thee; but if thou hadst, then consider how unreasonable it is for thee not to do it in this case also; the habit of drinking may well pass for a mortal disease, it proves so verie often to the body, but will most certainly to the Soul; and therefore it is madness to stick at that uneasiness in the cure of this, which thou wouldst submit to in a less danger. Set therefore but a resolute purpose to endure that little trouble for a small time, and this first difficultie is conquered, for after thou hast a while refrained, it will be perfectly easie to do so still.

16. The *second* difficultie is that of *spending the time*, which those that have made drinking their trade and business, know scarce how to dispose of. But the verie naming of this difficultie directs to the cure; get thee some *business*, somewhat to imploy thy self in, which, as I have already shewed, will be easily found by all sorts of persons; but those meaner to whom I now write, can sure never want it readie at hand, they being generally such as are to be maintained by their labour, and therefore to them I need only give this advice, to be diligent in that business they have.

Want of
employment

SUNDAY to follow that close as they ought; and they
VIII. will have little occasion to seek out this way of
 spending their time.

*Perfwaſi-
 ons and re-
 proaches of
 men.*

17. There is another ſort of difficulty; which I told you ariſes from others, and that is either from their perſwaſions, or reproaches. It is very likely if thy *old companions* ſee thee begin to fall off, they will ſet hard to thee, to bring thee back to thy old courſe, they will urge to thee the *unkindneſs* of forſaking the company of thy friends, the *ſadneſs* of renouncing all that mirth and jollity, which *good fellows* (as they call them) enjoy, and if thou canſt not thus be won, they will affright thee with the reproach of the world, and ſo try if they can mock thee out of thy ſobriety.

*The means
 of reſiſting
 them.*

18. The way to overcome *this* difficulty is to foreſee it, therefore when thou firſt enter- eſt on thy courſe of temperance, thou art to make account thou ſhalt meet with theſe (per- haps many other) *temptations*, and that thou maiſt make a right judgement, whether they be worthy to prevail with thee, take them before hand and weigh them, conſider whether that *false kindneſs*, that is maintained among men by drinking, be worthy to be compared with that real and everlaſting kindneſs of God, which is loſt by it; Whether that *fooliſh, vain mirth* bear any weight with the preſent joyes of a good conſcience here, or with thoſe greater of Heaven hereafter. *Laſtly*, whether the unjuſt reproach of wicked men, the ſhame of the world be ſo terrible, as the juſt reproof

*Weigh the
 advanta-
 ges with
 the hurt.*

Part.8. of Temperance in Drinking. 193

SUNDAY
VIII.

reproof of thine own conscience at the present, and that eternal confusion of face that shall befall all those, that go on in this sin, at the last day; weigh all these, I say, I need not say, in the balance of the Sanctuarie, but even in the scales of common reason, and sure thou wilt be forced to pronounce, that the motives to temperance infinitely out-weigh those against it; when thou hast thus advisedly judged, then fix thy resolution accordingly, and whenever any of these temptations come to stagger thee, remember thou hast formerly weighed them, knowest the just value of them, and that they are a most unworthy price for those precious advantages thou must give in exchange for them. And therefore hold fast thy resolution, and with indignation reject all motions to the contrary.

19. But be sure thou thus *reject* them at their verie first tender, and do not yield in the least degree; For if once thou givest ground, thou art lost, the sin will by little and little prevail upon thee. Thus we see many, who have profest to be resolved upon great *temperance*, yet for want of this care, have adventured into the company of good fellows, when they have been there, they have at the first been over intreated to take a cup, after that another, till at last they have taken their rounds as freely as any of them, and in that *flood of drink* drowned all their sober resolutions. Therefore whoever thou art, that dost really desire to forsake the sin, take care

*Reject the
temptation
at the very
beginning.*

SUNDAY
VIII.

to avoid the *occasions* and beginnings of it; to which end it will be good openly to declare and own thy purposes of sobriety, that so thou mayest discourage men from assaulting thee. But if either thou art ashamed to own it, or seemest to be so, they will quickly make use of that shame to bring thee to break it.

*The security
of doing so.*

20. If thou be thus wary to keep thee from the first beginnings, thou art then sure never to be overtaken with this sin: For it is like the keeping the out-works of a *besieged City*, which so long as they are stoutly defended there is no danger, but if they be either surprized or yielded, the Citie cannot long hold out. The advice therefore of the wise man is very agreeable to this matter, *Eccles. 19. 1. He that despiseth small things shall perish by little and little.* But because as the *Psalmist* saith, *Psalms 127. 1. Except the Lord keep the City the watch-man waketh but in vain:* therefore to this guard of thy self adde thy most earnest prayers to God that he will also watch over thee, and by the strength of his grace enable thee to resist all temptations to this sin.

*The efficacy
of these
means, if
not hindered
by love of
the sin.*

21. If thou do in the *sincerity* of thy heart use *these means*, there is no doubt but thou wilt be able to overcome this vice, how long soever thou hast been accustomed to it, therefore if thou do still remain under the power of it, never excuse thy self by the impossibility of the task, but rather accuse the falseness of thy own heart, that hath still such a love

Part. 8. Of Temperance in drinking. 195

to this sin, that thou wilt not set roundly to the means of subduing it. SUNDAY
VIII.

22. Perhaps the great *commonness* of the sin and thy particular custome of it may have made it so much thy familiar, thy bosome acquaintance, that thou art loth to entertain *hard* thoughts of it, very unwilling thou art to think that it means thee any hurt, and therefore art apt to speak peace to thy self, to hope that either this is no sin, or at most but a frailtie, such as will not bar thee out of heaven: but deceive not thy self, for thou mayest as well say there is no *heaven*, as that *drunkenness* shall not keep thee *thence*; I am sure the same word of God which tells us there is such a place of happiness, tells us also that drunkards are of the number of *those that shall not inherit it*, 1 Cor. 6. 10. And again, Gal. 5. 21. Drunkenness is reckoned among *those works of the flesh*, which they that do shall not *inherit the Kingdome of God*. And indeed had not these plain texts, yet mere reason would tell us the same, that that is a place of infinite puritie, such as *flesh and blood*, till it be refined and purified, *is not capable of*, as the Apostle tells us, 1 Cor. 15. 53. and if as we are mere men, we are too gross and impure for it, we must sure be more so when we have changed our selves into Swine, the foulest of beasts, we are then prepared for the Devils to enter into, as they did into the *beard*, Mark 5. 13. and that not only some one or two, but a *Legion*, a troop and

That love makes men loth to believe it dangerous.

SUNDAY
VIII

and multitude of them. And of this we daily see *examples*, for where this sin of drunkenness hath taken possession, it usually comes as an harbinger to abundance of others; each act of drunkenness prepares a man not only for another of the same sin, but of others, lust and rage, and all brutish appetites are then let loose, and so a man brings himself under that curse which was the saddest *David* knew how to foretel to any, *Psalms* 69. 28. *The falling from one wickedness to another.* If all this be not enough to affright thee out of this drunken fit, thou must still wallow in thy vomit, continue in this sottish, senseless condition, till the flames of Hell rowse thee, and then thou wilt by sad experience find what now thou wilt not believe, *that the end of those things*, as the Apostle saith, *Rom. 6. 21. is death.* God in his infinite mercie timely awake the hearts of all that are in this sin, that by a timely forsaking it they may *fly from that wrath to come.* I have now done with this second part of *Temperance*, concerning *Drinking.*

PARTITION IX.

*Temperance in Sleep : the rule of it,
&c. Mischiefs of sloth, of Recre-
ations, Cautions to be observed in
them ; of Apparel, &c.*

§. I. **T**HE Third part of TEMPE-
RANCE concerns SLEEP: *Sleep.*

And *Temperance* in that also must be measured by the end for which *sleep* was ordained by God, which was only the refreshing and supporting of our frail bodies, which being of such a temper that continual labour and toil tires and wearies them out, *Sleep* comes as a Medicine to that weariness, as a repairer of that decay, that so we may be enabled to such labours as the duties of Religion or works of our Calling require of us. *Sleep* was intended to make us more profitable, not more idle ; as we give rest to our beasts ; not that we are pleased with their doing nothing, but that they may do us the better service.

2. By this therefore you may judge what is *The rule of temperate sleeping* ; to wit, that which tends to the refreshing and making us more lively and fit for action ; and to that end a moderate degree serves best. It will be impossible to set down just how many hours is that moderate

*Tempe-
rance
therein.*

SUNDAY
IX.

rate degree, because as in *eating* so in *sleep*, some constitutions require more then others, Every mans own experience must in this judge for him, but then let him judge uprightly and not consult with his sloth in the case, for that will still, with *Solomons sluggard*, cry, *A little more sleep a little more slumber, a little more folding of the hands to sleep*, Prov. 24. 33. But take only so much as he really findes to tend to the end forementioned.

The many
Sins that
follow the
transgression
of it.

3. He that doth not thus limit himself falls into several sins under this general one of sloth, as *first*, he wastes his time, that precious talent which was committed to him by God to improve, which he that *sleeps* away, doth like him in the Gospel, *Matth. 25. 18. Hides it in the earth*, when he should be trading with it; and you know what was the doom of that *unprofitable servant*, verse 30. *Cast ye him into outer darkness*: he that gives himself to darkness of *sleep* here, shall there have darkness without *sleep*, but with *weeping and gnashing of teeth*. *Secondly*, he injures his body, immoderate *sleep* fills that full of diseases, makes it a very sink of humours, as dayly experience shews us. *Thirdly*, he injures his Soul also, and that not only in robbing it of the service of the body, but in dulling its proper faculties, making them useless and unfit for those employments to which God hath designed them; of all which ill husbandry the poor Soul must one day give account. Nay, *lastly*, he affronts and despises God himself in it, by crossing the very end of his
creati-

creation, which was to serve God in an active obedience; but he that *sleeps* away his life, directly thwarts and contradicts that, and when God saith, *Man is born to labour*, his practice saith the direct contrarie, that man was *born to rest*. Take heed therefore of giving thy self to immoderate *sleep*, which is the committing of so many sins in one.

4. But besides the sin of it, it is also verie hurtful in other respects, it is the sure bane of thy outward estate, wherein the sluggish person shall never thrive; according to that observation of the Wise man, *Prov. 23. 21. Drowsiness shall cover a man with rags*; that is, the slothful man shall want convenient clothing; nay, indeed it can scarce be said, that the sluggard lives: *Sleep* you know is a kind of death, and he that gives himself up to it, what doth he but die before his time? Therefore if untimely death be to be lookt upon as a curse, it must needs be a strange folly to chuse that from our own sloth which we dread so much from Gods hand.

Other mischiefs of sloth.

5. The fourth part of *Temperance* concerns *Recreations*, which are sometimes necessarie both to the bodie and the minde of a man, neither of them being able to endure a constant toil without somewhat of refreshment between; and therefore there is a verie lawful use of them; but to make it so, it will be necessary to observe these *Cautions*.

Temperance in Recreation.

6. *First*, We must take care that the kinde of them be lawful, that they be such as have nothing

Cautions to be observed in them.

SUNDAY

IX.

thing of sin in them ; we must not to *recreate* our selves do any thing which is dishonourable to God, or injurious to our neighbour, as they do who make profane or filthy backbiting discourse their *recreation*. *Secondly*, we must take care that we use it with moderation : and to do so, we must *first* be sure not to spend too *much time* upon it, but remember that the end of *recreation* is to fit us for business, not to be it self a business to us. *Secondly*, we must not be too vehement and *earnest* in it, not set our hearts too much upon it, for that will both ensnare us to the using too much of it, and it will divert and take off our mindes from our more necessary imployments : Like School-boys, who after a play-time, know not how to set themselves to their books again. *Lastly*, we must not set up to our selves any *other* end of *recreations* but that lawful one, of giving us moderate refreshment.

Undue end
of Sports.

7. As *first*, we are not to use *sports* only to pass away our time, which we ought to study how to redeem, not fling away ; and when it is remembred how great a work we have here to do, the *making our calling and election sure*, the securing our title to Heaven hereafter, and how uncertain we are what time shall be allowed us for that purpose ; it will appear our time is that which of all other things we ought most induttriously to improve. And therefore sure we have little need to contrive wayes of driving that away which flies so fast of it self, and is so impossible to recover. Let them that
can

Part. 5. Of Temperance in Recreation, 201

SUNDAY
IX.

can spend whole dayes and nights at Cards and Dice, and idle pastimes, consider this, and withal, whether they ever bestowed a quarter of that time towards that great business of their lives for which all their time was given them, and then think what a woful reckoning they are like to make when they come at last to account for that precious treasure of their time. Secondly, we must not let our covetousness have any thing to do in our recreations; if we play at any Game, let the end of our doing it be meerly to recreate our selves, not to win money; and to that purpose be sure never to play for any considerable matter, for if thou do, thou wilt bring thy self into two dangers, the one of covetousness, and a greedie desire of winning, the other of rage and anger at thy ill fortune, if thou happen to lose; both which will be apt to draw thee into other sins besides themselves: Covetousness will tempt thee to cheat and couzen in gaming, and anger to swearing and cursing, as common experience shews us too often. If thou finde thy self apt to fall into either of these in thy gaming, thou must either take some course to secure thy self against them, or thou must not permit thy self to play at all: for though moderate play be in it self not unlawful, yet if it be the occasion of sin, it is so to thee, and therefore must not be ventured on. For if Christ commands us so strictly to avoid temptations, that if our verie eyes or hands offend us (that is, prove

SUNDAY
IX.

snared to us) we must rather part with them then to be drawn to sin by them: how much rather must we part with any of these unnecessary sports, then run the hazard of offending God by them? He that so playes, layes his soul to stake, which is too great a prize to be played away. Besides, he loses all the *recreation* and sport he pretends to aim at, and instead of that sets himself to a greater toil then any of those labours are he was to ease by it. For sure the desires and fears of the covetous, the impatience and rage of the angry man are more real pains then any the most laborious work can be.

Temperance
in apparel.

8. The last part of *Temperance* is that of APPAREL, which we are again to measure by the agreeableness to the ends for which clothing should be used. Those are especially these three: *first*, the hiding of nakedness. This was the first occasion of *apparel*, as you may read, *Gen.* 3.21. and was the effect of the first sin; and therefore when we remember the original of clothes, we have so little reason to be proud of them, that on the contrary we have cause to be humbled and ashamed, as having lost that innocence which was a much greater ornament then any the most glorious *apparel* can be. From this end of clothing we are likewise engaged to have our *apparel* modest, such as may answer this end of covering our shame: And therefore all immodest fashions of *apparel*, which may either argue the wantonness of the wearer, or provoke that of the beholder, are to be avoided.

Apparel designed for covering of shame.

9. A *second* end of *Apparel*, is the *fencing* the bodie from cold, thereby to preserve the health thereof, and this end we must likewise observe in our clothing; we must wear such kinde of habits, as may keep us in that convenient warmth, which is necessarie to our healths. And this is transgressed, when out of the vanitie of being in everie phantaltick fashion, we put our selves in such clothing, as either will not defend us from cold, or is some other way so uncase, that it is rather a hurt then a benefit to our bodies to be so clad. This is a most ridiculous folly, and yet that which people that take a pride in their clothes are usually guiltie of.

SUNDAY

IX.

Fencing
from cold.

10. A *third* end of *Apparel* is the *distin-* *Distinction*
guishing or *differencing* of persons, and that *of persons.*
first in respect of *Sex*; *Secondly*, in respect of qualities. *First*, clothes are to make difference of *Sex*; this hath been observed by all Nations, the habits of men and women have alwayes been divers. And God himself expressly provided for it among the *Jews*, by commanding that the man should not wear the *apparel* of the woman, nor the woman of the man. But then *secondly*, there is also a distinction of qualities to be observed in *apparel*; God hath placed some in a higher condition then others, and in proportion to their condition, it befits their clothing to be; *Gorgeous apparel*, our Saviour tells us, *is for Kings Courts*, *Luke 7. 25*. Now this end of *apparel* should also be observed. Men and women

SUNDAY women should content themselves with that
IX. sort of cloathing, which agrees to their *Sex* and condition, not striving to *exceed*, and equal that of a higher ranck, nor yet making it matter of envy, among those of their own estate, vying who shall be finest, but let every man cloth himself in such sober attire, as *befits* his place and *calling*, and not think himself disparaged, if another of his neighbours have better then he.

11. And let all remember that *clothes* are things, which adde no true worth to any, and therefore it is an intolerable vanity to spend any considerable part either of their thoughts, time or wealth upon them, or to value themselves ever the more for them, or despise their poor bretheren that want them. But if they desire to adorn themselves, let it be as *S. Peter* adviseth the women of his time, *1 Pet. 3.4.* *In the hidden man of the heart, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit.* Let them cloth themselves as richly as is possible with all Christian vertues, and that is the raiment that will set them out lovely in Gods eyes, yea, and in mens too, who, unless they be fools and Idiots will more value thee for being good, then fine, and sure one plain Coat thou puttst upon a poor mans back will better become thee, then twenty rich ones thou shalt put upon thine own.

*Too much
 sparing a
 fault as
 well as ex-
 cess.*

12. I have now gone through the several parts of *temperance*; I shall now in conclusion, adde this general caution, that though
 in

in all these particulars I have taken notice only of the one fault of excess, yet it is possible there may be one on the other hand; men may deny their bodies that which they necessarily require to their support, and well being. This is, I believe, a fault not so common, as the other, yet we sometimes see some *very niggardly persons*, that are guilty of it, that cannot find in their hearts to borrow so much from their chests, as may feed their bellies, or cloth their backs, and that are so intent upon the world, so moiling, and drudging in it, that they cannot afford themselves that competent time of sleep, or recreation, that is necessary. If any that hath read the former part of this Discourse be of this temper, let him not comfort himself, that he is not guilty of those excesses there complained of, and therefore conclude himself a good Christian, because he is not intemperate; for whoever is *this covetous creature*, his abtaining shall not be counted to him as the vertue of temperance, for it is not the love of temperance, but wealth, that makes him refrain; And that is so far from being praise-worthy; that it is that great sin which the Apostle tells us, 1 Tim. 6. 10. *is the root of all evil*; such a mans *body* will one day rise in judgement against him, for defrauding it of its due portion, those moderate refreshments, and comforts which God hath allowed it. This is an *Idolatry* beyond that of offering the *children to Moloch*, Lev. 20. 3. they offered but
their

SUNDAY *their children, but this covetous wretch sacrifices himself to his god Mammon, whilest he often destroys his health, his life, yea, finally his Soul too, to save his purse. I have now done with the second head of dutie, that to our selves, contained by the Apostle under the word soberly.*

PARTITION X.

Of DUTIES to our NEIGHBOURS. Of Justice, Negative, Positive. of the sin of Murther, of the Heinousness of it, the Punishments of it, and the strange Discoveries thereof. Of Maiming, &c.

**DUTY to
OUR
NEIGH-
BOUR.**

S. 1. I Come now to the *third* part of Duties, those to our Neighbour, which is by the Apostle summed up in gross in the word [*righteousness*], by which is meant not only bare justice, but all kind of charity also, for that is now by the law of Christ become a debt to our neighbour, and it is a piece of unrighteousness to defraud him of it. I shall therefore build all the particular duties we owe to our neighbor, on those two general ones, *Justice* and *Charity*.

JUSTICE

2. I begin with JUSTICE, whereof there are two parts, the one *Negative*, the other *Positive*

Part. 10. Of Justice to our Neighbor. 207

ive: the *negative justice* is to do no wrong, SUNDAY
or injury to any. The *positive justice* is to do X.

right to all; that is, to yield them whatsoever appertains or is due unto them. I shall first speak of the *negative justice*, the not injuring or wronging any. Now because a man is capable of receiving wrong in several respects; this *first* part of *justice* extends it self into several branches, answerable to those capacities of injurie. A man may be injured either in his *Soul*, his *body*, his *possessions*, or *credit*; and therefore this *dutie* of *negative justice* lays a restraint on us in everie of these. That we do no wrong to any man in respect either of his *Soul*, his *body*, his *possessions*, or *credit*.

3. *First*, this JUSTICE tyes us to do no To the Soul
hurt to his *Soul*; and here my first work must be to examine what harm it is that the *soul* can receive; it is we know an invisible substance which we cannot reach with our eye, much less with our swords and weapons, yet for all that it is capable of being hurt and wounded; and that even to death.

4. Now the *Soul* may be considered either In the natural sense.
in a *natural* or *spiritual* sense; in the *natural* it signifies that which we usually call the mind of a man, and this we all know may be wounded with grief or sadness, as *Solomon* saith, *Prov. 15. 13. By sorrow of heart the spirit is broken.* Therefore whoever do causlessly afflict or grieve his neighbour; he transgresses this part of justice, and hurts, and wrongs his soul.

This

SUNDAY

X.

This sort of injurie *malicious* and *spiteful* men are verie often guiltie of, they will do things, by which themselves reap no good, nay, often much harm, onely that they may vex and grieve another; this is a most savage, inhumane humour, thus to take pleasure in the sadness and afflictions of others; and whoever harbours it in his heart, may truly be said to be posselt with a Devil, for it is the nature only of those accursed spirits to delight in the miseries of men; and till that be cast out, they are fit only to dwell as the posselt person did, *Mark 5. 2. Among graves and tombs,* where there are none capable of receiving affliction by them.

In the spiritual.

5. But the *Soul* may be considered also in the *spirital sense*, and so it signifies that immortal part of us which must live eternally, either in blis or woe in another world. And the *Soul* thus understood is capable of two sorts of harm: *First*, that of sin; *Secondly*, that of Punishment; the latter whereof is certainly the consequent of the former; and therefore though God be the inflicter of punishment, yet since it is but the effect of sin, we may justly reckon, that he that draws a man to sin, is likewise the betrayer of him to punishment, as he that gives a man a mortal wound, is the cause of his death; therefore under the evil of sin both are contained, so that I need speak only of that.

Drawing to sin the greatest injury.

6. And sure there cannot be a higher sort of wrong, then the bringing this great evil up-

upon the *Soul*; *sin* is the *disease* and wound of the *Soul*, as being the direct contrarie to *Grace*; which is the *health* and soundness of it: Now this wound we give to everie soul whom we do by any means whatsoever draw into sin.

7. The wayes of doing that are divers, I shall mention some of them, whereof though some are more direct then others, yet all tend to the same end. Of the more direct ones there is, *first*, the *commanding* of sin, that is, when a person that hath power over another shall require him to do something which is unlawful; an example of this we have in *Nebuchadnezzars* commanding the worship of the *golden Image*, *Dan. 3. 4.* and his copie is imitated by any parent or master who shall require of his childe or servant to do any unlawful act. *Secondly*, there is *counselling* of sin, when men advise and perswade others to any wickedness: Thus *Jobs* wife counselled her husband to curse God, *Job 2. 7.* And *Achitophel* advised *Absolom* to go into his *Fathers concubines*, *2 Sam. 16. 21.* *Thirdly*, there is *enticing* and alluring to sin, by setting before men the pleasures or profits they shall reap by it. Of this sort of enticement *Solomon* gives warning, *Prov. 1. 10.* *My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not; if they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for blood, let us lurk privily for the innocent without a cause, &c.* and *verse* the 13. you may see what is the bait, by which they seek to allure them:

Direct
means of it.

we.

SUNDAY *We shall find all precious substance, we shall fill our houses with spoil, cast in thy lot among us, let us all have one purse. Fourthly, there is assistance in sin; that is, when men aid and help others either in contriving or acting a sin. Thus Jonadab helpt Amnon in plotting the Ravishing of his sister, 2 Sam. 13. all these are direct means of bringing this great evil of sin upon our bretheren.*

Indirect.

8. There are also others, which though they seem more *indirect*, may yet be as effectual towards that ill end: As *first*, example in sin; he that sets others an ill pattern does his part to make them imitate it, and too often it hath that effect; there being generally nothing more forcible to bring men into any sinful practice, then the seeing it used by others, as might be instanced in many sins, to which there is no other temptation, but their being in fashion. *Secondly*, there is incouragement in sin, when either by approving, or else at least by not shewing a dislike, we give others confidence to go on in their wickedness. A *third* means is by justifying and defending any sinful act of anothers, for by that we do not only confirm him in his evil, but endanger the drawing others to the like, who may be the more inclinable to it, when they shall hear it so pleaded for. *Lastly*, the bringing up any reproach upon strict and Christian living, as those do who have the wayes of God in derision; this is a means to affright men from the practice of duty, when they

they see it will bring them to be scorned and despised; this is worse then all the former, not only in respect of the man who is guilty of it (as it is an evidence of the great profaneness of his own heart) but also in regard of others, it having a more general ill effect then any of the former can have, it being the betraying men not only to some *single* acts of disobedience to Christ, but even to the calling off all subjection to him: by all these means we may draw on our selves this great guilt of injuring and wounding the *souls* of our brethren.

9. It would be too long for me to instance in all the several sins, in which it is usual for men to ensnare others; as *drunkenness, uncleanness, rebellion*, and a multitude more. But it will concern everie man for his own particular, to *consider* sadly what mischiefs of this kinde he hath done to any, by all, or any of these means, and to weigh well the greatness of the injurie. Men are apt to boast of their innocencie towards their neighbours, that they have done wrong to no man; but God knowes many that thus brag, are of all others the most injurious persons: perhaps they have not maimed his body, nor stoln his goods: but alas! The body is but the case and cover of the man, and the goods some appurtenances to that, 'tis the soul is the man, and that they can wound and pierce without remorse, and yet with the adulterers, *Prov. 30. 20.* say, *They have done no wickedness*; but glory of

*Men sadly
to consider
whom they
have thus
injured.*

SUNDAY their friendly behaviour to those whom they
X. thus betray to eternal ruine; for whomsoever
 thou hast drawn to any sin, thou hast done thy
 part to ascertain to those endless flames. And
 then think with thy self how base a treachery
 this is, thou wouldest call him a treacherous
 villain, that should while he pretends to em-
 brace a man, secretly stab him; but this of
 thine is as far beyond that, as the soul is of
 more value then the body; and hell worse then
 death. And remember yet farther, that be-
 sides the cruelty of it to thy poor brother, it
 is also most dangerous to thy self, it being that
 against which Christ hath pronounced a *wor*,
Matth. 18. 7. and ver. 6. he tells us that who-
 ever shall offend (that is, draw into sin) *any of*
those little ones, it were better for him that a
milstone were hanged about his neck, and that
he were drowned in the depth of the Sea. Thou
 maist plunge thy poor brother into perdition,
 but as it is with wrestlers, he that gives ano-
 ther a fall, commonly falls with him; so thou
 art like to bear him company to that place of
 torment.

*Heartily to
 bewail it.*

10. Let therefore thy own and his danger be-
 get in thee a sence of the greatness of this sin,
 this horrid piece of injustice to the precious
 soul of thy neighbour. Bethink thy self seriously
 to whom thou hast bin thus cruel; whom thou
 hast enticed to *drinking*, advised to *rebellion*,
 allured to *lust*, stirred up to *rage*, whom thou
 hast assisted or encouraged in any ill course, or
 discouraged, and disheartned by thy profane
 scot-

Part. 10. Of Justice to our Neighbor. 213

SUNDAY
X.

scourgings at pietie in general, or at any conscionable strict walking or his in particular; and then draw up a bill of indictment, accuse and condemn thy self, as a *Cain*, a murderer of thy brother, heartily and deeply bewail all thy guilts of this kinde, and resolve never once more to be a stumbling block, as *St. Paul* calls it, *Rom. 14.* in thy brothers way.

11. But this is not all, there must be some *Endeavour* fruits of this repentance brought forth; now *to repair it.* in all sins of injustice, *restitution* is a necessarie fruit of repentance, and so it is here, thou hast committed an act (perhaps many) of high injustice to the soul of thy brother; thou hast robbed it of its innocencie, of its title to heaven, thou must now endeavour to restore all this to it again, by being more earnest and industrious to win him to repentance, then ever thou wert to draw him to sin, use now as much art to convince him of the danger, as ever thou didst to flatter him with the pleasures of his vice, in a word, counterminethy self by using all those methods, and means to recover him, that thou didst to destroy him, and be more diligent and zealous in it, for 'tis necessary thou shouldst both in regard of him and thy self: *First*, in respect of him, because there is in mans nature so much a greater promptness and readiness to evil, then to good, that there will need much more pains and diligence to instill the one into him, then the other: besides, the man is supposed to be already accustomed to the contrary, which will add much

SUNDAY

X.

to the difficulty of the work. Then in respect of thy self; if thou be a true penitent, thou wilt think thy self obliged, as *S. Paul* did, *to labour more abundantly*, and wilt be ashamed, that when thou art trading for God, bringing back a soul to him, thou shouldest not pursue it with more earnestness, than while thou art an agent of *Satans*; besides the remembrance, that thou art a means of bringing this poor soul into this snare, must necessarily quicken thy diligence to get him out of it: So much for the first part of negative justice, in respect of the souls of our bretheren.

Negative
justice to
the body.

In respect
of the life.

12. The *second* concerns the bodies, and to those also this justice bindes thee to do no wrong nor violence. Now of wrongs to the body there may be several degrees, the highest of them is killing, taking away the life; this is forbid in the very letter of the *sixth Commandment*. *Thou shalt do no murder.*

Several
ways of
being guilty
of murder.

13. *Murder* may be committed either by open violence; when a man either by sword, or any other instrument takes away anothers life, immediately, and directly, or it may be done secretly and treacherously as *David* murdered *Uriah*, not with his own sword but with the sword of the *Children of Ammon*. *2 Sam. 11. 17*, And *Jezebel* *Naboth* by a false accusation, *1 Kings 21. 13*. And so divers have committed this sin of murder by *poysen*, *false-witness*, or some such concealed ways.

The

Part. 10. *Several wayes of Murder.* 215

SUNDAY
X.

The *former* is commonly the effect of a sudden rage, the *latter* hath several originals; sometimes it proceeds from some old malice fixt in the heart towards the person; sometimes from some covetous or ambitious desires; such a one stands in a mans way to his profit or preferment, and therefore he must be removed; and sometimes again it is to cover shame, as in the case of Strumpets, that murder their Infants that they may not betray their filthiness. But besides these more direct wayes of killing, there is another, and that is, when by our perswasions and *enticements* we draw a man to do that which tends to the shortning of his life, and is apparent to do so; he that makes his neighbour drunk, if by that drunkenness the man come to any mortal hurt which he would have escaped if he had been sober, he that made him drunk is not clear of his death; or if he die not by any such sudden accident, yet if drinking cast him into a disease, and that disease kill him, I know not how he that *drew* him to that excess can acquit himself of his *murder* in the eyes of God, though humane Laws touch him not. I wish, those who make it their business to draw in customers to that *trade of debauchery* would consider it. There is yet another way of bringing this guilt upon our selves, and that is by inciting and stirring up others to it, or to that degree of anger and revenge which produces it; as he that sets *two* persons at *variance*, or seeing them already so, blows the

SUNDAY coals, if *murder* ensue, he certainly hath
 X. this share in the guilt, which is a consideration
 that ought to affright all from having any
 thing to do in the kindling, or encreasing of
 contention.

The hain-
 ousness of
 the sin.

14. Now for the *hainousness* of this sin of
murder, I suppose none can be ignorant, that
 it is of the deepest dye, a most *loud crying sin*;
 This we may see in the first act of this kinde,
 that ever was committed, *Abels blood cryed*
from the earth as God tells *Cain*, *Gen. 4. 10.*
 Yea, the guilt of this sin is such, that it
 leaves a stain even upon the land where it is
 committed, such as is not to be washt out,
 but by the blood of the *murderer*, as appears
Deut. 19. 12, 13. The land cannot be purged
 of blood, but by the blood of him that shed
 it; and therefore though in other cases the
 flying to the *Altar* secured a man, yet in this
 of wilful *murder* no such refuge was allowed,
 but such a one was to be taken even thence,
 and delivered up to justice, *Exodus 21. 14.*
Thou shalt take him from my Altar, that he
may die. And it is yet farther observable,
 that the only two precepts which the Scrip-
 ture mentions, as given to *Noah* after the
 flood, were both in relation to this sin, that
 of not eating blood, *Gen. 9. 4.* being a ceremo-
 ny to beget in men a greater horreur of this
 sin of *murder*, and so intended for the pre-
 venting of it. The other was for the punish-
 ment of it, *Gen. 9. 6.* *He that sheddeth mans*
blood by man shall his blood be shed; and the
 reason

Part. 10. Several wayes of Murder. 217

reason of this strictness is added in the next SUNDAY
words, *For in the Image of God made he man;* X.

where you see that this sin is not only an injury to our brother, but even the highest contempt and despight towards God himself, for it is the defacing of his Image, which he hath stamped upon man. Nay yet further, it is the usurping of Gods proper right, and authoritie. For it is God alone, that hath right to dispose of the life of man; 'twas he alone that gave it, and it is he alone that hath power to take it away; but he that *murders* a man does, as it were, wrest this power out of Gods hand, which is the highest pitch of rebellious presumption.

15. And as the sin is great, so likewise is the *The great punishment*; we see it frequently verie great, *punishment*, and remarkable, even in this world, (besides *it is attending it.* those most fearful effects of it in the next) blood not only cries, but it cries for vengeance, and the great God of recompences as he files himself, will not fail to hear it: verie many examples the Scripture gives us of this: *Ahab* and *Jezabel*, that murdered innocent *Naboth*, for greediness of his vineyard, were themselves slain, and the Dogs licked their blood in the place, where they had shed his, as you may read in that Storie; so *Abfalom*, that slew his brother *Amnon*, after he had committed that sin, fell into another, that of rebellion against his King and Father, and in it miserably perished. *Ruchab* and *Baanah*, that slew *Isboseth*, were them-

SUNDAY selves put to death, and that by the very person
X. they thought to endear by it; many more instances might be given of this out of the Sacred Story, and many also out of Humane, there having been no age but hath yielded multitudes of examples of this kinde, so that every man may furnish himself out of the observations of his own time.

*The strange
discoveries
of it.*

16. And it is worth our notice, what *strange* and even *miraculous* means it hath often pleased God to use for the discovery of this sin; the very bruit creatures have often been made instruments of it; nay, often the extream horror of a mans own conscience hath made him betray himself, so that it is not any closeness a man uses in the acting of this sin, that can secure him from the vengeance of it, for he can never shut out his own conscience, that will in spite of him be privie to the fact, and that very often proves the means of discovering it to the world, or if it should not do that, yet it will sure avenge revenge on him, it will be such a Hell within him as will be worse then death: This we have seen in many, who after the commission of this sin have never been able to enjoy a minutes rest, but have had that intolerable anguish of minde that they have chosen to be their own *murderers* rather then live in it. These are the usual effects of this sin even in this world, but those in another are yet more dreadful, where surely the highest degrees of torment belong to this high pitch of wickedness,

Part. 10. Several wayes of Murder. 219

ness, for if as our Saviour tells us, *Mat. 5. 22.* **SUNDAY**
Hell fire be the portion of him that shall but **X.**
call his brother fool, what degree of those
burnings can we think proportionable, to this
so much greater an injury?

17. The consideration of all this ought to
possess us with the greatest horreur, and abo-
mination of this sin, and to make us extream-
ly watchful of our selves, that we never fall
into it, and to that end to prevent all those
occasions which may insensibly draw us into
this pit. I mentioned at first several things
which are wont to be *originals* of it, and at
those we must begin, if we will surely guard
our selves. If therefore thou wilt be sure ne-
ver to kill a man in thy rage, be sure never to
be in that rage, for if thou permittest thy self
to that, thou canst have no securitie against
the other, anger being a madness that suffers
us not to consider, or know what we do, when
it has once possesst us. Therefore when thou
findest thy self begin to be *inflamed*, think be-
times, whether this *may lead* thee, if thou
ledest loose to it, and immediately put the
bridle upon this head-strong passion; so again,
if thou wilt be sure thy malice shall not draw
thee to it, be sure never to harbour one mali-
cious thought in thy heart, for if it once settle
there it will gather such strength, that within
a while thou wilt be perfectly under the po-
wer of it, so that it may lead thee even to this
horrible sin at its pleasure; be therefore care-
ful at the very first approach of this treache-

*We must
Watch dili-
gently a-
gainst all
approaches
of this sin.*

rous

SUNDAY
X.

rous guest, to shut the doors against it, never to let it enter thy minde; so also if thou wilt be sure thy covetousness, thy ambition, thy lust, or any other sinful desire shall not betray thee to it, be sure thou never permit any of them to bear any sway with thee, for if they get the dominion, as they will soon do, if they be once entertained in the heart, they will be past thy controul, and hurry thee to this or any other sin, that may serve their ends. In like manner if thou wouldst not be guilty of any of the mortal effects of thy neighbours drunkenness, be sure not to entice him to it nor accompany him at it, and to that purpose do not allow thy self in the same practice, for if thou do, thou wilt be labouring to get company at it. *Lastly*, if thou wilt not be guilty of the *murder* committed by another, take heed thou never give any encouragement to it, or contribute any thing to that hatred, or contention, that may be the cause of it. For when thou hast either *kindled* or blowed the *fire*, what knowest thou whom it may consume? Bring alwayes as much water as thou canst to quench, but never bring one drop of oile to encrease the flame. The like may be said of all other occasions of this sin not here mentioned; and this careful preserving our selves from these, is the only sure way to keep us from this sin; therefore as ever thou wouldst keep thy self innocent from the great offence, guard thee warily from all such inlets, those steps and approaches towards it.

Part. 10. Several wayes of Murder. 221

18. But although *murder* be the greatest, yet it is not the only *injury* that may be done to the body of our neighbour, there are others which are also of a very high nature, the next in degree to this is *Maiming* him, depriving him of any member, or at least of the use of it, and this is a very great wrong and mischief to him, as we may discern by the Judgement of God himself, in the case of the *bond-servant*, who should by his *Masters* means lose a member, Exod. 21. 26. the freedom of his whole life was thought but a reasonable recompence for it, *He shall let him go free*, saith the text, *for his eye*; nay though it were a less considerable part, if it were but a tooth, which of all other may be lost with the least damage, yet the same amends was to be made him, ver. 27.

19. But we need no other way of measuring this injury, then the judgement of every man in his own case; how much does every man dread the loss of a limb, so that if he be by any accident or disease, in danger of it, he thinks no pains or cost too much to preserve it. And then how great an injustice, how contrary to that great rule of *doing as we would be done to*, is it, for a man to do that to another, which he so unwillingly suffers himself?

But if the person be *poor*, one that must labour for his living, the injury is yet greater, it is such as may in effect amount to the former sin of *murder*, for as the wise man sayes,

SUNDAY
X.
*Maiming a
great injury.*

*That which
every man
dreads for
himself.*

*Yet worse
if the man
be poor.*

Eccles.

SUNDAY *Ecelns. 24. 21. The poor mans bread is his life,*
X. and he that deprives them thereof is a blood-
shedder. And therefore he that deprives him
of the means of getting his bread by disabling
him from labour, is surely no less guiltie. In
the Law it was permitted to everie man that
had sustained such a damage by his neighbour
to require the Magistrate to inflict the like on
him, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, as it is, Exod.
21. 24.

Necessity of
making
what satis-
faction we
can.

20. And though unprofitable revenge be not now allowed to us Christians, yet sure it is the part of everie one who hath done this injurie, to make what *satisfaction* lies in his power; 'tis true, he cannot restore a limb again (which by the way should make men warie how they do those mischiefs which it is so impossible for them to repair) but yet he may satisfie for some of the ill effects of that loss: If that have brought the man to want and penurie, he may, nay, he must, if he have but the least abilitie, relieve and support him, yea, though it be by his own extraordinarie labour: for if it be a duty of us all to be eyes to the blinde and feet to the lame, as *Job* speaks, much more must we be so to them whom our selves have made blinde and lame. Therefore whoever has done this injurie to any of his poor brethren, let him know, he is bound to do all that is possible towards the repairing of it, if he do not, every new suffering that the poor mans wants bring upon him, becomes a new charge and accusation
 against

Part.10. Several wayes of Murder. 223

against him, at the tribunal of the just **SUNDAY**
judge. **X.**

21. There are yet other degrees of injury *Wounds*
 to the body of our neighbour, I shall men- *and stripes*
 tion onely two more, *Wounds*, and *stripes*; *injuries*
 A man may *Wound* another, which though it *also.*
 finally cause loss neither of life nor limb, is
 yet an endangering of both; and the like
 may be said of *stripes*; both of which how-
 ever are very painful at the present, nay per-
 haps verie long after, and pain of all tempo-
 ral evils, is to be accounted the greatest, for it
 is not only an evil in it self, but it is such an
 one, that permits us not, whilst we are un-
 der it, to enjoy any other good; a man in
 pain having no taste of any the greatest de-
 lights: If any man despise these, as light
 injuries, let him again ask himself, how he
 would like it, to have his own body flasht or
 bruised, and put to pass under those painful
 means of cure, which are many times necessa-
 rie in such cases? I presume there is no man
 would willingly undergoe this from another,
 and why then shouldest thou offer it to him?

22. The truth is, this strange *cruelty* to *This cruelty*
 others is the effect of a *great pride*, and *haugh-*
tness of heart, we look upon others with such *to others*
 contempt, that we think it no matter how *the effect of*
 they are used; we think they must bear *pride.*
blows from us, when in the mean time we are
 so tender of our selves, that we cannot hear
 the least *word* of disparagement, but we are
 all on a flame. The provocations to these
 inju-

SUNDAY

X.

injuries are commonly so slight, that did not this *inward pride* dispose us to such an anger of humour, that we take fire at every thing, it were impossible we should be moved by them. Nay some are advanced to such a *wantonness of cruelty*, that without any provocation at all in cool blood, as they say, they can thus wrong their poor bretheren, and make it part of their past-time and recreation to cause pain to others. Thus some *tyrannous humours* take such a pleasure in tormenting those under their power, that they are glad when they can but finde a pretence to punish them, and then do it without all moderation, and others will set men together by the ears, only that they may have the sport of seeing the scuffle; like the *old Romans*, that made it one of their publick *sports* to see men *kill one another*, and sure we have as little Christianity as they, if we can take delight in such spectacles.

23. This *savageness and cruelty of minde* is so unbecoming the nature of a man, that he is not allowed to use it even to his beast; how intolerable is it then towards those, that are of the same nature, and which is more, are heirs of the same eternal hopes with us? They that shall thus transgress against their neighbours in any of the foregoing particulars, or what ever else is hurtful to the body, are unjust persons, want even this lowest sort of justice, the negative, to their neighbours, in respect of their bodies,

24. Nei-

Part. 10. *Several wayes of Murder.* 225

24. Neither can any man excuse himself by saying what he has done was onely in *return* of some *injury* offered him by the other, for suppose it be so, that he have indeed received some considerable wrong, yet cannot he be his own revenger without injurie to that man, who is not, by being thine enemy, become thy vassal, or slave, to do with him what thou list; thou hast never the more right of *dominion* over him, because he hath done thee wrong, and therefore thou art not only uncharitable (which yet were sin enough to damn thee) but *unjust* in everie act of violence thou doest to him. Nay, this injustice ascends higher, even to God himself, who hath reserved vengeance as his own peculiar right, *Vengeance* *umine, I will repay, saith the Lord,* Rom. 12. 19. and then he that will act revenge for himself, what does he, but incroach upon this special right and prerogative of God, snatch the sword, as it were, out of his hand, as if he knew better how to wield it! which is at once a robbery, and contempt of the *Divine Majesty*.

SUNDAY
X.

PARTITION XI.

Of Justice, about the Possessions of our Neighbour, against Injuring him, as concerning his Wife, his Goods. Of Oppression, Theft. of paying of Debts, &c.

His Posses. §. I. **T**HE third part of *Negative Justice* concerns the *possessions* of our Neighbours; what I mean by *Possessions*, I cannot better explain then by referring you to the *Tenth Commandment*, the end of which is to bridle all covetous appetites and desires towards the *possessions* of our neighbour. There we find reckoned up, not only his house, servants, and cattle, which may all pass under the one general name of his goods or riches, but particularly his *wife*, as a principal part of his *possessions*, and therefore when we consider this duty of negative justice, in respect of the *possessions* of our Neighbour, we must apply it to both his *wife* as well as his *goods*.

His Wife. 2. The especial and peculiar right that everie man hath in his *wife* is so well known that it were vain to say any thing in proof of it; the great impatience that everie husband hath to have this right of his invaded, shews that it is sufficiently understood in the world, and there

therefore none that does this injury to another, can be ignorant of the greatness of it. **SUNDAY XI.**
 The corrupting of a mans wife, enticing her to a strange bed, is by all acknowledged to be the worst sort of theft, infinitely beyond that of the goods.

3. Indeed there is in this one, a heap of the *greatest injustices* together; some towards the woman, and some towards the man: towards the *Woman* there are the greatest imaginable; it is that *injustice* to her soul, which was before mentioned as the highest of all others, 'tis the robbing her of her innocencie, and setting her in a course of the horrid wickedness (no less then *lust* and *perjury* together) from which it is probable she may never return, and then it proves the damning of her eternally. Next it is in respect of this world, the robbing her of her *credit*, making her abhorred and despised, and her very name a reproach among all men; and besides it is the depriving her of all that happiness of life, which arises from the mutual kindness and affection that is between man and wife, instead whereof this brings in a loathing, and abhorring of each other; from whence flow multitudes of mischiefs, too many to rehearse, in all which the man hath his share also.

The enticing a mans wife the greatest injustice.

To the woman.

4. But besides those, there are to him many and high injustices; for it is *first* the robbing him of that, which of all other things he accounts most precious, the love and faithfulness of his wife, and that also wherein he hath

To the man.

Q.

such

SUNDAY

XL

such an incommunicable right, that himself cannot, if he would, make it over to any other; and therefore sure it cannot without the utmost injustice be torne from him by any: Nor is this all, but it is *farther* the ingulfing him (if ever he come to discern it) in that most tormenting Passion of *jealousie*, which is of all others the most painful, and which oft puts men upon the most desperate attempts, it being as *Solomon* sayes, *Prov. 6. 34. The rage of a man.* It is yet farther, the bringing upon him all that *scorne* and contempt which by the unjust measures of the world falls on them, which are so abused, and which is by many esteemed the most insufferable part of the wrong; and though it be true that it is very unjust he should fall under reproach, only because he is injured, yet unless the world could be new moulded, it will certainly be his lot, and therefore it addes much to the injury: Again, this may indeed be a *robbery* in the usual sence of the word, for perhaps it may be the thrusting in the *childe of the adulterer* into his family, to share both in the maintenance and portions of his own children; and this is an arrand theft: *first*, in respect of the man, who surely intends not the providing for another mans childe; and then in respect of the children, who are by that means defrauded of so much as that goes away with. And therefore whosoever hath *this* circumstance of the sin to repent of, cannot do it effectually, without *restoring* to the family.

asmuch as he hath by this means robb'd it
of. SUNDAY
XI.

5. All this put together will sure make this the greatest and most provoking injury that can be done to a man, and (which heightens it yet more) it is that, for which a man can never make *reparations*; for unless it be in the circumstance before mentioned, there is no part of this sin, wherein that can be done; to this purpose it is observable in the *Jewish* Law, that the Thief was appointed to *restore fourfold*, and that freed him; but the adulterer having no possibility of making any restitution, any satisfaction, he *must pay his life* for his offence, *Lev. 20. 10.* And though now adays adulterers speed better, live many dayes to renew their guilt, and perhaps to laugh at those, whom they have thus injured, yet let them be assured, there must one day be a sad reckoning, and that whether they repent or not: If by Gods grace they do come to repentance, they will then finde this to be no cheap sin; many anguishes of soul, terrors and perplexities of conscience, groans and tears it must cost them; and indeed were a mans whole life spent in these penitential exercises, 'twere little enough to wipe off the guilt of any one single act of this kinde; what overwhelming sorrows then are requisite for such a trade of this sin, as too many drive? Certainly it is so great a task, that it is highly necessary for all that are so concerned, to set to it immediately, lest they want time to

*The most
irrepara-
ble.*

SUNDAY
XL.

go through with it; for let no man flatter himself, that the guilt of a course and habit of such a sin can be washt away with a single act of repentance; no, he must proportion the repentance to the fault, and as one hath been a habit and course, so must the other also. And then how strange a madness is it for men to run into this sin (and that with such painful pursuits, as many do) which he knows must at the best hand, that is, supposing he do repent of it, cost him thus dear; but then if he do not repent, infinitely dearer; it loses him all his title to Heaven, that place of purity, and gives him his portion in the lake of fire, where the burnings of his lust shall end in those everlasting burnings: For how closely soever he have acted this sin, be it so that he may have said with the adulterer in *Job* 25. 15. *No eye seeth me*, yet 'tis sure he could not in the greatest obscurity shelter himself from Gods sight, with whom *the darkness is no darkness*, *Psalms* 139. 12. And he it is, who hath expressly threatned to judge this sort of offenders, *Heb.* 13. 4. *Adulterers God will judge*. God grant that all that live in this foul guilt, may so seasonably, and so thoroughly judge themselves, that they may prevent that severe and dreadful judgement of his.

His goods.

6. The second thing to which this Negative justice to our Neighbours possessions reacheth, is *his Goods*, under which general word is contained all those several sorts of things, as *House, Land, Castle, Money*, and the

the like, in which he hath a right and property; these we are by the rule of this justice to suffer him to enjoy without seeking either to work him damage in any of them, or to get any of them to *our selves*: I make a difference between these two, because there may be two several grounds or motives of this injustice; the one malice, the other covetousness.

7. The *malicious* man desires to work his neighbour mischief, though he get nothing by it himself; 'tis frequently seen, that men will make havock and spoil of the goods of one, to whom they bear a grudge, though they never design to get any thing to themselves by it, but only the pleasure of doing a spight to the other: This is a most hellish humour, directly answerable to that of the Devil, who bestowes all his pains and industry, not to bring in any good to himself, but only to ruine and undoe others: and how contrary it is to all rules of justice, you may see by the Precept given by God to the Jews concerning the goods of an enemy, where they were so far from being allowed a libertie of spoil and destruction, that they are expressly bound to prevent it, *Exodus 23. 45. If thou meet thine enemies Oxe, or his Ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again: If thou see the Ass of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldst forbear to help him, thou shalt surely help with him*: Where you see it is a debt we owe to our very enemies, to prevent that loss and damage, which by any

*Malicious
injustice.*

SUNDAY
XI.

accident he is in danger of: and that even with some labour, and pains to our selves. How horrible an injustice is it then, purposely to bring that loss and damage on him? Who ever is guilty of this, let him never excuse himself by saying, he hath not inricht himself by the spoil of his neighbour, that he hath nothing of it cleaves to his finger, for sure this *malicious injustice* is no less a fault then the *covetous ene*; nay, I suppose in respect of the principle & cause, from which it flowes, it may be greater, this hatred of another being worse then the immoderate love of our selves; whoever hath thus mischiefed his neighbour, he is as much bound to reparaire the injury, to make satisfaction for the loss, as if he had enriched himself by it.

Covetous
injustice.

8, But on the other side, let not the *covetous defrauder* therefore judge his sin light because there is another, that in some one respect outweighs it; for perhaps in others his may cast the scales; certainly it does in this one, that he that is unjust for greediness of gain, is like to multiply more acts of this sin, then he that is so out of malice; for 'tis impossible any man should have so many objects of his malice, as he may have of his covetousness; there is no man at so general a defiance with all mankind that he hates every body; but the covetous man hath as many objects of his vice, as there be things in the world he counts valuable: But I shall not longer stand upon this comparison, 'tis sure they are both great and crying sins,
and

and that is ground enough of abhorring each: SUNDAY
XI.

let us descend now to the several branches of this sort of *covetous injustice*; 'tis true they may all bear the name of robbery, or theft, for in effect they are all so, yet for methods sake it will not be amiss to distinguish them into these three; *Oppression, Theft, and Deceit*.

9. By *Oppression* I mean that open and bare-*Oppression.*
faced robbery, of seizing upon the possessions of others, and owning and avowing the doing so. For the doing of this there are several instruments; as first that of power, by which many Nations and Princes have been turned out of their rights, and many private men out of their estates: Sometimes again, Law is made the instrument of it; he that covets his neighbours lands or goods, pretends a claim to them, and then by corrupting of Justice by *Bribes* and *gifts*, or else over-ruling it by greatness and authority gets judgement on his side: this is a high oppression, and of the worst sort, thus to make the *Law*, which was intended for the protection and defence of mens Rights, to be the means of overthrowing them; and it is a very heave guilt, that lies both on him that procures, and on him that pronounces such a sentence, yea, and on the *Lawyer* too, that pleads such a cause, for by so doing he assists in the oppression; sometimes again, the verie necessities of the oppressed are the means of his oppression; thus it is in the case of Extortion, and griping *Usury*: a man is in extreme want of money, and this gives

SUNDAY
XI.

opportunity to the executioner to wrest unconscionably from him, to which the poor man is forced to yield to supply his present wants, And thus also it is often with *exacting Land-Lords*, who when their poor tenants know not how to provide themselves elsewhere, rack and skrew them beyond the worth of the thing. All these and many the like are but several wayes of acting this one sin of Oppression which becomes yet the more hainous, by how much the more helpless the person is, that is thus oppressed, therefore the oppression of the widow and fatherless, is in Scripture mentioned as the height of this sin.

Gods vengeance against it.

10. It is indeed a most crying guilt, and that against which God hath threatned his heavie vengeance, as we read in divers texts of Scriptures: thus it is, *Ezek. 18. 12. He that hath oppressed the poor, and hath spoiled by violence, he shall surely die, his blood shall be upon him*; and the same sentence is repeated against him, *ver. 18.* Indeed God hath so peculiarly taken upon him the protection of the poor, and oppressed, that he is engaged as it were in honour to be their avenger, and accordingly, *Psal. 12.* We see God solemnly declare his resolution of appearing for them, *ver. 5. For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now will I arise, saith the Lord, I will set him in safety from him*; the advice therefore of Solomon is excellent, *Prov. 22. 22. Rob not the poor, because he is poor, neither oppress the afflicted in the gate, for the Lord will plead their cause and will*

Part. II. *The Kindes of Theft.*

235

will spoil the soul of those that spoiled them; they are like in the end to have little joy of the booty it brings them in, when it thus engages God against them. SUNDAY XI.

11. The *second* sort of this injustice is *Theft*, *Theft*. and of that also there are two Kindes, the one the withholding what we should pay, and the other taking from our neighbour what is already in his possession.

12. Of the *first* sort is the not paying of *debts*, whether such as we have *borrowed*, or such as by our own voluntary promise are become our debts, for they are equally due to him, that can lay, either of these claims to them; and therefore the withholding of either of them is a theft, a keeping from my neighbour that which is his; yet the former of them is rather the more injurious, for by that I take from him that which he once actually had (be it money, or whatsoever else) and so make him worse then I found him: This is a very great, and very common injustice; men can now adayes with as great confidence deny him that *asks a debt*, as they do him that *asks an alms*, nay many times 'tis made matter of quarrel for a man to demand his own, besides the many attendances the creditor is put to in pursuit of it, are a yet farther injury to him, by wasting his time, and taking him off from other business, and so he is made a looser that way too. This is so great injustice, that I see not how a man can look upon any thing he possesses as his own right,

SUNDAY

XI.

right, whilst he thus denies another his. It is the duty of every man in *debt*, rather to strip himself of all, and cast himself again naked upon Gods providence, then thus to feather his nest with the spoils of his neighbours. And surely it would prove the more thriving course, not only in respect of the blessing, which may be expected upon justice, compared with the curse, that attends the contrary, but even in worldly prudence also; for he that defers paying of debts, will at last be forc't to it by Law, and that upon much worse terms, then he might have done it voluntarily, with a greater charge, and with such a loss of his credit, that afterward in his greatest necessities he will not know where to borrow. But the sure way for a man to secure himself from the guilt of this injustice, is never to borrow more then he knows he hath means to repay, unless it be of one, who knowing his disability, is willing to run the hazard. Otherwise he commits this sin at the very time of borrowing; for he takes that from his neighbour upon promise of paying, which he knows he is never likely to restore to him, which is a flat robbery.

What we
are bound
for.

The same *justice* which ties men to pay their own debts, ties also every *surety* to pay those debts of others, for which he stands *bound*, in case the principal either cannot or will not: for by being *bound*, he hath made it his own debt, and must in all justice answer it to the creditor, who, its presumed, was drawn to lend on confidence of his security, and therefore is directly

rectly cheated and betrayed by him, if he see him not satisfied. If it be thought hard, that a man should pay for that which he never received benefit by; I shall yield it, so far as to be just matter of wariness to every man how he enter into such engagements, but it can never be made an excuse for the breaking them.

As for the other sort of debt, that which is brought upon a man by his own *voluntary promise*, that also cannot without great injustice be withheld: for it is now the mans right, and then 'tis no matter, by what means it came to be so. Therefore we see *David* makes it part of the description of a just man, *Psal. 15.* 4. that he keeps his promises, yea, though they were made to his own disadvantage; and surely he is utterly unfit to ascend to that Holy Hill, there spoken of, either as that signifies the Church here, or Heaven hereafter, that does not punctually observe this part of justice. To this sort of debt may be reduced the wages of the servant, the hire of the labourer, and the withholding of these is a great sin, and the complaints of those that are thus injured, ascend up to God. Behold (saith *S. James*) the hire of the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cryeth, and the cries of them that have reaped, are entred into the ears of the Lord of Sabbaoth: *Dent. 24. 14.* 15. We finde a strict command in this matter, Thou shalt not oppress an hired servant that is poor and needy, at his day thou shalt give him his hire, neither shall the Sun go down upon it,

*What we
have pro-
mised.*

for

SUNDAY *for he is poor, and setteth his heart upon it, lest*
XII. *he cry against thee to the Lord, and it be sin unto*
thee. This is one of those loud clamorous sins,
which will not cease crying, till it bring down
Gods vengeance, and therefore though thou
hast no justice to thy poor brother, yet have at
least so much mercy to thy self, as not to pull
down judgments on thee by thus wronging him,

PARTITION XII.

Of Theft; Stealing. Of deceit in Trust,
in Traffick. Of Restitution, &c.

Stealing the
goods of
our neigh-
bour.

S. I.

THE *second* part of *Theft* is the taking from our neighbour that which is already in his possession; and this may be done either more

violently, and openly, or else more closely, and sliely; the first is the manner of those that *rob* on the way, or *plunder* houses, where by force they take the goods of their neighbour; the other is the way of the *pilfering thief*, that takes away a mans goods unknown to him; I shall not dispute, which of these is the worst, 'tis enough that they are both such acts of injustice, as make men odious to God, unfit for humane societie, and betray the actors to the greatest mischiefs even in this world, death it self being by Law appointed the reward of it; and there are few that follow this Trade long, but at last meet with that fruit of it. I am sure 'tis mad-

ness

ness for any to believe he shall alwayes steal securely, for he is to contend with the industry of all those whom he shall thus injure, whose losses will quicken their wits for the finding him out, and which is infinitely more, he is to struggle with the justice of God, which doth usually pursue such men to destruction, even in this world; witness the many strange discoveries, that have been made of the craftiest thieves. But however, if he were secure from the vengeance here, I am sure nothing but repentance and reformation can secure him from the vengeance of it hereafter. And now when these dangers are weighed, 'twill surely appear, that the *thief* makes a pitiful bargain, he steals his neighbours money, or cattle, and in exchange for it he must pay his life, or his soul, perhaps both; and if *the whole world be too mean a price for a Soul*, as he tells us, *Mark* 8. 36. who best knew the value of them, having himself bought them, what a strange madness is it, to barter them away for every petty trifle, as many do, who have got such a habit of stealing, that not the meanest worthless thing can escape their fingers? Under this head of *theft* may be ranked the *receivers* of *stolen* goods, whether those that take them, as partners in the theft, or those that buy them, when they know or believe they are stolen. This many (that pretend much to abhor theft) are guilty of, when they can by it, buy the thing a little cheaper then the common rate. And here
also

SUNDAY XII. also comes in the concealing of any goods a man findes of his neighbours, which whosoever restores not, if he know, or can learn out the owner, is no better then a thief; for he withholds from his neighbour that which properly belongs to him: and sure 'twill not be uncharitable to say, that he that will do this, would likewise commit the grosser theft, were he by that no more in danger of Law then in this he is.

Deceit.

The *third* part of injustice is *Deceit*, and in that there may be as many acts as there are occasions of intercourse and dealing between man and man.

2. It will be impossible to name them all, but I think they will be contained under these two general *deceits*, in matters of *Trust*; and in matters of *Traffick*, or bargaining; unless it be that of *Gaming*, which therefore here by the way, I must tell you, is as much a *fraud* and *deceit* as any of the rest.

In Trust.

3. He that deceives a man in any *Trust* that is committed to him, is guilty of a great injustice, and that the most treacherous sort of one, it is the joyning of two great sins in one; *defrauding*, and *promise-breaking*; for in all trusts there is a promise implied, if not exprest, for the very accepting of the *trust* contains under it a promise of fidelity; these trusts are broken sometimes to the living, sometimes to the dead; to the living there are many wayes of doing it, according to the several kindes of the *trust*; sometimes a trust

Part. 12 Of Deceit in Trusts.

241

SUNDAY
XII.

is more general, like that of *Potiphar* to *Joseph*, *Gen.* 39. 4. a man commits to another all that he hath, and thus *Guardians* of children, and sometimes *Stewards* are intrusted; sometimes again it is more limited, and restrained to some one special thing: A man intrusts another to bargain, or deal for him in such a particular, or he puts some one thing into his hands, to manage and dispose: thus among *servants* it is usual for one to be intrusted with one part of the Masters goods, and another with another part of them. Now in all these, and the like cases, whosoever acts not for him that intrusts him, with the same faithfulness, that he would for himself, but shall either carelessly lose, or prodigally imbezel the things committed to him, or else convert them to his own use, he is guilty of this great sin of betraying a trust to the living. In like manner he that being intrusted with the execution of a *dead mans Testament*, acts not according to the known intention of the dead man, but enriches himself by what is assigned to others, he is guiltie of this sin, in respect of the dead; which is so much the greater, by how much the dead hath no means of remedy and redress, as the living may have. It is a kinde of *robbing of graves*, which is a theft of which men naturally have such a horror, that he must be a very hardened thief, that can attempt it. But either of these frauds are made yet more hainous, when either God, or the poor are immediately concerned

SUNDAY XII. cerned in it; that is, when any thing is committed to a man, for the uses either of piety, or charity; this adds sacrilege to both the fraud and the treachery, and so gives him title to all those curses, that attend those several sins, which are so heavy, that he that for the present gain will adventure on them, makes as ill, nay, a much worse bargain, then *Gehazi*, 2 Kings 5. 27. who by getting the raiment of *Naaman* got his leprosie too.

In Traffick.

4. The second sort of fraud is in matters of traffick and bargain, wherein there may be deceit both in the seller, and buyer; that of the seller is commonly either in concealing the faults of the commodity, or else in overrating it.

*The sellers
concealing
the faults
of his ware.*

5. The wayes of concealing its faults are ordinarily these, either first by denying that it hath any such fault, nay, perhaps commending it for the direct contrary quality, and this is down-right lying, and so adds that sin to the other, and if that lie be confirmed by an oath, as it is too usually, then the yet greater guilt of perjury comes in also; and then what a heap of sins is here gathered together? Abundantly enough to sink any poor soul to destruction, and all this only to skrew a little more money out of his neighbours pocket, and that sometimes so very little, that 'tis a miracle that any man that thinks he has a Soul, can set it at so miserable a contemptible price. A second means of concealing is by using some Art to the thing, to make it look fair, and to hide

hide the faults of it, and this is acting a lye, though it be not speaking one, which amounts to the same thing, and has surely in this case as much of the intention of cheating, and defrauding, as the most impudent forswearing can have. A *Third* means, is the picking out ignorant Chapmen; This is, I believe, an Art too well known among *Tradesmen*, who will not bring out their faulty wares to men of skill, but keep them to put off to such, whose unskilfulness may make them passable with them: and this is still the same deceit with the former; for it all tends to the same end, the cozening and defrauding of the Chapmen, and then it is not much odds, whether I make use of my own Art, or his weakness for the purpose. This is certain, he that will do justly, must let his Chapman know what he buyes; and if his own skill enable him not to judge, (nay, if he do not actually find out the fault) thou art bound to tell it him, otherwise thou makest him pay for somewhat, which is not there, he presuming there is that good qualitie in it, which thou knowest is not, and therefore thou mayest as honestly take his money for some goods of another mans, which thou knowest thou canst never put into his possession, which I suppose no man will deny to be an arrant cheat. To this head of *concealment* may be referred that deceit of *false weights and measures*, for that is the concealing from the buyer a defect in the quantity, as the other was in the quality of the commodity,

SUNDAY
XII.

dity, and is again the making him pay for what he hath not. This sort of fraud is pointed at particularly by *Solomon, Prov. 11. 1.* with this note upon it, that *it is an abomination to the Lord.*

*His over-
rating it.*

6. The *second* part of fraud in the seller; lyes in *over-rating* the commodity; though he have not disguised, or concealed the faults of it, and so have delt fairly in that respect; yet if he set an unreasonable price upon it, he defrauds the buyer: I call that an unreasonable price, which exceeds the true worth of the thing, considered with those moderate gains, which all Tradesmen are presumed to be allowed in the Sale: Whatever is beyond this must in all likelihood be fetcht in by some of these ways: As *first*, by taking advantage of the buyers ignorance in the value of the thing, which is the same with doing it in the goodness, which hath already been shewed to be a deceit: Or *secondly*, by taking advantage of his necessity; thou findest a man hath present and urgent need of such a thing, and therefore takest this opportunity to set the Dice upon him; but this is that very sin of Extortion, and oppression spoken of before; for it is sure, nothing can justly raise the price of any thing, but either its becoming dearer to thee, or its being someway better in its self; but the necessity of thy brother causes neither of these; his nakedness doth not make the cloths thou sellest him stand thee in ever the more, neither doth it make them any way better; and
there,

Part.12. Of Deceit in Traffick. 245

SUNDAY
XII.

therefore to rate them ever the higher, is to change thy way of trading, and sell even the wants and necessities of thy neighbour, which sure is a verie unlawful vocation. Or *thirdly*, it may be by taking advantage of the indiscretion of the Chapman: A man perhaps earnestly fancies such a thing, and then suffers that fancie so to over-rule his reason, that he resolves to have it upon any terms; If thou findest this in him, and thereupon raisest thy rate, this is to make him buy his folly, which is of all others the dearest purchase; 'tis sure his fancie adds nothing to the real value, no more then his necessitie did in the former case, and therefore should not adde to the price. He therefore that will deal justly in the business of selling, must not catch at all advantages, which the temper of his Chapman may give, but consider soberly, what the thing is worth, and what he would afford it for to another, of whom he had no such advantage, and accordingly rate it to him at no higher a price.

7. On the *Buyers* part there are not ordinarily so many opportunities of *fraud*; yet it is possible a man may sometimes happen to sell somewhat, the worth whereof he is not acquainted with, and then it will be as unjust for the buyer to make gain by his ignorance, as in the other case it was for the seller: but that which oftner falls out, is the case of necessity, which may as probably fall on the sellers side, as the buyers: A mans wants compel

*Fraud in
the Buyer.*

SUNDAY
XII.

him to sell, and permit him not to stay to make the best bargain, but forces him to take the first offer; and here for the buyer to grate upon him, because he sees him in that strait is the same fault which I before shewed it to be in the teller.

Many temptations to deceit in Traffick.

8. In this whole business of *traffick* there are so many opportunities of deceit, that a man had need fence himself with a very firm resolution, nay, love of justice, or he will be in danger to fall under temptation; for as the Wise man speaks, *Eccles. 27. 2. As a Nail sticketh fast between the joynings of the Stones,* so doth sin stick close between *buying* and *selling*; it is so interwoven with all Trades, so mixt with the very first principles and grounds of them, that it is taught together with them, and so becomes part of the Art; so that he is now-a-days scarce thought fit to manage a Trade, that wants it, while he that has most of this black Art of defrauding, applauds and hugs himself, nay, perhaps boasts to others, how he hath over-reacht his neighbour.

The commonness of injustice a reproach to Christianity.

What an intolerable shame is this, that we *Christians*, who are by the precepts of our Master set to those higher duties of Charity, should instead of practising them, quite unlearn those common rules of justice, which meer Nature teaches? For, I think, I may say, there are none of those severall branches of injustice towards the possessions of our neighbour, which would not be adjudged to be so by any sober Heathen; so that, as Saint

Paul

Part. 12. of Deceit in Traffick.

247

SUNDAY
XII.

Paul tells those of the Circumcision, that the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles, by that unagreeableness that was betwixt their practice, and their Law, *Rom. 2. 24.* So now may it be said of us, that the Name of Christ is blasphemed among the Turks and Heathens, by the vile and scandalous lives of us, who call our selves Christians, and particularly in this sin of injustice; for shame let us at last endeavour to wipe off this reproach from our profession, by leaving these practices, to which methinks this one single consideration should be enough to perswade us.

9. Yet besides this, there want not other; among which, one there is of such a nature, as may prevail with the arrantest worldling, and that is, that this course doth not really tend to the enriching of him; there is a secret curse goes along with it, which like a Canker eats out all the benefit was expected from it. This no man can doubt that believes the Scripture, where there are multitudes of Texts to this purpose: thus *Prov. 22. 16.* *He that oppresseth the poor to increase his riches, shall surely come to want.* So *Habbak. 2. 6.* *Woe to him that increaseth that which is not his, how long? And he that ladeth himself with thick Clay: shall they not rise up suddenly that shall bite thee, and awake that shall vex thee? And thou shalt be for booties to them.* This is commonly the fortune of those that spoil and deceive others, they at last meet with some that do the like to them. But the place in *Zachary*

It is not the way to enrich a man.

SUNDAY
XII.

is most full to this purpose, *Chap. 5.* where under the sign of a flying roll is signified the curse that goes forth against this sin, *Verse 4.* *I will bring it forth, saith the Lord of Hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the Thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my Name, and it shall consume it with the timber thereof, and with the stones thereof.* Where you see, theft and perjury are the two sins, against which this curse is aimed (and they too often go together in the matter of defrauding) and the nature of this curse is, to *consume the house*, to make an utter destruction of all that belongs to him that is guilty of either of these sins. Thus whilst thou art ravening after thy neighbours goods, or house, thou art but gathering fuel to burn thine own. And the effect of these threatnings of God we daily see in the strange improsperousness of ill gotten estates, which every man is apt enough to observe in other mens cases: he that sees his neighbour decline in his estate, can presently call to mind, this was gotten by oppression or deceit; yet so sottish are we, so bewitched with the love of gain, that he that makes this observation, can seldome turn it to his own use, is never the less greedy, or unjust himself for that vengeance he discerns upon others.

10. But alas! if thou couldst be sure that thy unjust possessions, should not be torn from thee yet when thou remembrest, how deer thou must pay for them in another world, thou hast little reason to brag of thy prize. Thou thinkest

*It ruins
the Soul
eternally.*

thinkest thou hast been very cunning, when thou hast over reacht thy brother; but God knowes all the while, there is another over-reaching thee, and cheating thee of what is infinitely more precious, even thy Soul: the Devil herein deals with thee as Fishers use to do; those that will catch a great fish, will bait the hook with a less, and so the great one coming with greediness to devour that, is himself taken: So thou that art gaping to swallow up thy poor brother, art thy self made a prey to that great devourer. And alas! what will it ease thee in Hell, that thou hast left wealth behind thee upon earth, when thou shalt there want that, which the meanest beggar here enjoys, even a drop of water to cool thy tongue? Consider this, and from henceforth resolve to imploy all that pains and diligence thou hast used to deceive others, in rescuing thy self from the frauds of the grand deceiver.

11. To this purpose it is absolutely necessary, that thou make *Restitution* to all whom thou hast wronged: For as long as thou keepst any thing of the unjust gain, 'tis as it were an earnest-penny from the Devil, which gives him full right to thy Soul. But perhaps it may be said, it will not in all cases be possible to make restitution to the wronged party, peradventure he may be dead; in that case then make it to his Heirs, to whom his right descends. But it may further be objected, That he that hath long gone on in a

The necessity of Restitution.

SUNDAY
XII.

course of fraud, may have injured many, that he cannot now remember, and many that he has no means of finding out: In this case all I can advise is this: *First*, to be as diligent as is possible, both in recalling to mind who they were, and endeavouring to find them out; and when, after all thy care, that proves impossible, let thy Restitutions be made to the poor, and that they may not be made by halves, be as carefull as thou canst to reckon every the least mite of unjust gain, but when that cannot exactly be done, as 'tis sure it cannot by those who have multiplyed the acts of fraud, yet even there let them make some general measures, whereby to proportion their restitution: as for example, a *Tradesman* that cannot remember how much he has cheated in every single parcel, yet may possibly guess in the grois whether he have usually over-reacht to the value of a third, or a fourth part of the wares, and then what proportion soever he thinks he has so defrauded, the same proportion let him now give out of that estate he hath raised by his trade: but herein it concerns every man to deal uprightly, as in the presence of God, and not to make advantage of his own forgetfulness, to the cutting short of the Restitution, but rather go on the other hand; and be sure rather to give too much, then too little. If he do happen to give somewhat over, he need not grudge the charge of such a *sin-offering*, and 'tis sure he will not if he do heartily desire an *attem-*

ment,

ment. Many other difficulties there may be in this business of *restitution*, which will not be foreseen, and so cannot now be particularly spoke to; but the more of those there are, the greater horreur ought men to have of running into the sin of *injustice*, which it will be so difficult, if not impossible for them to repair, and the more careful ought they to be to mortifie that which is the root of all injustice, to wit, *Covetousness*.

SUNDAY
XIII.

PARTITION XIII.

Of False Reports, False witness, Slanders, Whisperings. Of scoffing for Infirmities, Calamities, Sins, &c. Of Positive Justice, Truth, Of Lying. Of Envy and detraction. Of Gratitude, &c.

§. 1. **T**HE Fourth Branch of Negative Justice concerns the *Credit* of our neighbours, which we are not to lessen, or impair by any means, particularly not by false Reports: Of false reports there may be two sorts, the one is when a man sayes something of his neighbour, which he directly knowes to be false, the other when possibly he has some slight surmise, or jealousy of the thing

SUNDAY
XIII.

thing; but that upon such weak grounds, that 'tis as likely to be false as true. In either of these cases, there is a great guilt lyes upon the reporter. That there doth so in the *first* of them, no body will doubt, every one acknowledging that it is the greatest baience to invent a *lie* of another; but there is as little reason to question the other, for he that reports a thing as a truth, which is but uncertain, is a liar also, or if he do not report it as a certainty, but only as a probability, yet then though he be not guilty of the lie, yet he is of the injustice of robbing his neighbour of his credit; for there is such an aptness in men to believe ill of others, that any the lightest jealousy will, if once it be spread abroad, serve for that purpose; and sure it is a most horrible injustice upon every slight surmise, and fancy to hazzard the bringing so great an evill upon another; especially when it is considered, that those surmises commonly spring rather from some censoriousness, peevishness, or malice in the surmizer, then from any reall fault in the person so suspected.

False witness.

2. The manner of spreading these false reports of both kinds, is not alwayes the same; sometimes it is more *open* and avowed, sometimes more *close* and private: the open is many times by *false witness* before the Court of Justice: and this not onely hurts a man in his credit, but in other respects also: 'tis the delivering him up to the punishment of the Law,
and

and according to the nature of the crime pretended, does him more or less mischief; but if it be of the highest kind, it may concern *his life*, as we see it did in *Naboth's* case, 1 Kings 21. How great and crying a sin it is in this respect, as also in that of the perjury, you may learn from what hath been said of both those sins. I am now to consider it onely, as it touches the credit; and to that it is a most grievous wound, thus to have a crime publickly witnessed against one, and such as is scarce curable by any thing that can afterwards be done to clear him, and therefore whoever is guiltie of this, doth a most outrageous injustice to his neighbour; this is that which is expressly forbidden in the *ninth Commandment*, and was by God appointed to be punished by the inflicting of the *very same suffering* upon him, which his false testimony aimed to bring upon the other. *Dent. 19.*
16.

3. The *second* open way of spreading these *Publick* reports, is by a *publick* and common declaring of them; though not before the Magistrate, as in the other case, yet in *all companies*, and before such as are likely to carry it farther, and this is usually done with bitter railings and reproaches, it being an ordinarie Art of slanderers, to *revile* those whom they slander, that so by the sharpness of the accusation, they may have the greater impression in the minds of the hearers; this both in respect of the slander, and the railing, is a high injury,

SUNDAY XIII. injury, and both of them such, as debar the committers from Heaven; thus *Psal.* 15. where the upright man is described, that shall have his part there, this is one special thing, vers. 3. *That he slandereth not his neighbour.* And for railing the Apostle in severall places reckons it amongst those works of the flesh, which are to shut men out both from the Church here by *excommunication*, as you may see 1 *Cor.* 15. 11. and from the Kingdom of God hereafter, as it is, 1 *Corinth.* 6. 10.

*Whisper-
ing.*

4. The other more close and private way of spreading such reports is that of the *Whisperer*, he that goes about from one to another, and privately vents his slanders, not out of an intent by that means to make them less publick, but rather more; this trick of delivering them by way of secret, being the way to make them both more believed, and more spoken of too; for he that receives such a tale, as a secret from one, thinks to please some body else, by delivering it as a secret to him also; and so it passes from one hand to another, till at last it spread over a whole Town: This sort of slanderer is of all others the most dangerous, for he works in the dark, eyes all he speaks to, not to own him as the author, so that whereas in the more publick accusations, the party may have some means of clearing himself and detecting his accuser, here he shall have no possibility of that, the slander, like a secret poison, works incurable

able effects, before ever the man discern it. This sin of whispering is by Saint *Paul* mentioned among those great crimes, which are the effects of a reprobate minde, *Rom. 1. 29.* It is indeed one of the most incurable wounds of this sword of the tongue; the very bane and pest of humane societie; and that which not onely robs single persons of their good names, but oftentimes whole families, nay, publick societies of men of their peace; what ruines, what confusions hath this one sin wrought in the world? 'Tis *Solomons* observation, *Prov. 18. 28.* That a *whisperer separateth chief friends*, and sure one may truly say of tongues thus imployed, that they are *set on fire of Hell*, as Saint *James* saith, Chap. 3. 6.

5. This is such a guilt that we are to beware of all the *degrees* of approach to it, of which there are several steps; the *first* is the giving ear to, and cherishing of those that come with slanders, for they that entertain and receive them, incourage them in the practise; for as our common proverb sayes, if there were no Receivers, there would be no thief; so if there were none that would give an ear to tales, there would be no tale-bearers. A *second* step is, the giving too easie credit to them, for this helps them to attain part of their end, they desire to get a general ill opinion of such a man, but the way of doing it must be by causing it, *first*, in particular men: and if thou suffer them to do it in thee, they have

Several
Steps to-
wards this
sin.

SUNDAY
XIII.

have so far prospered in their aim. And for thy own part thou dost a great injustice to thy neighbour to believe ill of him without a just ground, which the accusation of such a person certainly is not. A *third* step is the reporting to others, what is thus told thee; by which thou makest thy self directly a party in the slander, and after thou hast unjustly withdrawn from thy neighbour thy own good opinion, endeavourest to rob him also of that of others. This is very little below the guilt of the *first whisperer*, and tends as much to the ruine of our neighbours credit. And these several degrees have so close a dependence one upon another, that it will be very hard for him that allows himself the *first*, to escape the other; and indeed he that can take delight to hear his neighbour defamed, may well be presumed of so malicious a humour, that 'tis not likely he should stick at spreading the slander. He therefore that will Preserve his innocence in this matter, must never in the least degree cherish or countenance any that brings these false reports. And it is not less necessary to his peace, then to his innocency; for he that once entertains them, must never expect quiet, but shall be continually incited, and stirred up even against his nearest and dearest relations; so that this whisperer, and slanderer is to be look't on by all, as a common enemy, he being so as well to those to whom, as of whom he speaks.

6. But besides *this* grosser way of *slander-*

ing

Part. 13. Scoffing for Infirmities, &c. 257

SUNDAY
XIII.

ing, there is *another*, whereby we may impair, and lessen the *credit* of our neighbour, and that is by *contempt*, and *despising*; one common effect whereof is *scoffing*, and deriding him. This is very injurious to a mans reputation. For the generality of men do rather take up opinions upon trust, then judgement; and therefore if they see a man despised, and scorned, they will be apt to do the like. But besides this effect of it, there is a present injustice in the very act of despising, and scorning others. There are ordinarily but three things, which are made the occasions of it, (unless it be with such, with whom virtue and godliness are made the most reproachfull things, and such despising is not onely an injury to our neighbour, but even to God himself for whose sake it is, that he is so despised) those three are *first* the *infirmities*, *secondly* the *calamities*, *thirdly* the *sins* of a man, and each of these are very far from being ground of our triumphing over him.

7. *First*, for *infirmities*, be they either of body or mind, the deformity and unhandfomeness of the one, or the weakness, and folly of the other, they are things out of his power to help, they are not his faults, but the wise dispensations of the great Creator, who bestows the excellency of body and mind, as he pleases, and therefore to scorn a man, because he hath them not, is in effect to reproach God who gave them not to him.

8. So also for the *calamities*, and miseries, that

Despising
and scoff-
ing.

For infir-
mities.

For cala-
mities.

SUNDAY
XIII.

that befall a man, be it want or sickness, or whatever else, these also come by the providence of God; who raiseth up, and pulleth down, as seems good to him, and it belongs not to us to judge, what are the motives to him to do so, as many do, who upon any affliction that befalls another, are presently concluding, that sure it is some extraordinary guilt, which pulls this upon him, though they have no particular to lay to his charge. This rash judgement our Saviour reproves in the *Jews*, *Luke* 13. where on occasion of the extraordinary sufferings of the *Galileans*, he asks them, verse 2. *Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you nay, but except you repent, ye shall all likewise perish*: when we see Gods hand heavy upon others, it is no part of our business to judge them, but our selves, and by repentance to prevent, what our own sins have deserved. But to reproach, and revile any that are in affliction, is that barbarous cruelty, taken notice of by the *Psalmist*, as the height of wickedness, *Psal.* 69.26. *They persecute him whom thou hast smitten, and they talk to the grief of them whom thou hast wounded*: In all the miseries of others, compassion becomes a debt to them; how unjust are they then, that instead of paying them that debt, afflict them with scorn and reproach?

For sins.

9. Nay the very *sins* of men, though as they have more of their *wills* in them, they may

Part. 13. Credit of our Neighbour. 259

SUNDAY
XIII.

may seem more to deserve reproach, yet certainly they also oblige us to the former duty of compassion, and that in the highest degree, as being the things, which of all others make a man the most miserable; in all these cases, if we consider how subject we are to the like our selves; and that it is only Gods mercy to us, by which we are preserved from the worst that any man else is under, it will surely better become us to look up to him with thankfulness, then down on them with contempt and despising. Thus you see *the direct* injustice of *scorning* and *contemning* our brethren, to which when *that other* is added, which naturally followes, as a consequent of this; to wit, the begetting the like contempt in others, there can sure be no doubt of its being a great and *horrible injustice* to our neighbour in respect of his credit.

10. Now how great the injury of *destroying* a mans *credit* is, may be measured by these two things; *first*, the value of the thing he is robb'd of, and *secondly* the difficulty of making reparations. For the *first*, 'tis commonly known, that a mans good name is a thing he holds most precious, oftentimes dearer then his life, as we see by the hazards men sometimes run to preserve even a mistaken reputation; but 'tis sure it is that, which hath even by sober men been esteemed one of the greatest happinesses of life: And to some sort of men, such especially as subsist by dealings in the world, 'tis so necessary, that it way well be rec-

*Destroying
the credit,
a great in-
jury.*

SUNDAY
XIII.

And irre-
pairable.

koned as the means of their livelyhood, and then sure, 'tis no slight matter to rob a man of what is thus valuable to him.

11. *Secondly*, the difficulty of making *reparations* increaseth the injury, and that is such in this case of defamation, that I may rather call it an impossibility, then a difficulty: For when men are possess'd of an ill opinion of a person, 'tis no easie matter to work it out; so that the slanderer is herein like a *young Conjuror, that raises a Devil he knows not how to lay again*. Nay, suppose men were generally as willing to lay down ill conceits of their neighbours, as they are to take them up, yet how is it possible for him that makes even the most *publick recantation* of his slander, to be sure that every man that hath come to the hearing of the one, shall do so of the other also? And if there be but one person, that doth not, (as probably there will be many) then is the reparation still short of the injury.

Yet every
guilty per-
son must do
all he can
to repair
the injury.

12. This consideration is very fit to make men afraid of doing this wrong to their neighbour; but let it not be made use of to excuse those that have already done the wrong, from endeavouring to make the best *reparations* they can; for though 'tis odds, it will not equal the injury, yet let them however do what they are able towards it: And this is so necessary towards the obtaining pardon of the sin, that none must expect the one, that do not performe the other. Whosoever therefore sets himself to repent of his faults
of

Part. 13. Credit of our Neighbour. 261

of this kinde, must by all prudent means endeavour to restore his neighbour to that degree of credit he hath deprived him of; and if that be not to be done without bringing the shame upon himself, of confessing publicly the slander, he must rather submit to that, then be wanting to this necessary part of justice, which he owes to the wronged party.

13. Thus I have gone through these four branches of *Negative Justice* to our Neighbour; wherein we must yet further observe, that this justice bindes us not onely in respect of our words, and actions, but of our very *thoughts*, and affections also; we are not onely forbid to hurt, but to hate; not only restrained from bringing any of these evils forementioned upon him, but we must not so much as wish them before, nor delight in them after they are befallen him: we must take no pleasure either in the sin of his Soul, or hurt of his body; we must not *envie* him any good thing he enjoyes, nor so much as *wish* to possess our selves of it: Neither will it suffice us, that we so bridle our *tongue*, that we neither slander, nor revile, if we have that malice in our *hearts*, which makes us *wish* his discredit; or rejoyce, when we finde it procured, though we have no hand in the procuring it. This is the peculiar property of *Gods Laws*, that they reach to the *heart*; whereas mens can extend only to the words, and actions; and the reason is clear, because he is the only Law-giver, that can see what is in the

SUNDAY
XIII.

*Justice in
the
thoughts.*

SUNDAY
XIII.

heart, therefore if there were the perfectest innocency in our tongue and hands, yet if there be not this purity of heart, it will never serve to acquit us before him. The counsel therefore of *Solomon* is excellent, *Prov. 4. 23. Keep thy heart with all diligence, for out of it are the issues of life.* Let us strictly guard that, so that no malicious unjust thought enter there; and that not only, as it may be the means of betraying us to the grosser act, but also as it is in it self such a pollution in Gods sight, as will unfit us for the blessed vision of God, whome none but the pure in heart have promise of seeing, *Mat. 5. 1. Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.*

Positive
Justice.

14. I come now to speak of the *Positive* part of *Justice*, which is the yielding to every man that which by any kinde of right he may challenge from us. Of these dues there are *some* that are general to all mankind, *others* that are restrained within some certain conditions and qualities of men, and become due only by vertue of those qualifications.

Speaking
Truth a due
to all men.

15. Of the *first* sort, that is those, that are due to all men, we may reckon *first* the speaking *Truth*, which is a common debt we owe to all mankind; speech is given us as the instrument of intercourse and society, one with another, the means of discovering the mind which otherwise lies hid, and concealed, so that were it not for this, our conversations would be but the same as of beasts: Now this being intended for the good and advantage

vantage of mankind, 'tis a due to it; that it be used to that purpose; but he that Lies, is so far from paying that debt, that on the contrary he makes his speech the means of injuring and deceiving him he speaks to.

16. There might much be said to shew the several sorts of Obligations we lye under, to speak *truth* to all men; but supposing I write to Christians, I need not insist on any other, then the Commands we have of it in Scripture, thus *Eph. 4. 25.* the Apostle commands that *putting away lying, they speak every man truth with his neighbour*: And again, *Col. 3. 9.* *Lie not one to another*: and *Prov. 6. 17.* a *lying tongue is mentioned as one* of those things that are *abominations to the Lord*. Yea so much doth he hate a lie, that it is not the most pious and religious end, that can reconcile him to it, the man that lies, though in a zeal to Gods glory, shall yet be judged as a sinner, *Rom. 3. 7.* what shall then become of those multitudes of men that lie on quite other ends? Some out of malice, to mischief others, some out of covetousness to defraud their neighbours, some out of pride, to set themselves out, and some out of fear, to avoid a danger or hide a fault. But of a yet stranger sort, then all these, are those, that do it without any discernable temptation, that will tell lies by way of story, take pleasure in telling incredible things, from which themselves reap nothing, but the reputation of impertinent *lyars*.

Lying expressly forbidden in Scripture.

SUNDAY

XIII.

The great
commonness
and folly of
this sin.

17. Among these divers kindes of falshoods, *Truth* is become such a *rarity* among us, that it is a most difficult matter, to finde such a man as *David* describes, *Psalme 15. 2. That speaketh the truth from his heart.* Men have so glibbed their tongues to lying, that they do it familiarly upon any or no occasion, never thinking that they are observed either by God or man. But they are extremely deceived in both; for there is scarce any sin (that is at all endeavoured to be hid) which is more discernable even to men: they that have a custome of lying, seldome fail, (be their memory never so good) at some time or other to betray themselves; and when they do, there is no sort of sin meets with greater scorn, and reproach; a *Liar* being by all accounted a title of the greatest infamy, and shame. But as for God, 'tis madness to hope that all their Arts can disguise them from him, who needs none of those casual wayes of discovery, which men do, but sees the heart, and so knowes at the verie instant of speaking, the falshood of what is said: and then by his Title of *The God of Truth*, is tyed not only to hate, but punish it, and accordingly you see, *Rev. 20.* that the *Lyars* are in the number of those that are *shut out of the new Jerusalem*; and not only so, but also have their part in the *Lake that burneth with Fire and Brimstone.* If therefore thou be not of the humour of that unjust Judge *Christ* speaks of, *Luke 18. 2. Who neither feared God, nor regarded man*

man, thou must resolve on this part of Justice, **SUNDAY**
the putting away lying, which is abhorred by **XIII.**
both.

18. A *second* thing we owe to all is *Humani- Courteous*
nity and *Courtesy* of behaviour, contrary to *behaviour a*
that sullen churlishness we finde spoken of in *due to all*
Nabal, who was of such a temper, *that a man*
could not speak to him, 1 Sam. 25. 17. There is
sure so much of respect due to the very na-
ture of mankinde, that no accidental advan-
tage of health or honour, which one man
hath above another, can acquit him from that
debt to it, even in the person of the meanest;
and therefore that crabbed and harsh behavi-
our to any that bears but the form of a man,
is an injustice to that nature he partakes of.
And when we consider how much that nature
is dignified by the Son of God his taking it
upon him, the obligation to reverence it is yet
greater, and consequently the sin of thus con-
temning it.

19. This is the common guilt of all *proud Not payed*
and *haughty* persons, who are so busie in ad- *by the*
miring themselves, that they overlook all that *proud man.*
is valuable in others, and so think they owe
not so much as common civilitie to other
men, whilest they set up themselves as *Nebu-*
chadnezzar did *his Image to be worshipped*
of all. This is sure very contrarie to what the
Apostle exhorts, *Rom. 12. 10. In honour pre-*
fer one another: And again, *Phil. 2. 4. Look*
not every man on his own things, but every man
also on the things of others; and let such re-

SUNDAY
XIII.

member the sentence of our blessed Saviour, *Luke 14. 11. He that exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted*, which we often finde made good to us, in the strange down-falls of proud men. And it is no wonder, for this sin makes both God and men our enemies; God, as the Scripture every where testifies, abhors it, and all that are guilty of it, and men are by means of it used to contemptuously and unkindly by us, that they are by nothing more provoked against us, and then whom God and man thus resist, who shall secure and uphold?

*Meekness
a due to all
men.*

20. A third thing we owe to all is *Meekness*; that is, such a patience, and gentleness towards all, as may bridle that mad passion of anger, which is not only very uneasie to our selves, as hath already been shewed, but also very mischeivous to our neighbours, as the many outrages, that are oft committed in it, do abundantly testifie. That this duty of *meekness* is to be extended to all men, there is no doubt; for the Apostle in expresse words commands it, *1 Thes. 5. 14. Be patient towards all men*, and that it should seem in spite of all provocation to the contrary, for the very next words are, *See that none render evil for evil, or railing for railing*: and *Timothy* is commanded to exercise this *meekness* even towards them who oppose themselves against the Doctrine of the Gospell, *2 Tim. 2. 25.* which was a case, wherein some heat would probably have been allowed, if it might have been in any.

21. This

Part. 13. *Vertue of Meekness, &c.* 267

21. This vertue of *meekness* is so necessary SUNDAY
to the preserving the peace of the world, that XIII.
it is no wonder, that Christ, who came to *Brawling*
plant peace among men, should injoyne *meek-* *very insus-*
ness to all. I am sure the contrary effects of *ferable.*
rage and anger are every where discernable, it
breeds disquiet in Kingdomes, in Neighbour-
hoods, in Families, and even between the
nearest relations; 'tis such a humour, that *So-*
lomon warns us never to enter a friendship
with a man that is of it, Prov. 22. 24. *Make*
no friendship with an angry man, and with a
furious man thou shalt not go. It makes a man
unfit to be either friend or companion, and
indeed makes one insufferable to all that have
to do with one, as we are again taught by *So-*
lomon, Prov. 21. 19. where he prefers the
dwelling in a *wilderness*, rather than with a
contentious and angry woman, and yet a woman
has ordinarily only that one weapon of the
tongue to offend with. Indeed to any that have
not the same unquietness of humour, there can
scarce be a greater, uneasiness, then to con-
verse with those, that have it, though it ne-
ver proceed farther, then words. How great
this sin is, we may judge by what our Saviour
says of it, *Matth.* 5. where there are several
degrees of punishment allotted to several de-
grees of it; but alas! we daily outgoe that,
which he there sets as the highest step of this
sin; the calling *thou foole*, is a modest sort of
reviling, compared with those multitudes of
bitter reproaches we use in our rages.

22. Nay

SUNDAY

XIII.

*It leads to
that great
sin of cur-
sing.*

22. Nay, we often go yet higher; reproaches serve not our turn, but we must *curse* too; how common is it to hear men use the horredst execrations, and *curfings* upon every the slightest cause of displeasure? Nay, perhaps without any cause at all; so utterly have we forgot the rule of the Apostle, *Rom. 12. 14. Bless and curse not*; Yea, the precept of our blessed Saviour himself, *Matth. 5. 44. Pray for those that despitefully use you*. Christ bids us pray for those, who do us all injury, and we are often *curfing* those, who do us none. This is a kinde of saying our prayers backward indeed, which is said to be part of the ceremony the Devil uses, at the making of a *Witch*, and we have in this case also reason to look on it, as a means of bringing us into acquaintance, and league with that accursed spirit here, and to a perpetual abiding with him hereafter. 'Tis the language of Hell, which can never fit us to be Citizens of the *New Jerusalem*, but marks us out for inhabitants of that *land of darkness*. I conclude this with the advise of the Apostle, *4. 31. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking be put away from you With all malice*.

*Particular
dues.*

23. Having spoken thus far of those common dues, wherein all men are concerned, and have a right, I am now to proceed to those other sorts of dues, which belong to particular persons, by vertue of some special qualification. These qualifica-
tions

Part. 13. of Envy and Detraction. 269

tions may be of *three* kinds, that of *excellency*, **SUNDAY**
that of *Want*, and that of *Relation*. **XIII.**

24. By that of *excellency*, I mean any extraordinary gifts, or endowments of a person; such as wisdom, learning, and the like; but especially grace: these being the singular gifts of God, have a great value and respect due to them, wheresoever they are to be found; and this we must readily pay by a willing, and glad acknowledgment of those his gifts in any he has bestowed them on, and bearing them a reverence, and respect, answerable thereunto, and not out of an overweening of our own excellencies, despise and undervalue those of others, as they do who will yield nothing to be reason, but what themselves speak, nor any thing piety, but what agrees with their own practice.

A respect due to men of extraordinary gifts

25. Also we must not *envy* or grudge that they have those gifts, for that is not only an injustice to them, but injurious also to God who gave them, as it is at large set forth in the *parable of the labourers*, *Matt. 20.* where he asks them, who grumbled at the masters bounty to others, *Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own, is thine eye evil because mine is good?* This envying at Gods goodness to others, is in effect a murmuring against God, who thus disposes it, neither can there be a greater, and more direct opposition against him, then for me to hate and wish ill to a man, for no other reason, but because God has loved and done well to him.

We are not to envy them.

And

SUNDAY And then in respect of the *man*, 'tis the most
XIII. unreasonable thing in the world, to love him
 the less, merely because he has those good
 qualities, for which I ought to love him
 more.

*Not detract
 from them.*

16. Neither must we *detract* from the excellencies of others, we must not seek to eclipse or darken them by denying either the kinds, or degrees of them; by that means to take off that esteem, which is due to them. This sin of detraction is generally the effect of the former, of envy, he that envies a mans worth, will be apt to do all he can to lessen it in the opinions of others, and to that purpose will either speak slightly of his excellencies; or if they be so apparent, that he knows not how to cloud them, he will try if he can by reporting some either real, or feigned infirmity of his, take off from the value of the other, and so by casting in some *dead flies*, as the wise man speaks, *Eccles. 10. 1.* Strive to *corrupt the savour of the ointment*: this is a great injustice, and directly contrary to that duty we owe, of acknowledging, & reverencing the gifts of God in our bretheren.

*The folly of
 both those
 sins.*

27. And both those sins of *envy*, and *detractiō* do usually prove as great follies, as wickedness; the envy constantly brings pain, and torment to a mans self, whereas if he could but cheerfully, and gladly look on those good things of anothers, he could never fail to be the better for them himself; the very pleasure of seeing them would be some advantage to
 him

Part. 13. Of Envy and Detraction. 271

SUNDAY
XIII.

him: but besides that those gifts of his brother may be many wayes helpful to him, his wisdom and learning may give him instruction; his piety, and vertue, example, &c. but all this the envious man loseth, and hath nothing in exchange for it, but a continual fretting, and gnawing of heart.

28. And then for *detraction*, that can hardly be so managed, but it will be found out; he that is still putting in Caveats against mens good thoughts of others, will quickly discover himself to do it out of envy, and then that will be sure to lessen their esteem of himself, but not of those he envies, it being a sort of bearing testimonie to those excellencies, that he thinks them worth the envying.

29. What hath been said of the value, and respect due to those excellencies of the minde, may in a lower degree be applyed to the outward advantages of *honour*, greatness, and the like. These though they are not of equal value with the former (and such for which no man is to prize himself) yet in regard, that these degrees, and distinctions of men are by Gods wise providence disposed, for the better ordering of the world, there is such a *civil respect* due to those, to whom God hath dispenc'd them, as may best preserve that order, for which they were intended. Therefore all inferiours are to behave themselves to their superiours with modesty, and respect, and not by a rude boldness confound that order which it hath pleased God to set in the world, but
accord-

*A respect
due to men
in regard
of their
ranks and
qualities.*

SUNDAY XIII. according as our Church-Catechisme teaches, *order themselves lowly and reverently to all their betters.* And here the former caution against *envy* comes in most seasonably; these outward advantages being things, of which generally, men have more taste, then of the other, and therefore will be more apt to *envie*, and *repine* to see others exceed them therein; to this therefore all the former considerations against *envy* will be very proper, and the more necessarie to be made use of, by how much the temptation is in this case to most mindes the greater.

*Dues to
those that
are in any
sort of
want.*

30. The *second* qualification is that of *want*; whoever is in *distress* for any thing, wherewith I can supply him, that *distress* of his makes it a *dutie* in me so to supply him, and this in all kindes of wants. Now the ground of its being a *duty* is, that God hath given men abilities not only for their own use, but for the advantage and benefit of others, and therefore what is thus given for their use, becomes a debt to them, whenever their need requires it. Thus he that is *ignorant* and wants knowledge is to be *instructed* by him, that hath it, and this is one special end, why that knowledge is given him: *The tongue of the learned is given to speak a word in season.* Esay 50. 4. He that is in *sadness*, and affliction, is to be *comforted* by him that is himself in cheerfulness. This we see Saint *Paul* makes the end of Gods comforting him, that he *might be able to comfort them that are in any trouble*,

Part. 13. *Dues to those in want.*

273

2 Cor. 1. 4. He that is in any course of sin, and **SUNDAY**
wants reprehension and counsel, must have **XIII.**

that want supplied to him by those who have such abilities, and opportunities, as may make it likely to do good. That this is a justice we owe to our neighbour, appears plainly by that text, *Levit. 19. 17. Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thy heart, thou shalt in any wise reprove him, and not suffer sin upon him;* where we are under the same obligation to reprove him, that we are not to hate him. He that lies under any slander, or unjust defamation, is to be defended, and cleared by him, that knows his innocence, or else he makes himself guiltie of the slander, because he neglects to do that which may remove it; and how great an injustice, that of slandering our neighbour is, I have already shewed.

31. *Lastly*, he that is in poverty and need, *To the poor.* must be relieved by him that is in plentie; and he is bound to it, not only in charitie, but even in justice. *Solomon* calls it a due, *Prov. 3. 27. Withhold not good from him to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it:* and what that good is, he explains in the verie next verse: *Say not to thy neighbour, go and come again, and to morrow I will give, when thou hast it by thee:* It seems 'tis the withholding a due, so much as to defer giving to our poor neighbour. And we finde God did among the *Jews* separate a certain portion of everie mans increase to the use of the poor, a tenth every third year (which is all one with a thirtieth part

SUNDAY
XIII.

part every year,) *Dent.* 14. 28, 29. And this was to be paid not as a charity, or liberality, but as a debt; they were unjust, if they withheld it. And surely we have no reason to think, that Christian justice is sunk so much below the *Jewish*, that either nothing at all, or a less proportion is now required of us. I wish our practice were but at all answerable to our obligation in this point, and then surely we should not see so many *Lazarus's* lie unrelieved at our doors, they having a better right to our superfluities, than we our selves have, and then what is it, but arrant robbery to bestow that upon our vanities, nay our sins, which should be their portion?

*God with-
draws
those abili-
ties which
are not thus
employed.*

32. In all the foregoing *cases*, he that hath ability is to look upon himself; as Gods steward, who hath put it into his hands to distribute to them, that want, and therefore not to do it, is the same injustice and fraud, that it would be in any *Steward* to purse up that money for his private benefit, which was intrusted to him, for the maintenance of the family, and he that shall do thus hath just reason to expect the doom of the *unjust steward*, *Luke* 16. *to be put out of the stewardship*, to have those abilities taken from him, which he hath so unfaithfully employed. And as for all the rest, so particularly for that of *wealth*, 'tis very commonly to be observed, that it is withdrawn from those that thus defraud the poor of their parts, the gripping miser coming often by strange undiscernable ways

wayes to poverty; and no wonder, he having no title to Gods blessing on his heap, who does not consecrate a part to him in his poor members. And therefore we see the *Israelites* before they could make that challenge of Gods promise to bless them, *Dent. 26. 15. Look down from thy holy habitation and bless thy people Israel, &c.* they were first to pay the poor mans tithes, *ver. 12.* without which they could lay no claim to it. This withholding more than is meet, as *Solomon* sayes, *Prov. 11. 24. tends to poverty;* and therefore as thou wouldst play the good husband for thy self, be carefull to performe this justice according to thy ability to all that are in want.

33. The third qualification is that of Relation, and of that there may be divers sorts, arising from divers grounds, and duties, answerable to each of them. There is first a relation of a Debter to a Creditor; and he that stands in that relation to any, whether by virtue of bargain, loan, or promise, 'tis his duty to pay justly what he owes if he be able (as on the other side if he be not; 'tis the Creditors, to deal charitably and Christianly with him, and not to exact of him beyond his ability,) But I need not insist on this, having already by shewing the sin of withholding debts, informed you of this duty.

Duties in
respect of
relation.

34. There is also a relation of an obliged person to his Benefactor, that is, one that hath done him good, of what kind soever, whether spiritual or corporal; and the duty of that person.

Gratitude
to benefa-
ctors.

SUNDAY
XIII.

son is, *first thankfulness*, that is, a ready and hearty acknowledgement of the courtesie received: *secondly*, prayer for Gods blessings, and rewards upon him; and *thirdly*, an endeavour, as opportunity and ability serves, to make returns of kindness, by doing good turns back again. This duty of *gratitude* to *Benefactors* is so generally acknowledged by all, even the most barbarous and savagest of men, that he must have put off much of his humane nature, that refuses to performe it. The very *Publicans* and *sinners*, as our *Saviour* sayes, do good to those that do good to them.

The contra-
ry too com-
mon.

35. Yet how many of us fail even in this, how frequent is it to see men, not onely neglect to repay courtesies, but returne injuries in stead of them? it is too observable in many particulars, but in none more, then in the case of *advice*, and *admonition*, which is of all others, the most precious part of kindness, the reallest good turn that can be done from one man to another. And therefore those that do this to us, should be look'd on, as our prime and *greatest benefactors*. But alas! how few are there that can finde gratitude, shall I say? nay patience for such a courtesie? Go about to admonish a man of a fault, or tell him of an Errour, he presently looks on you, as his enemy, you are, as *S. Paul* tells the *Galatians*, Chap. 4. 16. *become his enemy because you tell him the truth*; such a pride there is in mens hearts, that they must not be told of any thing amiss, though it be with no other in-
cent

rent, but that they may amend it. A strange madness this is, the same that it would be in a sick man, to fly in the face of him that comes to cure him, on a fancy that he disparaged him in supposing him sick; so that we may well say with the Wise man, *Prov. 12, 1. He that hateth reproof is brutish.* There cannot be in the world a more unhappy temper, for it fortifies a man in his sins, raises such Mounts and Bulwarks about them, that no man can come to assault them; and if we may believe *Solomon*, *destruction will not fail to attend it, Prov. 29. 1 He that being often reprov'd hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy.* But then again in respect of the admonisher, 'tis the greatest injustice, I may say, cruelty that can be, he comes in tenderness, and compassion to rescue thee from danger, and to that purpose puts himself upon a very uneasy task; for such the generall impatience men have to admonition, hath now made it; and what a defeat, what a grief is it to him to finde, that instead of reforming the *first* fault, thou art run into a *second*; to wit, that of causless displeasure against him? This is one of the worst, and yet I doubt, the commonest sort of unthankfulness to *Benefactors*, and so a great failing in that duty we owe to that sort of relation. But perhaps these will be look't on as remote relations (yet 'tis sure they are such as challenge all that duty I have assigned to them) I shall in the next place proceed to those relations; which are by all acknowledged to be of the greatest nearness.

PARTITION XIV.

*Of Duty to Magistrates, Pastors.
Of the duty of Parents to Chil-
dren, &c. Of Childrens duty un-
to Parents, &c.*

*Duty to
Parents.*

§. I. **T**HE first of those nearer sorts of relations, is that of a *Parent*; and here it will be necessarie to consider the severall sorts of *Parents*, according to which the dutie of them is to be measured. Those are these three, the *Civil*, the *Spiritual*, the *Natural*.

*Duties to
the Su-
pream Ma-
gistrate.*

Honour.

2. The *Civil Parent* is he, whom God hath establisht the *Supream Magistrate*, who by a just right possesses the Throne in a Nation. This is the common Father of all those that are under his authoritie. The dutie we owe to this *Parent*, is, first, *Honour* and *Reverence*, looking on him, as upon one, on whom God hath stamped much of his own power and authoritie, and therefore paying him all honour and esteem, never daring, upon any pretence whatsoever, to speak evil of the Ruler of our people, Act. 23. 5.

Tribute.

3. Secondly, Paying *Tribute*; This is expressly commanded by the Apostle, Rom. 13. 6. *Pay ye Tribute also, for they are Gods Ministers*

fers attending continually upon this very thing. SUNDAY
 God has set them apart as Ministers for the XIV.
 common good of the people, and therefore
 'tis all justice, they should be maintained
 and supported by them. And indeed when
 it is considered, what are the cares and trou-
 bles of that high calling, how many thorns
 are platted in every Crown, we have verie
 little reason to envie them these dues; and it
 may truly be said, there is none of their poor
 labouring subjects that earns their living so
 hardly.

4. *Thirdly,* We are to pray for them: this *Prayers*
 is also expressely commanded by the Apostle, *for them,*
 1 Tim. 2. 2. to be done for *Kings, and for all*
that are in authority. The businesses of that
 calling are so weightie, the dangers and ha-
 zards of it so great, that they of all others
 need prayers for Gods direction, assistance,
 and blessing, and the prayers that are thus
 poured out for them, will return into our own
 bosomes, for the blessings they receive from
 God tend to the good of the people, to their
living a quiet and peaceable life, as it is in the
 close of the verse forementioned.

5. *Fourthly,* We are to pay them *Obe-*
dience. This is likewise strictly charged by
 the Apostle, 1 Peter 2. 13. *Submit your selves*
to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake,
whether it be to the King as Supream, or unto Go-
vernours as those that are sent by him: We owe
 such an *obedience* to the supream power, that
 whoever is authorized by him, we are to sub-

SUNDAY
XIV.

mit to; and S. Paul likewise is most full to this purpose, *Romans 13. 1. Let every soul be subject to the higher powers: And again, Ver. 2. Whosoever resisteth the powers, resisteth the Ordinance of God.* And 'tis observable that these precepts were given at a time, when those powers were Heathens, and cruel persecutors of Christianity; to shew us, that no pretence of the wickedness of our Rulers can free us of this dutie. An obedience we must pay either *Active* or *Passive*: the *Active* in the case of all lawful commands; that is, when ever the Magistrate commands something, which is not contrarie to some command of God, we are then bound to act according to that command of the Magistrate, to do the things he requires. But when he enjoyns any thing contrarie to what God hath commanded, we are not then to pay him this *active obedience*; we may, nay we must refuse thus to act, (yet here we must be verie well assured that the thing is so contrarie, and not pretend conscience for a cloak of stubbornness) we are in that case to *obey God rather then man*. But even this is a season for the *Passive obedience*; we must patiently suffer, what he inflicts on us, for such refusal, and not, to secure our selves, rise up against him. *For who can stretch his hand against the Lords anointed, and be guiltless?* Sayes David to Abisbai, 1 Samuel 26. 9. and that at a time when David was under a great persecution from *Saul*, nay, had also the assurance of the Kingdome after him;

him; and Saint Pauls sentence in this case is most heavie, *Rom. 13. 2. They that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.* Here is very small encouragement to any to rise up against the lawful Magistrate, for though they should so far prosper here, as to secure themselves from him by this means, yet there is a King of Kings from whom no power can shelter them, and this damnation in the close will prove a sad prize of their victories. What is on the other side the duty of the Magistrate to the people will be vain to mention here, none of that rank being like to read this Treatise, and it being very useles for the people to inquire, what is the dutie of their Supream, wherein the most are already much better read, then in their own, it may suffice them to know that whatsoever his dutie is, or how-ever performed, he is accountable to none but God, and no failing of his part can warrant them to fail of theirs.

6. The second sort of *Parents* are the *spiritual*; that is, the *Ministers* of the Word, whether such, as be *Governours* in the *Church*, or others under them, who are to perform the same offices to our Souls, that our natural parents do to our bodies. Thus S. Paul tells the *Corinthians*, that in *Christ Jesus* he had begotten them through the Gospel, 1 Cor. 4. 15. and the *Galatians*, Chap. 4. 19. that he travels in birth of them, till *Christ* be formed in them: And again, 1 Cor. 3. 2. He had fed them with *Milk*; that is, such Do-

Duties to
our Pa-
stors.

SUNDAY
XIV.

strives as were agreeable to that infant state of Christianity they were then in; but he had *stronger meat for them of full age, Heb. 5.14.* All these are the Offices of a Parent, and therefore they that perform them to us, may well be accounted as such.

Love.

7. Our duty to these is *first to love them*, to bear them that kindness, which belongs to those who do us the greatest benefits. This is required by *S. Paul, 1 Thes. 5. 13. I beseech you, bretheren, mark them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you, and esteem them very highly in love for their works sake.* The work is such as ought in all reason to procure them love, it being of the highest advantage to us.

Esteem.

8. Secondly, 'tis our duty to *value and esteem* them, as we see in the text now mentioned; and surely this is most reasonable, if we consider either the nature of their work, or who it is that imployes them. The nature of their work is of all others the most excellent; we use to value other professions proportionably to the dignity and worth of the things they deal in. Now surely there is no Merchandize of equall worth with a Soul, and this is their Traffick, rescuing precious Souls from perdition. And if we consider further, who it is that imployes them, it yet addes to the reverence due to them. They are *Ambassadors for Christ, 2 Cor. 5. 20.* and Ambassadors are by the Laws of all Nations to be used with a respect answerable to the quality of those

those that send them. Therefore Christ tells his disciples, when he sends them out to preach, *He that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.* Luke 10. 16. It seems there is more depends on the despising of Ministers, then men ordinarily consider, 'tis the despising of God and Christ both. Let those think of this, who make it their pastime, and sport to affront and deride this calling. And let those also, who dare presume to exercise the Offices of it, without being lawfully called to it, which is a most high presumption; 'tis as if a man on his own head should go, as an Ambassadour from his Prince; the Apostle says of the Priests of the Law, which yet are inferiour to those of the Gospel, *That no man taketh this honour to himself, but he which was called of God.* Heb. 5. 4. How shall then any man dare to assume this greater honour to himself, that is not called to it? Neither will it suffice to say, they have the *inward call* of the spirit; for since God hath established an order in the Church, for the admitting men to this Office, they that shall take it upon them without that authority, resist that ordinance, and are but of the number of those thieves and robbers, as our Saviour speaks, *John 10. Which come not in by the door.* Besides the sad experience of these times shew, that many who pretend most to this inward call of the spirit, are called by some other spirit, then that of God, the do-
ctrines.

SUNDAY

XIV.

ctrines they vent, being usually directly contrary to that word of his, on which all true Doctrines must be founded. Such are to be lookt on as those seducers, those false prophets, whereof we are so often warned in the *Epistles* of the *Apostles*. And whosoever countenances them, or follows them, partakes with them in their guilt. It is recorded of *Jereboam*, as a crying sin, that he made of *the meanest of the people priests*; that is, such as had by Gods institution no right to it, and whoever hearkens to these *uncalled preachers* runs into that very sin, for without the encouragement of being followed, they would not long continue in the course, and therefore they that give them that encouragement, have much to answer for, and are certainly guilty of the sin of despising their true Pastors, when they shall thus set up these false apostles against them. This is a guilt this age is too much concerned in, God in his mercy so timely convince us of it, as may put a stop to that confusion and impiety, which breaks in so fast upon us by it.

Maintenance.

9. *Thirdly*, We owe to them *maintenance*: but of this I have spoken already in the first part of this Book, and shall not here repeat.

Obedience.

Fourthly, We owe them *obedience*, Obey them, saith the Apostle, *that have the rule over you and submit your selves, for they watch for your Souls*, Heb. 13. 17. This *obedience* is to be paid them in spirituall things; that is, whatsoever they out of Gods word shall declare

to

ious, to be Gods Commands, these we are diligently to obey, remembering that it is not they, but God requires it, according to that of Christ, *he that heareth you, heareth me*, Luke, 10. 16. And this whether it be delivered by the way of publick preaching, or private exhortation, for in both, so long as they keep them to the rule, which is Gods Word, they are the *Messengers of the Lord of Hosts*. Mal. 2. 7. This obedience the Apostle inforceth from a double motive, one taken from their Ministry, another from themselves. *They watch*, sayes he, *for your Souls, as they that must give an account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief*. The people are by their obedience to enable their Pastors to give a comfortable account of their souls, and it is a most unkind returne of all their care and labours; to be put to grieve for the ill success of them. But then in the *second* place, tis their own concernment also; they may put their Ministers to the discomfort of seeing all their pains cast away, but themselves are like to get little by it, that (sayes the Apostle, *Heb. 13. 17,*) *will be unprofitable for you*; 'tis your selves, that will finally prove the losers by it, you lose all those glorious rewards, which are offered, as the crown of this obedience; you get nothing but an addition to your sin and punishment, for as our Saviour tels the Pharisees, *If he had not come and spoken to them they had not had sin*, *Joh. 15. 24.* that is, in comparison with what they then had; so certainly they
that

SUNDAY that never had the Gospel preached to them,
XIV. are much more innocent then they that have heard and resisted it. And for the punishment, what Christ told those to whom he had preached, *That it should be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon, which were Heathen Cities, then for them,* the same undoubtedly we may conclude of our selves.

*Prayers
for them.*

10. *Lastly,* We are to pray for them; This **S. Paul** every where requires of his Spirituall children; thus *Eph. 6. 7, 8.* having commanded prayer for all Saints, he adds, *And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the Gospel;* and so again, *Col. 4. 3.* And this remains still a duty to these Spirituall Fathers, to pray for such assistances of Gods Spirit to them, as may enable them rightly to discharge that Holy Calling. I shall omit to set down here, what is the duty of Ministers to the people, upon the same consideration, on which I forbore to mention the duty of Magistrates

*Duties to
our natural
Parents.*

Reverence.

11, The *third* sort of parent is the *natural*, the fathers of our flesh, as the Apostle calls them, *Heb. 12. 9.* And to these we owe severall duties, as *first*, we owe them *reverence*, and respect; we must behave our selves towards them with all humility and observance, and must not upon any pretence of infirmity in them, despise or contemn them, either in outward behaviour, or so much as inwardly in our hearts. If indeed they have infirmities,

Part. 14. Of Duty to Parents.

287

SUNDAY
XIV.

it must be our business to cover, and conceal them; like *Shem* and *Japhet*; who while *Curse* *Cham* publisht and disclosed the nakedness of their father, covered it, Gen. 9. 23. and that in such a manner too, as even themselves might not behold it. We are as much as may be to keep our selves from looking on those nakednesses of our parents, which may tempt us to think irreverently of them. This is very contrary to the practice of too many children, who do not onely publish and deride the infirmities of their Parents, but pretend they have those infirmities, they have not; there is ordinarily such a pride, and headiness in youth, that they cannot abide to submit to the counsels and directions of their Elders, and therefore to shake them off, are willing to have them pass for the effects of dotage, when they are indeed the fruits of sobriety and experience. To such the exhortation of *Solomon* is very necessary, *Prov.* 24. 22. *Hearken to thy father that begot thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old.* A multitude of texts more there are in that book to this purpose, which shew that the wisest of men thought it necessary for children to attend to the counsell of their parents. But the youth of our age set up for wisdom, the quite contrary way, and think they then become wise, when they are advanced to the despising the counsel, yea mocking the persons of their parents. Let such if they will not practice the exhortations, yet remember the threatening of the wise man, *Pro-*

SUNDAY
XIV.

Love.

30.17. *The eye that mocketh his father and despiseth to obey his mother, the ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young Eagles shall eat it.*

A second dutie to them is love; we are to bear them a real kindness, such as may make us heartily desirous of all manner of good to them, and abhor to do any thing that may grieve or disquiet them. This will appear but common *gratitude*; when 'tis remembred, what our parents have done for us, how they were not onely the instruments of first bringing us into the world, but also of sustaining and supporting us after; and certainly they that rightly weigh the cares and fears, that go to the bringing up of a child, will judge the love of that childe to be but a moderate return for them. This *love* is to be exprest several wayes, *first*, in all kindness of *behaviour*, carrying our selves not only with an awe and respect, but with kindness and affection, and therefore most gladly and readily doing those things, which may bring joy and comfort to them, and carefully avoiding whatever may grieve and afflict them. *Secondly*, this love is to be exprest in *praying for them*. The debt a child owes to a parent is so great, that he can never hope himself to discharge it, he is therefore to call in Gods aid, to beg of him, that he will reward all the good his parents have done for him, by multiplying his blessings upon them; what shall we then say to those children, that instead of calling to heaven for blessings on their parents, ransack hell for *curses* on them, and

Part. 14. *Duty of Children.*

289

SUNDAY
XIV.

and pour out the blackest *execrations* against them? This is a thing so horrid, that one would think there needed no perswasion against it, because none could be so vile, as to fall into it; but we see God himself, who best knows mens hearts, law it possible; and therefore laid the heaviest punishment upon it: *He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death*, Exod. 21. 17. And alas! our daily experience tells us, 'tis not onely possible but common, even this of uttering curses. But 'tis to be feared, there is another, yet more common, that is, the *wishing curses*, though fear or shame keep them from speaking out. How many children are there, that either through impatience of the Government, or greediness of the possessions of the Parents, have *wish'd* their deaths? But whoever doth so let him remember, that how sliely and fairly soever he carry it before men, there is one that sees those secretest wishes of his heart, and in his sight he assuredly passes for this hainous offender, a curser of his Parents. And then let it be considered, that God hath as well the power of punishing, as of seeing, and therefore since he hath pronounced death to be the reward of that sin, 'tis not unreasonable to expect he may himself inflict it; that they who *watch* for the death of their Parents, may untimely *meet* with their own. The *fifth* Commandment promiseth *long life* as the reward of honouring the Parent, to which 'tis very agreeable that untimely death be the punishment of the contrary,
and

SUNDAY and sure there is nothing more highly contrary
XIV. to that duty, then this we are now speaking of,
 the cursing our Parents.

Obedience.

14. The *third* dutie we owe to them is *Obedience*; This is not onely contained in the fifth Commandement, but expressly Injoynd in other places of Scripture, *Ephes. 6. 1. Children obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right;* and again, *Col. 3. 20. Children obey your Parents in all things, for this is well-pleasing to the Lord.* We owe them an *obedience* in all things, unless where their commands are contrarie to the commands of God, for in that case our dutie to God must be preferred, and therefore if any Parent shall be so wicked, as to require his childe to steal, to lie, or to do any unlawful thing, the childe then offends not against his dutie, though he disobey that command; nay, he must disobey, or else he offends against a higher dutie, even that he owes to God; his Heavenly Father. Yet when 'tis thus necessarie to refuse obedience, he should take care to do it in such a modest, and respectful manner that it may appear 'tis *conscience* onely, and not *stubbornness* moves him to it. But in case of all lawful commands; that is, when the thing commanded is either good, or not evil, when it hath nothing in it contrarie to our dutie to God, there the childe is bound to obey, be the command in a weightier or lighter matter. How little this dutie is regarded is too manifest every where in the world, where Parents generally have their children no longer

ger under command, then they are under the rod; when they are once grown up, they think themselves free from all obedience to them; or if some do continue to pay it, yet let the motive of it be examined, and 'twill in too many be found only Worldly Prudence; They fear to displease their Parents, least they should shorten their hand toward them, and so they shall lose somewhat by it; but how few are there that obey purely upon conscience of dutie? This sin of *Disobedience to Parents* was by the Law of *Moses* punishable with death, as you may read *Dent. 21. 18.* but if Parents now a dayes should proceed so with their children, many might soon make themselves childless.

15. But of all the acts of *disobedience*, that of *marrying against the consent of the Parent*, is one of the highest. Children are so much the goods, the Possessions of their Parent, that they cannot without a kinde of *theft*, give away themselves without the allowance of those, that have the right in them; and therefore we see under the *Law*, the *Maid that had made any vow, was not suffered to perform it, without the Consent of the Parent.* *Numb. 30. 5.* the right of the Parent was thought of force enough to cancel, and make void the Obligation, even of a *vow*, and therefore surely it ought to be so much considered by us as to keep us from making any such, whereby that right is infringed.

16. A fourth duty to the Parent is to assist and *Ministring to their wants.*

SUNDAY
XIV.

and Minister to them in all their *wants* of what kinde soever, whether weakness, and sickness of body, decayedness of understanding, or poverty, and lowness in estate; in all these the childe is bound according to his ability, to relieve and assillt them: for the two former, weakness of body, and infirmity of minde, none can doubt of the duty, when they remember how every childe did in his infancy receive the very same benefit from the Parent; the childe had then no strength to support, no understanding to guide it self; the care of the Parents was fain to supply both these to it, and therefore in common gratitude, whenever either of these becomes the Parents case, as sometimes by great age, or some accident both do, the childe is to perform the same offices back again to them. As for that of *Relieving* their poverty, there is the very same Obligation to that with the former, it being but just to sustain thy Parent who has formerly sustained thee: but besides this, Christ himself teaches us that this is contained within the precept of honouring their Parents; for when *Mar. 7. 13.* he accuses the Pharisees of *rejecting the Commandement of God, to cleave to their own traditions*, he instances in this particular, concerning the relieving of Parents, whereby 'tis manifest that this is a part of that duty which is enjoyned in the *fifth* Commandement, as you may see at large in the Text, and such a duty it is that no presence can absolve, or acquit us of it. How then

Part. 4. Of Duty to Parents. 293

then shall those answer it, that deny relief SUNDAY
XIV.
to their poor Parents, that cannot part with their own excesses, and superfluities, which are indeed their sins, to satisfy the necessities of those to whom they owe their being? Nay, some there are yet worse, who out of pride scorn to own their parents in their poverty: Thus it often happens, when the *Childe* is advanced to dignity or wealth, they think it a disparagement to them to look on their Parents that remain in a low condition, it being the betraying, as they think, to the world the meanness of their birth, and so the poor Parent fares the worse for the prosperity of his childe. This is such a pride and unnaturalness together, as will surely finde a sharp vengeance from God; for if *Solomon* observe of *Pride* alone, that it is the *forerunner of destruction*, *Prov. 16. 18.* we may much rather conclude so of it, when it is thus accompanied.

17. To this that hath been said of the duty Duty to be
paid even
to the worst
of Parents.
of *Children* to their *Parents*, I shall adde only this; that no unkindness, no fault of the Parent, can acquit the childe of this duty; but as *S. Peter* tells servants. 1 *Peter* 2. 18. that they *must be subject not only to the good and gentle Masters, but also to the froward*; so certainly it belongs to children to perform duty not only to the kind and vertuous, but even to the *harsh*, and wicked't Parent. For though the gratitude due to a kinde Parent, be a a very forcible motive to make the

SUNDAY
XIV.

childe pay his duty, yet that is not the only nor chiefest ground of it; that is laid in the Command of God, who requires us thus to honour our Parents, and therefore though we should suppose a Parent so unnatural, as never to have done any thing to oblige the childe, (which can hardly be imagined) yet still the Command of God continues in force, and we are in conscience of that, to perform that duty to our Parents, though none of the other tye of gratitude, should lie on us:

Duty of
Parents to
Children.

But as this is due from the childe to the Parents, so on the other side there are other things also due from the *Parents* to the *Childe*, and that throughout the several states & Ages of it.

To nourish
them.

18. *First*, There is the care of *nourishing* and *sustaining* it, which begins from the very birth, and continues a duty from the Parent, till the childe be able to perform it to himself; this is a duty, which nature teaches; even the *savage beasts* have a great care and tenderness in nourishing their young, and therefore may serve to reproach and condemn all Parents, who shall be so unnatural as to neglect this. I shall not here enter into the question, *Whether the Mother be obliged to give the Childe its first nourishment, by giving it Suck her self*, because 'twill not be possible to affirm universally in the Case, there being many circumstances, which may alter it, and make it not only lawful, but best not to do it; all I shall say, is, that where no impediment

Part. 14. Parents Duty to Children. 295

ment of sickness, weakness, or the like does happen, 'tis surely best for the Mother her self to perform this office, there being many advantages to the childe by it, which a good Mother ought so far to consider, as not to sell them to her own sloth, or niceness, or any such unworthy motive; for where such only are the grounds of forbearing it, they will never be able to justify the omission, they being themselves unjustifiable.

But besides this *first* care, which belongs to the body of the childe, there is another, which should begin near as early, which belongs to their Souls, and that is the *bringing them to the Sacrament of Baptisme*, thereby to procure them an early right to all those precious advantages, which that Sacrament conveys to them. This is a duty the *parents* ought not to delay, it being most reasonable, that they who have been instruments to convey the stain and pollution of sin to the poor *Infant*, should be very earnest and industrious to have it washed off, as soon as may be: Besides the life of so tender a creature is but a blast, and many times gone in a moment; and though we are not to despair of Gods mercy to those poor children, who die without Baptisme, yet surely those parents commit a great fault, by whose neglect it is, that they want it.

19. Secondly, The Parents must provide for the *education* of the childe; they must, as *Solomon* speaks; *Proverbs 22.6. Train up the childe*

SUNDAY
XIV.

*Bring them
to Baptisme.*

*Educate
them.*

SUNDAY
XIV.

childe in the way he should go. As soon therefore as *children* come to the *use of reason*, they are to be instructed, and that first in those things, which concern their eternal well-being, they are by little and little to be taught all those things which God hath commanded them, as their duty to perform; as also what glorious rewards he hath provided for them, if they do it, and what grievous and eternal punishments, if they do it not. These things ought as early, as is possible, to be instilled into the mindes of children, which (like *new vessels*) do usually keep the savour of that which is first put into them; and therefore it nearly concerns all Parents to look they bear first thus seasoned with Vertue and Religion. 'Tis sure if this be neglected, there is one ready at hand to fill them with the contrarie, the *Devil* will be diligent enough to instill into them all wickedness and vice, even from their cradles, and there being also in all our natures so much the greater aptness to evil, then to good, there is need of great care and watchfulness, to prevent those endeavours of that enemy of Souls, which can no way be, but by possessing them at first with good things, breeding in them a love to vertue, and a hatred of vice; that so when the *temptations* come, they may be armed against them. This surely is above all things the *duty of Parents* to look after, and the neglect of it is a horrible cruelty; we justly look upon those Parents, as most unnatural wretches, that take away the life

Part. 14.ⁿ Parents duty to Children. 297

SUNDAY
XIV.

life of their childe; but alas! that is mercy and tenderness, compared to this of neglecting his education, for by that he ruins his Soul, makes him miserable eternally; and God knowes multitudes of such cruel Parents there are in the world, that thus give up their children to be *possess'd by the Devil*, for want of an early acquainting them with the wayes of God; nay, indeed how few there are that do conscionably perform this duty, is too apparent by the strange rudeness and ignorance that is generally among youth: the children of those who call themselves Christians, being frequently as ignorant of God and Christ as the meerest Heathens. But whoever they are, that thus neglect this great duty, let them know that it is not only a fearful misery they bring upon their poor children, but also a horrible guilt upon themselves. For as God sayes to the careless watchmen, *Ezek. 3. 18. That if any soul perish by his negligence, that soul shall be required at his hands*; so surely will it fare with all Parents, who have this office of watchmen intrusted to them by God over their own children. A second part of education is the bringing them up to some imployment, buying them in some honest exercise, whereby they may avoid that great *snare of the Devil, Idleness*; and also be taught some useful Art or Trade, whereby when they come to age, they may become profitable to the *Commonwealth*, and able to get an honest living to themselves.

SUNDAY

. XIV.

Means to
wards the
education
of children.

20. To this great duty of *Educating of Children*, there is required as means, *first, Encouragement*; *secondly, Correction*: *Encouragement* is *first* to be tried, we should endeavour to make children in love with dutie, by offering them rewards and invitations, and whenever they do well take notice of it, and encourage them to go on. It is an ill course some parents hold, who think they must never appear to their children but with a face of fowreness and austeritie; this seems to be that, which *S. Paul* forwarns Parents of, when he bids *fathers* not to *provoke their children to wrath*, *Col. 3. 21*. To be as harsh and unkind to them, when they do well, as if they do ill, is the way to provoke them; and then the *Apostle* tells us in the same verse, what will be the issue of it, they will be discouraged, they will have no heart to go on in any good course, when the Parent affords them no countenance. The *second* means is correction, and this becomes seasonable, when the former will do no good, when all fair means, perswasions, and encouragements prevail not, then there is a necessity of using sharper; and let that be first tried in words, I mean not by railing and foul language, but in sober, yet sharp reproof; but if that fail too, then proceed to blows; and in this case as *Solomon* sayes, *He that spareth his rod, hateth his son*, *Prov. 13. 24*. 'Tis a cruel fondness, that to spare a few stripes at present, will adventure him to those sad mischiefs, which commonly befall the childe, that

is

Part. 14. Parents duty to Children. 299

SUNDAY
XIV.

is left to himself. But then this correction must be given in such a manner, as may be likely to do good; to which purpose it must first be given timely; the child must not be suffered to run on in any ill, till it have got a habit, and a stubbornness too. This is a great error in many Parents, they will let their children alone for divers years, to do what they list, permit them to lie, to steal, without ever so much as rebuking them, nay, perhaps please themselves to see the wittie shifts of the childe, and think it matters not what they do while they are little: But alas! all that while the vice gets root and that many times so deep a one, that all they can do afterwards, whether by words or blows, can never pluck it up. Secondly, *Correction* must be moderate, not exceeding the qualitie of the fault, nor the tenderness of the childe. Thirdly, it must not be given *in rage*, if it be, it will not only be in danger of being immoderate, but it will lose its effect upon the childe, who will think he is corrected, not because he has done a fault, but because his parent is angry, and so will rather blame the Parent than himself, whereas on the contrarie care should be taken to make the childe as sensible of the fault, as of the smart, without which he will never be thoroughly amended.

21. Thirdly, after children are grown up, and are past the age of *education*, there are yet other offices for the Parent to perform to them; the Parent is still to Watch over them, in respect

The parent
to watch o-
ver their
souls even
when they
are grown
up.

SUNDAY of their souls, to observe how they practise
XIV. those precepts which are given them in their education, and accordingly to exhort, encourage, or reprove, as they finde occasion.

*To provide
 for their
 subsistence.*

22. So also for their *outward estate*, they are to put them into some *course of living* in the world; if God have blest the Parents with wealth, according to what he hath, he must distribute to his children, remembering that since he was the instrument of bringing them into the world, he is according to his ability to provide for their comfortably living in it; they are therefore to be look't on as very unnatural parents, who, so they may have enough to spend in their own riots and excess, care not what becomes of their children, never think of providing for them. *Another* fault is usual among Parents in this business; they defer all the provisions for them, *til themselves be dead*, heap up perhaps great matters for them against that time, but in the mean time afford them not such a competency, as may enable them to live in the world. There are several mischiefs come from this: *First*, it lessens the child's affection to his parent, nay, sometimes it proceeds so far, as to make him wish his death, which though it be such a fault, as no temptation can excuse in a child, yet 'tis also a great fault in a Parent, to give that temptation. *Secondly*, it puts the child upon shifts and tricks; many times dishonest ones, to supply his necessities; this is, I doubt not a common effect of it, the hardness of Parents

has

Part. 14. *Parents Duty to Children.* 301

SUNDAY
XIV.

has often put men upon very unlawful courses, which when they are once acquainted with, perhaps they never leave, though the *first* occasion ceate; and therefore Parents ought to beware how they run them upon those hazards. Besides the *parent* loses that contentment, which he might have in seeing his children live prosperously and comfortably, which none but an arrant *Earth-worm* would exchange for the vain imaginary pleasure of having money in his chest. But in this business of *providing for children*, there is yet another thing to be heeded, and that is, that the Parent get that *wealth honestly*, which he makes their portion; else 'tis very far from being a provision, there is such a curse goes along with an ill-gotten estate, that he that leaves such a one to his childe, doth but cheat and deceive him, makes him believe he has left him wealth, but has withal put such a canker in the bowels of it, that is sure to eat it out. This is so common an observation, that I need say nothing to confirm the truth of it; would God it were as generally laid to heart, as it seems to be generally taken notice of: Then surely Parents would not account it a reasonable motive to *unjust dealing*, that they may thereby provide for their children, for this is not a way of providing for them; nay, 'tis the way to spoil them of whatever they have lawfully gathered for them, the least mite of unlawful gain being of the nature of leaven, which *sowres the whole lump*, bringing down curses upon all
a man

SUNDAY
XIV.

a man possesseth. Let all Parents therefore satisfie themselves with such provisions for their children as God shall enable them honestly to make, assuring themselves how little soever it be, 'tis a better portion then the greatest wealth unjustly gotten, according to that of Solomon, *Prov. 16. 8. Better is a little with righteousness, then great revenues without right.*

To give
them good
example.

23. A fourth thing the Parent owes to the child is *Good Example*, he is not only to set him rules of vertue, and godliness; but he must himself give him a pattern in his own practice; we see the force of example is infinitely beyond that of precept, especially where the person is one, to whom we bear a reverence, or with whom we have a continual conversation; both which usually meet in a Parent. It is therefore a most necessary care in all Parents to behave themselves so before their children that their example may be a means of winning them to vertue; But alas! *this age* affords little of this care, nay, so far 'tis from it, that there are none more frequently the instruments of corrupting children, then their own Parents. And indeed how can it be otherwise, while men give themselves liberty to all wickedness, 'tis not to be hoped, but that the children which observe it, will imitate it; the childe that sees his father *drunk*, will sure think, he may be so too, as well as his father. So he that hears him *swear*, will do the like, and so for all other vices, and if any Parent
that

Part. 14. Parents Duty to Children.

303

SUNDAY
XIV.

is thus wicked himself, should happen to have so much more care of his childes Soul, then his own; as to forbid him the things which himself practises, or correct him for doing them; 'tis certain the childe will account this a great injustice in his father, to punish him for that which himself freely does, and so he is never likely to be wrought upon by it. This consideration lays a most strict law upon all Parents, to live *Christianly*, for otherwise they do not only hazard their own Souls, but those of their children also, and as it were purchase an estate of inheritance in Hell.

24. A *first* duty of Parents is *blessing their children*; the way of doing that is double, *first*, by their prayer; they are by daily and earnest prayer to commend them to Gods protection and blessing, both for their spiritual and temporalestate; and *secondly* by their piety; they are to be such persons themselves as that a blessing may descend from them upon their posterity. This is often promised in Scriptures to godly men, that their *seed shall be blessed*. Thus in the *second Commandment*, God promises to *show mercy to the thousand generation of them that love him and keep his commandments*. And it is very observable in the *Jews*, that though they were a *stiff-necked generation*, and had very grievously provoked God, yet the godliness of their *fore fathers*, *Abraham*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob*, did many times move God to save them from destruction; on the other side, we see that

To bless
them.

even

SUNDAY even good men have fared the worse for the
XIV. iniquities of their fathers, thus when *Josiah* had destroyed idolatry, restored Gods service, and done good beyond all the Kings that were before him, yet there was *an old arrear* of *Manasseh* his grandfather, which all this piety of his would not blot out, but he resolves to cast *Judah* also out of his sight, as you may read at large, 2 Kings 23. If therefore Parents have any bowels, any kindness towards their children, any real desire of their prosperity, let them take care by their own godly life to entail a blessing upon them.

To give no
 unreasonable
 commands.

25. *Sixthly*, Parents must take heed, that they use their power over their children with equity, and moderation, not to oppress them with *Unreasonable Commands*, only to exercise their own authority, but in all things of weight to consider the real good of their children, and to press them to nothing, which may not consist with that. This is a rule whereof Parents may often have use, but in none greater then in the business of *marrying their children*, wherein many that otherwise are good Parents, have been to blame, when out of an eagerness of bestowing them wealthily, they force them to marry utterly against their own inclinations, which is a great tyranny, and that which frequently betrays them to a multitude of mischiefs, such as all the wealth in the world cannot repair. There are two things which Parents ought especially to consider in the *matching their children*; the first,

how they may live *Christianly*, and to purpose to chuse a vertuous and pious person to link them with; *the second* is, how they may live *cheerfully* and comfortably in this world; and to that end though a competency of estate may be necessarie to be regarded, yet any abundance is no way requisite, and therefore that should not be too vehemently sought after; that which much more tends to the happiness of that state, is the mutual kindness, and liking of the parties, without which marriage is of all other the most uncomfortable condition, and therefore no parent ought to thrust a childe into it. I have now done with the first sort of Relation, that of a *Parent*.



PARTITION XV.

Duty to our Brethren, and Relations. Husband, Wife, Friends, Masters, Servants.

THe *second* sort of Relation is that of *Dues to a Brother*; now brotherhood may be *Brethren* twofold, either *natural*, or *spiritual*; the *natural* may in the largest extent contain under it all mankind, all that partake of the same nature; but I shall not consider it so in this place, having already mentioned those general

SUNDAY

XV.

Natural.

neral duties, which belong to all as such. I now speak of that *natural brother-hood*, that is between those that are the children of the same immediate Parent; and the dutie of these is to have united hearts and affections: this nature points out to them, they partaking in a more especial manner, of each others substance, and therefore ought to have the greatest tenderness and kindness, each to other; thus we see *Abraham* make it an argument, why there should be *no contention between him and Lot, because they were brethren*, Gen. 13.8. And though by brethren there is meant *only* cousins, yet that helps the more strongly to conclude, that this neerer relation is in reason to be a greater bar to strife, as also that this kindness is in some degree to be extended to all that have any nearness of blood to us.

The necessity of Love among Brethren.

2. This kindness and *Love* between *Brethren* and *Sisters* ought to be very firmly grounded in their hearts; if it be not, they will be of all others in most danger of disagreeing; for the continual conversation that is among them whilst they are at home in the fathers house, will be apt to minister some occasion of jar. Besides the equality, that is among them in respect of birth, often makes them inclinable to envy each other, when one is in any respect advanced above the other. Thus we see *Josephs* brethren envied him, because he had most of his fathers love, and *Rachel* envied her sister *Leah*, because she was fruitful; therefore for the preventing of such temptations,

let

all who have brethren and sisters, possess their minde with a great and real kindness to them, look on them as parts of themselves, and when they will never think fit either to quarrell with them, or to envy them any advantage, any more then one part of the body does another of the same body, but will strive to advance and help forward the good of each other.

3. The second kind of *Brotherhood* is *spiritual*; that contains all those who profess the same Faith with us: the Church in our *Baptism* becomes a Mother to each baptized person; and then surely they that have the relation of children to her, must have also the relation of brethren to each other; and to this sort of brethren also we owe a great deal of tenderness and affection; the spiritual bond of Religion should, of all others, the most closely unite our hearts. This is the *Brotherhood* which S. Peter exhorts us to love, 1 Peter 2. 17. And to it we are in an especial manner bound to do all good offices, *Do good*, saith the Apostle, *to all, but especially to them that are of the household of Faith*, Gal. 6. 10. Our compassions are to be most melting towards them of others, in all their needs; Christ tells us, that *whosoever gives but a cup of cold water to any in the name of a Disciple, shall not lose his reward*, Mat. 10. 42. From whence we may assure our selves that this peculiar love to Christians as Christians, is very acceptable in his sight.

4. Several duties there are required of us to these brethren; one principal, is the holding

*Spiritual
brother-
hood.*

SUNDAY

XV.

Our duty to
hold com-
munion
with these
brethren.

COMMUNION with them, and that first in Doctrine; we are constantly to continue in the belief and profession of all those necessarie truths, by which we may be markt out as followers, and Disciples of Christ; this is that faith, which S. Jude speaks of, which was once delivered to the Saints, Jude 3. by keeping whereof we continue still united to this spiritual brotherhood, in respect of profession, which we must constantly do, what storms and persecutions soever attend it, according to the exhortation of the Apostle, Heb. 10. 22. *Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering.* Secondly, we are also, as opportunity serves, to communicate with them in all holy offices; we must be diligent in frequenting the assemblies of the Saints, which is as it were the badge of our profession, and therefore he that willingly withdraws himself from these, gives ground to suspect, he will be apt to renounce the other also. But these parts of communion we finde strictly maintained by the first Christians, Acts 2. 42. *They continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers:* They continued, and that stedfastly, they were not frightened from it by any persecutions, though that were a time wherein they were tryed with the sharpest sufferings; which may teach us, that it is not the danger, that attends this duty, can acquit us of it.

To bear
with their
infirmities.

5. Secondly, we are to bear with the Infirmities of our Christian brethren, according

art. 15. *Dues to Brethren.*

309

SUNDAY
XV.

the advice of *S. Paul*, *Romans 15. 1.* We are strong ought to bear the infirmities of weak. If one that holds all necessarie Christian truths, happen yet to be in some errour, we are not for this, either to forsake his communion, or despise his person. This *S. Paul* teaches us in the case of that weak brother, who in errour made a causeless scruple about meats, *1 Cor. 14.* Where he bids the stronger Christians, that is, those who being better instructed, discerned him to be in an errour, yet to receive him nevertheless, and not to despise him; as on the other side, he bids that weak one not to judge the stronger; the lesser differences in communion must be born with on both sides, and must not in the least abate our brotherly charity towards each other.

6. *Thirdly*, we are to endeavour the restoration of any fallen brother, that is, to bring him to repentance, after he hath fallen into any sin. Thus Saint *Paul* commands the *Galatians*, that they should restore him that was overcome in a fault, considering themselves least they were also tempted. We are not to look on him as cast-away, to give him over as utterly desperate, neither are we to triumph over him, in respect of our own innocence, like the proud Pharisee, over the poor Publican, *Luke 18. 11.* but we are meekly to endeavour his recovery, remembering that our own frailty is such, that we are not secure from the like falls.

To restore them after falls.

7. *Fourthly*, We are to have a Sympathy and fellow-feeling with these brethren, to be nearly

To sympathize with them.

SUNDAY
XV.

neerly toucht with whatsoever befalls them, either as they are considered in society, or in single persons. In *society* first, and so they make up a Church, and that either the universall, which is made up of all Believers throughout the world, or any particular Church, which is made up of all the Believers in that particular Nation, and whatever happens to either of these, either the *whole Church* in generall or any such *single part* of it, especially that whereof our selves are members, we are to be much affected and moved with it, to rejoyce in all the prosperities, and to mourn and bewail all the breaches and desolations thereof, and daily and earnestly to pray with *David*, Psal. 51.18. *O be favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem;* and that especially when we see her in distress, and persecution. Whosoever is not thus toucht with the condition of the Church, is not to be look'd on, as a living member of it; for as in the naturall body every member is concerned in the prosperity of the whole, so certainly 'tis here: it was the observation of the Psalmist, that *Gods servants think upon the stones of Sion, and pittie to see her in the dust*, Psal. 102. 14. and surely all his servants are still of the same temper, cannot look on the *ruines and desolations of the Church*, without the greatest sorrow, and lamentation. Secondly, we are to have this fellow-feeling with our brethren, considered as single persons; We are to account our selves concerned in every particular

Christian, so as to partake with him in his occasion either of joy or sorrow. Thus the Apostle exhorts, *Rom. 12. 14. Rejoice with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep*: And again, *1 Cor. 12.* under the similitude of the naturall body he urges this way, *whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it, or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.* All these severall effects of love, we owe to these spirituall bretheren. And this love is that, which Christ has made the badge of his Disciples, *John 13. 35. By this shall all men know that ye are my Disciples, if ye have love one to another*; so that if we mean not to cast off discipleship to Christ, we must not forsake this love to the bretheren.

8. The third relation is that between Husband and Wife: This is yet much nearer then either of the former, as appears by that Text, *Ephes. 5. 31. A man shall leave Father and Mother, and cleave to his Wife, and they two shall be one flesh.* Severall duties there are owing from one of these persons to the other: and first for the Wife, she owes obedience. This is commanded by the Apostle, *Col. 3. 18. Wives submit your selves to your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.* They are to render obedience to their Husbands in the Lord, that is, in all lawfull commands, for otherwise 'tis here, as in the case of all other superiours, God must be obeyed rather then man, and the wife must not upon her hus-

The wife owes to the husband obedience.

SUNDAY
XV.

bands command do any thing which is forbidden by God. But in all things, which do not cross some command of Gods, this precept is of force, and will serve to condemn the *peevish* stubbornness of many wives, who resist the lawfull commands of their husbands, onely because they are impatient of this duty of subjection, which God himself requires of them. But it may be here *asked*, what if the husband command something, which though it be not unlawfull is yet very inconvenient, and *imprudent*, must the wife submit to such a command? To this I *answer*, that it will be no disobedience in her, but duty, calmly and mildly to shew him the inconveniencies thereof and to perswade him to retract that command; but in case she cannot win him to it by fair intreaties, she must neither try sharp language, nor yet finally refuse to obey, nothing but the unlawfulness of the command being sufficient warrant for that.

Fidelity.

9. *Secondly*, The wife owes *Fidelity* to the husband, and that of two sorts; *first*, that of the *bed*, she must keep her self pure and chaste from all strange embraces, and therefore must not so much as give an ear to any that would allure her, but with the greatest abhorrence reject all motions of that sort, and never give any man that has once made such a motion to her, the least opportunity to make a second. *Secondly*, She owes him likewise *Fidelity* in the managing those worldly *affairs* he commits to her, she must order them so, as may be most

to

for her husbands advantage, and not by deceiving and cozening of him imploy his goods to such uses as he allows not of.

10. *Thirdly*, she owes him *Love*, and together with that all friendliness and kindness of conversation: she is to endeavour to bring him as much assistance, and comfort of life, as is possible, that so she may answer that special end of the womans creation, the being a help to her husband, *Gen. 2. 13.* and this in all conditions whether health or sickness, wealth, or poverty, whatsoever estate God by his providence shall cast him into, she must be as much of comfort and support to him, as she can. To this all fullness, and harshness, all brawling, and unquietness is directly contrary, for that makes the wife the burden, and plague of the man, instead of a help and comfort: And sure if it be a fault to behave ones self so to any person, as hath already been shewed, how great must it be to do so to him, to whom the greatest kindness and affection is owing?

11. Nor let such *wives* think that any faults, or provocations of the husband can justify their frowardness; for they will not, either in respect of religion or discretion. Not in religion, for where God has absolutely commanded a duty to be paid, 'tis not any unworthiness of the person can excuse from it; nor in discretion; for the worse a husband is, the more need there is for the wife to carry her self with that gentleness and sweetness, that

The faults of the husband acquits not from these duties.

SUNDAY
XV.

may be most likely to win him. This is the advice S. Peter gave the wives of his time, 1 Peter 3. 1. *Likewise ye wives be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the Word, they may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives.* It seems the good behaviour of the wives was thought a powerful means to win men from *Heathenisme* to *Christianity*; and sure it might now adayes have some good effects, if women would have but the patience to try it: At the least, 'twould have this, that it would keep some tolerable quiet in Families, whereas on the other side the ill fruits of the wives unquietness are so notorious, that there are few neighbourhoods, but can give some instance of it. How many men are there, that to avoid the noise of a froward wife, have fallen to company-keeping, and by that to drunkenness, poverty and a multitude of mischiefs? Let all wives therefore beware of administering that temptation. But whenever there happens any thing, which in kindness to her husband, she is to admonish him of, let it be with that softness and mildness, that it may appear 'tis love, and not anger, that makes her speak.

The Husband owes
to the Wife
love.

12. There are also on the *Husbands* part several duties, there is *first* Love, which Saint Paul requires to be very tender and compassionate towards the wife, as appears by the similitudes he useth in that matter, *Ephes. 5.* The one, that of the love a man bears to his natural body, *No man*, sayes he, Verse 27. ever
hated

Art. 15. *Husbands duty.*

315

SUNDAY
XV.

and his own flesh, but nourisheth it, and cherisheth it. The other love is that Christ bears to his Church; which is far greater, verse 26. which which he sets as patterns for this love of Husbands towards their Wives. This utterly forbids all harshness and roughness to them; men are to use them as parts of themselves, to love them as their own bodies, and therefore to do nothing that may be hurtful and grievous to them, no more then they would cut, and gash their own flesh. Let these husbands that tyrannize over their wives, at scarce use them like humane creatures, consider, whether that be to love them, as their own bodies.

13. A *second* duty of the *Husband*, is *Faithfulness* to the bed. This is by God as well required of the husband, as the wife, and though the world do seem to look on the breach of this duty, with less abhorrence in the husband, yet sure before that Just Judge, the offence will appear no less on the mans side, then the womans. This is certain, 'tis in both a breach of the *vow*, made to each other, at their *Marriage*, and so besides the *uncleanness*, a downright *perjury*, and those differences in the case, which seem to cast the scale, are rather in respect of civil and worldly consideration, then merely of the sin.

14. A *third* part of the *Husband* is to *Maintain* and *provide* for the *Wife*. He is to let her partake with him in those outward good things, wherewith God hath blest him, and

SUNDAY
XV.

and neither by niggardlinesſe debar her of what is fit for her, nor yet by unthriftineſs, ſo waſte his goods, that he ſhall become unable to ſupport her. This is certainly the dutie of the huſband, who being, as hath been ſaid, to account his wife as a part of his own body, muſt have the very ſame care to ſuſtain her, that he hath for himſelf. Yet this is not ſo to be underſtood, as to excuſe the wife from her part of labour and induſtry, when that is requiſite, it being unreaſonable the huſband ſhould toil to maintain the wife in idleneſs.

Inſtruction.

15. *Fourthly*, The huſband is to *inſtruct* the wife, in the things which concern her eternal welfare, if ſhe be ignorant of them. Thus *St. Paul* bids the *wives learn of their huſbands at home*, 1 Cor. 14. 36. which ſuppoſes, that the huſband is to teach her. Indeed it belongs to every Maſter of a Family to endeavour that all under his charge be taught all neceſſary things of this kinde, and then ſure more eſpecially his wife, who is ſo much nearer to him, then all the reſt. This ſhould make men careful to get knowledge themſelves, that ſo they may be able to perform this duty they owe to others.

Huſbands and Wives mutually to pray for and aſſiſt each other in all good.

16. *Laſtly*, *Huſbands and Wives*, are mutually to *pray* each for other, to beg all bleſſings from God both ſpiritual and temporal, and to endeavour all they can to do all good to one another, eſpecially all good to each others Souls, by ſtirring up to the performance of duty, and diſſwading and drawing back from all

and by being like true yoke-fellowes, helpful and assistant to each other in the doing of all sorts of good, both to their own Family, and all others within their reach. This is of all other the truest and most valuable love. Nay, indeed how can it be said they do love at all, who can contentedly let each other run on in a course that will bring them to eternal miserie? And if the love of husbands and wives were thus grounded in Vertue and Religion, 'twould make their lives a kinde of Heaven on earth, 'twould prevent all those contentions, and brawlings, so common among them, which are the great plagues of Families, and the lesser Hell, in passage to the greater; and truly where it is not thus founded, there is little comfort to be expected in marriage.

17. It should therefore be the care of every one that means to enter upon that *state*, to consider advisedly before hand, and to choose such a person with whom they may have this spiritual friendship, that is, such a one, *as truly fears God*. There are many *false ends of Marriage* lookt upon in the world: some marry for *Wealth*, others for *Beauty*, and generally they are only worldly respects, that are at all considered; but certainly he that would Marry as he ought, should contrive to make his Marriage useful to those better ends, of serving God, and saving his own Soul; at least he must be sure it be no hindrance to them, and to that purpose the vertue of the

*The vertue
of the per-
son the
chief consi-
deration in
Marriage.*

per-

SUNDAY person chosen is more conducing then all the
XV. wealth in the world, though I deny not, but that a competency of that may likewise be considered.

*Unlawful
 Marriages.*

18. But above all things, let all take heed, that they make not such *marriages*, as may not onely be ill in their effects, but are *actual sins* at the time; such are the marriages of those that were formerly *promised to some other*, in which case 'tis sure they rightly belong to those, to whom they past the *first* promise; and then for any other to marry them, during the life of that person, is to take the husband or wife of that other, which is *direct adultery*, as *S. Paul* tells us, *Rom. 7. 3.* The like unlawfulness there is also in the marriage of those, who are *within* those *degrees* of kindred forbidden by God, the particulars whereof are set down in the 18. and 20. of *Lev.* and whoever marries any that is with in any of those degrees of nearness, either to himself, or to his deceased wife, which is as bad, commits that great sin of Incest, and so long as he continues to live with such his unlawfull wife, remains in that fearfull guilt. This wariness in the choice of the person to be married, would prevent many sad effects, which we daily see follow such rash or unlawfull matches; it were well therefore if people would look on marriage, as our Church advises, as a thing not to be *undertaken lightly, unadvisedly, or wantonly*, to *satisfie mens carnall lusts and appetites*, but *reverently, discreetly, advisedly, soberly,*

early, and in the fear of God; and in so doing no doubt a blessing would follow, which otherwise there is little ground to expect. I have now done with this Relation between *Husband and Wife*.

19. The *next* is that between *Friends*; and *Friendship*. This Relation if it be rightly founded, it is of great nearness and usefulness; but there is none more generally mistaken in the world; men usually call them their friends, with whom they have an intimacie, and frequentie of conversation, though that intimacie be indeed nothing but an agreement and combination in sin. The *Drun kard* thinks him his friend that will keep him company; the *Deceitful* person, him that will aid him in his cheats; the *Proud* man him that will flatter him: And so generally in all vices, they are look'd on as friends, that advance and further us in them. But God knowes this is far from friendship; such a friend as this the *Devil* himself is in the highest degree, who is never backward in such offices. The true friendship is that of a direct contrary making; 'tis a concurrence and agreement in virtue, not in vice: in short, a true friend loves his friend so, that he is very zealous of his good; and certainly he that is really so, will never be the instrument of bringing him to the greatest evil. The general duty of a *Friend* then must be resolved to be the industrious pursuit of his friends real advantages, in which there are several particulars contained.

Its duties.

20. As *first*, *faithfulness* in all trusts committed *Faithfulness.*

SUNDAY

XV.

mitted to him by his friend, whether that of goods or secrets; he that betrayes the trust of a friend in either, is by all men lookt upon with abhorrence, it being one of the highest falsenesses and treacheries, and for such treacherous wounds the Wise man tells us, *Every friend will depart, Eccles. 22.22.*

Assistance.

21. *Secondly*, 'tis the duty of a *Friend* to be *assisting* to his friend in all his outward needs; to counsell him, when he wants advice; to chear him, when he needs comfort; to give him, when he wants relief; and to endeavour his rescue out of any trouble or danger. An admirable example we have of this friendship in *Jonathan* to *David*, *he loved him as his own Soul*, & we see he not onely contrives for his safety when he was in danger, but runs hazards himself to rescue and deliver his friend, draws his fathers anger upon him, to turn it from *David*, as you may read at large, *1 Sam. 20.*

Admonition.

22. The *third* and highest duty of a friend is to be aiding and assisting to the soul of his friend, to endeavour to advance that in piety and vertue, by all means within his power, by *exhortations* and encouragements to all vertue, by earnest and vehement dissuasions from all sin, and not onely thus in generall, but by applying to his particular wants, especially by plain and friendly reproofs where he knows or reasonably believes there is any fault committed. This is of all others the most peculiar duty of a friend, it being indeed that which none else is qualified for. Such an unwilling-
ness

there is in most men to hear of their faults, but those that undertake that work, had need have a great prepossession of their hearts, to make them patient of it: Nay, it is so generally acknowledged to be the proper work of a friend, that if he omit it, he *betrayes* the offender into securitie, his not reproofing will be so to make the other think he does nothing worthy of reproof, and so he tacitely acts that worst part of a *flatterer*, soothes and cherishes him in his sin; when yet farther it is considered how great need all men have at some time or other, of being admonished, 'twill appear a most *unfriendly*, yea cruel thing to omit it; we have that natural partiality to our selves, that we cannot so readily discern our own misdeeds, as we do other mens, and therefore it is very necessary they should sometimes be viewed us by those, who see them more clearly; and the doing this at the first may prevent the multiplying of more: whereas if we be suffered to go unreproved, it often comes to such a habit, that reproofs will do no good. And then how shall that person be able to answer it either to God or himself, that has by his silence betrayed his friend to this greatest mischief? 'Tis the expression of God himself speaking of his friend, *thy friend which is as thine own soul*, Gen. 13. 6. And sure we should in this respect account our friends as our own souls, by having the same jealous tenderness and watchfulness over their souls, which we ought to have over our own. It will therefore be very fit for all that

SUNDAY that have enter'd any strict friendship, to make
XV. this one special article in the agreement, that they shall mutually admonish and reprove each other; by which means it will become such an avowed part of their friendship, that it can never be mistaken by the reprov'd party for censoriousness or unkindness.

Prayer.

23. *Fourthly*, to these several parts of kindness must be added that of *Prayer*; we must not only assist our friends, our selves, in what we can, but we must call in the Almighty's aid to them, recommending them earnestly to God for all his blessings, both temporal & spiritual.

Constancy.

24. *Lastly*, We must be *Constant* in our *Friendships*, and not out of a lightness of humour grow weary of a friend, only because we have had him long. This is great injustice to him, who if he have behaved himself well, ought the more to be valued, by how much the longer he has continued to do so: And it is great folly in our selves, for it is the casting away the greatest treasure of humane life, for such certainly is a tried friend. The wisest of men gives warning of it, *Prov. 27. 16. Thine own friend and thy fathers friend forsake not.* Nay farther 'tis not every light offence of a friend, that should make thee renounce his friendship, there must be some allowance made to the infirmities of men, and if thou hast occasion to pardon him somewhat to day, perhaps thou mayest give him opportunity to requite thee to morrow; therefore nothing but unfaithfulness, or incorrigible vice should break this band.

25. The last relation is that between *Masters* and *Servants*, both which owe duty to each other: That of the *Servant* is first *obedience* to all lawful commands; this is exprelly required by the Apostle, *Ephes. 6. 6. Servants obey in all things your Masters, &c.* And this obedience must not be a grumbling and unwilling one, but ready and chearful, as he there proceeds to exhort, ver. 7. *With good will doing service*; and to help them herein, they are to consider that it is to the Lord, and not unto men; God has commanded servants thus to obey their Masters; and therefore the obedience they pay is to God, which may well make them do it cheerfully, how harsh, or unworthy soever the Master be, especially if that the Apostle farther urgeth, ver. 8. be considered that there is a reward to be expected from God for it.

26. The second duty of the *Servant* is *faithfulness*, and that may be of two sorts; one as opposed to eye-service, the other to purloyn- ing or defrauding. The first part of faithfulness is the doing of all true service to his Master, not only when his eye is over him, and he expects punishment for the omission, but at all times, even when his Master is not likely to discern his failing, and that servant that doth not make conscience of this, is far from being a faithful servant; this *eye-service* being by the Apostle set opposite to that *singleness of heart*, which he requires of servants, *Eph. 6. 5.* The second sort of *faithfulness* consists in the

Fidelity.

SUNDAY

XV.

the honest managery of all things intrusted to him by his Master, the not *wasting* his goods (as the *unjust steward* was accused to have done, *Luk.* 16.) whether by careless embezzelling of them, or by converting any of them to his own use without the allowance of his Master. This latter is that *purloining* of which the Apostle warns servants, *Tit.* 2. 10. And is indeed no better then arrant theft; of this kinde are all those wayes, that the servant hath of gaining to himself by the loss and damage of his Master, as the being bribed to make ill bargains for him, and many the like: Nay, indeed this sort of unfaithfulness is worse then common theft, by how much there is a greater trust reposed, the betraying whereof adds to the crime. As for the *other* sort of unfaithfulness, that of *wasting*, though without gain to themselves, it differs not much in effect from this; the Master may lose as much by the one as by the other, and then what odds is it to him, whether he be robb'd by the covetousness or negligence of his servant? and it is still the same breach of trust with the former; for every Master is supposed to intrust his affairs as well to the care as the honesty of his servant: for 'twould be little advantage to the Master to be secured that his servant would not himself cheat him, whilst in the mean time he would by his carelessness give opportunity to others to do it; therefore he that does not carefully look to his Masters profit, deceives his trust, as well as he that unjustly provides for his own.

27. A *third* duty of a servant is patience and meekness under the *reproofs* of his Master, *not answering again*, as the Apostle exhorts, *Ti. 2. 9.* That is, not making such surly and rude replies, as may encrease the Masters displeasure: A thing too frequent among servants, even in the justest reprehensions, whereas *S. Peter* directs them patiently to suffer even the most undeserved correction, even when they *do well and suffer for it*, *1 Pet. 2. 20.* But the patient suffering of rebuke is not all that is required of servants in this matter, they must also mend the fault they are rebuked for, and not think they have done enough, when they have (though never so dutifully) given the Master the hearing.

28. A *fourth* duty of a servant is *diligence*: *Diligence.* he must constantly attend to all those things, which are the duties of his place, and not give himself to idleness and sloth, nor yet to company-keeping, gaming, or any other disorderly course, which may take him off from his Masters business. All these are necessary duties of a servant, which they are carefully and conscientiously to perform, not so much to escape the Masters anger as Gods, who will certainly call every one of them to an account, how they have behaved themselves towards their earthly Masters.

29. Now on the other side, there are some things also owing from the *Masters* to their *servants*: As first the *Master* is bound to be just to them, in performing those conditions,

*Masters
owe to their
Servants
Justice.*

SUNDAY
XV.Admoniti-
on.

on which they were hired, such are commonly the giving them food and wages, and that Master that withholds these, is an oppressour.

30. *Secondly*, the Master is to *admonish* and reprove the *servant* in case of fault, and that not only in faults against them; wherein few *Masters* are backward, but also and more especially in faults against God, whereat every Master ought to be more troubled then at those which tend only to his own loss, or inconvenience; the dishonour of God, and the hazard of the meanest mans soul, being infinitely more worthy our disquiet, then any thing of the other kinde can be. And therefore when masters are presently *en fire* for any little negligence or fault of a servant towards themselves, and yet can without trouble see them run into the greatest sins against God, 'tis a signe they consider their own concernments too much, and Gods glory and their servants souls too little. this is too commonly the temper of Masters, they are generally careless how their servants behave themselves towards God, how disordered and prophane their families are, and therefore never bestow any exhortation, or admonition, to perswade them to vertue, or draw them from vice; such Masters forget that they must one day give an account how they have governed their families. It is certainly the duty of every Ruler to endeavour to advance piety and godliness among all those that are under his charge, and that as well in this lesser dominion of a family

as in the greater of a Realm or Nation. Of this *David* was so careful, that we see he professes, *Psalms 101.7. That no deceitful person should dwell in his house, that he that told lies should not tarry in his sight*; so much he thought himself bound to provide that his family might be a kinde of Church, an Assembly of godly upright persons: and if all Masters would endeavour to have theirs so, they would beside the eternal reward of it hereafter, finde a present benefit by it, their worldly business would thrive much the better; for if their servants were brought to make conscience of their wayes, they would then not dare either to be negligent or false.

31. But as it is the duty of *Masters* to admonish and reprove their servants, so they must also look to do it in a *due manner*, that is, so as may be most likely to do good, not in passion and rage, which can never work the servant to any thing but the despising or hating him; but with such sober and grave speeches, as may convince him of his fault, and may also assure him, that it is a kinde desire of his amendment (and not a willingness to wreck his own rage) which makes the Master thus to rebuke him.

32. A third duty of the Master is to set *good example* of honesty and godliness to his servants, without which 'tis not all the exhortations, or reproofs he can use, will ever do good; or else he pulls down more with his *example*, then 'tis possible for him to build with

Good example.

SUNDAY
XV.

the other, and 'tis madness for a drunken, or profane Master to expect a sober and godly family.

*Means of
Instruction.*

* 33. *Fourthly*, the *Master* is to provide that his servants may not want means of being instructed in their duty, as also that they may daily have constant times of worshipping God publicly by having prayers in the family; but of this I have spoken before under the head of Prayer, and therefore shall here say no more of it.

Moderation in Command.

34. *Fifthly*, The *Master* in all affairs of his own, is to give reasonable and moderate commands, not laying greater burdens on his servants than they are able to bear, particularly not requiring so much work, that they shall have no time to bestow on their souls; as on the other side he is not to permit them to live so idly as may make them either useless to him, or may betray themselves to any ill.

Encouragement in well-doing.

35. *Sixthly*, The *Master* is to give his servants encouragement in well doing, by using them with that bounty and kindness which their faithfulness and diligence and piety deserves: and finally in all his dealing with them, he is to remember that himself hath, as the Apostle saith, *Ephes. 6. 9. A Master in Heaven*, to whom he must give an account of the usage of his meanest servant on earth. Thus have I briefly run through those several Relations, to which we owe particular Dutie, and so have done with that first branch of Dutie to our Neighbours; that of Justice.

PARTITION XVI.

Other Branches of our Duty to our Neighbour. Of Charity to mens Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit.

THE second branch of Dutie to our Neighbours is *Charity*, or *Love*. This *Charity*. is the great Gospel dutie so often enjoined us by Christ, the *New Commandment*, as himself calls it, *John 13. 34. That we love one another*, and this is again repeated twice in one Chapter, *John 15. 12, 17.* and the first Epistle of *S. John* is almost wholly spent in the perswasion to this one dutie, by which we may see 'tis no matter of indifference, but most strictly required of all that profess Christ. Indeed himself has given it as the badge and livetie of his Disciples, *John 13. 35. By this shall all men know that ye are my Disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

This *Charity* may be considered two wayes; first, in respect of the *Affections*; secondly, *In the Affections.* Charitie in the *affections* is a sincere kindness, which disposes us to wish all good to others, and that in all their capacities, in the same manner that justice obliged us to wish no hurt to any man, in respect either of his Soul, his Body, his Goods, or his Credit,

SUNDAY XVI. Credit, so this first part of Charity bindes us to
 with all good to them in all these.

*To mens
 Souls.*

And *first*, for the *Soul*. If we have any the least spark of Charity, we cannot but wish all good to mens *Souls*; those precious things which Christ thought worth the ransoming with his own blood, may surely well challenge our kindness, and good wishes; and therefore if we do not thus love one another, we are far from obeying that Command of loving, as he hath loved; for 'twas the Souls of men which he loved so tenderly, and both did and suffered so much for. Of this love of his to Souls there are two great and special effects: the *first*, the purifying them here by his grace, the *second*, the making them everlastingly happy in his glorie; and both these we are so far to copy out in our kindness, as to be earnestly desirous that all men should arrive to that puritie and holiness here, which may make them capable of eternal happiness hereafter. It were to be hoped, that none that himself *carried a Soul about him*, could be so cruel to that of anothers mans, as not sincerely to wish this, did not experience shew us there are some persons, whose malice is so divelish, as to reach even to the direct contrarie; the wishing not only the sin, but the damnation of others. Thus may you have some, who in any injurie, or oppression they suffer, make it their only comfort, that their enemies will *damn* themselves by it; when alas! that should to a Christian be much more

Part. 16. *The duty of Charity.*

331

SUNDAY
XVI.

more terrible, then any suffering they could bring upon him. He that is of this temper, is a disciple of Satan, not of Christ, it being directly contrary to the whole scope of that great Christian precept, of *loving our neighbours as our selves*. For 'tis sure, no man that believes there is such a thing as *damnation*, wishes it to himself; be he never so fond of the ways that lead to it, yet he wishes that may not be his journey's end; and therefore by that rule of Charity should as much dread it for his Neighbour.

Secondly, We are to wish all good to the *Bodies* of men, all health and welfare, we are generally tender enough of our own bodies, dread the least pain or ill, that can befall them: Now *Charity*, by virtue of the fore-mentioned precept, extends this tenderness to all others, and whatever we apprehend as grievous to our selves, we must be unwilling should befall another. The like is to be said of the other two, goods and credit, that as we wish our own thriving and reputation, so we should likewise that of others, or else we can never be said to *love our neighbour as our selves*.

To their
Bodies,
Goods and
Credit.

This Charitie of the *affections*, if it be sincere, will certainly have *these* several effects, which are so inseparable from it, that they are often in Scripture accounted as parts of the dutie, and so most strictly required of us; First, it will keep the minde in a peaceable and meek temper towards others, so far from seeking

Effects of
this Charitie.
17.

SUNDAY
XVI.

seeking occasions of contentions, that no provocation shall draw us to it ; for where we have kindness we shall be unapt to quarrel, it being one of the special qualities of Charity, that it is *not easily provoked*, 1 Cor. 13. 5. And therefore whoever is unpeaceable, shewes his heart is destitute of this *Charity*. *Secondly*, it will breed compassion towards all the *miseries* of others, every mis-hap that befalls, where we wish well, is a kinde of defeat and disaster to our selves ; and therefore if we wish well to all, we shall be thus concerned in the calamities of all, have a real grief and sorrow, to see any in misery, and that according to the proportion of the suffering. *Thirdly*, it will give us joy in the prosperities of others : *Solomon* observes, *Prov.* 13. 19. That the desire accomplished is sweet to the Soul ; and then whoever has this real desire of his neighbours welfare, his desire is accomplished in their prosperity, and therefore he cannot but have contentment and satisfaction in it. Both these are together commanded by *St. Paul*, *Rom.* 12. 12. *Rejoyce with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep*. *Fourthly*, it will excite and stir up our prayers for others : We are of our selves impotent, feeble creatures, unable to bestow blessings, where we most wish them, therefore if we do indeed desire the good of others, we must seek it on their behalf, from him, whence every good and perfect gift cometh, *Jam.* 1. 17. This is so necessary a part of Charity, that without it our kindness is but an unsigni-

Art. 16. Duty of Charity, &c.

333

SUNDAY
XVI.

significant thing, a kinde of empty comple-
ment. For how can he be believed to wish well
earnest, who will not thus put life and effi-
cacy into his wishes by forming them into
prayers which will otherwise be vain and fruit-
less? The Apostle thought not fit to leave men
to their bare wishes, but exhorts that suppli-
cations, prayers, and giving of thanks be made
for all men, 1 Tim. 2. 1. which precept all
that have this true charity of the heart, will
readily conform to. These severals are so na-
turally the fruits of this Charity, that it is a de-
ceit for any man to perswade himself he hath
it, who cannot produce these fruits to evi-
dence it by.

But there is yet a farther excellency of
this grace, it guards the minde, and secures it
from several great and dangerous vices; as first
from *Envie*; this is by the Apostle taught us
to be the property of Charity, 1 Cor. 13. 4.
Charity envieth not; and indeed common rea-
son may confirm this to us, for *Envie* is a so-
rrow at the prosperity of another, and there-
fore must needs be directly contrary to that de-
sire of it, which we shewed before was the ef-
fect of love; so that if love bear sway in the
heart, 'twill certainly chace out *Envie*. How
vainly then do those pretend to this vertue, that
are still grudging, and repining at every good
hap of others.

Secondly, It keeps down *Pride* and *Haughti-
ness*. This is also taught us by the Apostle
in the forementioned place, *Charity vaun-*

Pride:

SUNDAY
XVI.

eth not it self, is not puffed up; and accordingly we finde, that where this vertue of love is commanded, there humility is joyned with it. Thus it is, *Col. 3. 12. Put on therefore bowels of Mercies, Kindness, Humbleness of minde, and Romans 12. 10. Be kindly affectioned one towards another with brotherly love in honour preferring one another*, where you see how close an attendant humility is of love. Indeed it naturally flowes from it, for love alwayes sets a price and value upon the thing beloved, makes us esteem and prize it; thus we too constantly finde it in self-love, it makes us think highly of our selves, that we are much more excellent then other men. Now if love thus plac'd on our selves, beget pride, let us but divert the course, and turn this love on our brethren, and it will as surely beget humility, for then we should see and value those gifts and excellencies of theirs, which now our pride, or our hatred makes us to overlook and neglect, and not think it reasonable either to despise them, or vaunt and magnifie our selves upon such a comparison; we should certainly finde cause to put the Apostles exhortation in practice, *Phil. 2. 4. That we should esteem others better then our selves*. Whoever therefore is of so haughtie a temper, as to vilifie and disdain others, may conclude, he hath not this charity rooted in his heart.

Censorious-
ness.

Thirdly, It casts out *censoriousness* and rash judging; *Charity*, as the Apostle saith, *1 Cor. 13. 5. Thinketh no evil*, is not apt to entertain ill

conceits of others, but on the contrary as it follows, ver. 7. *Believeth all things, hopeth all things*; that is, it is forward to believe and hope the best of all men; and surely our own experience tells us the same, for where we love we are usually unapt to discern faults, be they ever so gross (witness the great blindness we generally have towards our own) and therefore shall certainly not be likely to create them, where they are not, or to aggravate them beyond their true size and degree: And then to what shall we impute those unmerciful censures and rash judgements of others, so frequent among men, but to the want of this Charity?

Fourthly, It casts out *Dissembling* and feigned goodness; where this true and real love is, that false and counterfeit one flies from before; and this is the love we are commanded to have, such as *is without dissimulation*, Rom. 1. 9. Indeed where this is rooted in the heart, there can be no possible use of dissimulation: because this is in truth all that the false one would seem to be, and so is as far beyond it as Nature is beyond Art, nay indeed as a divine virtue is beyond a foul sin; for such is that hypocritical kindness, and yet 'tis to be feared, that does too generally usurp the place of this real charity, the effects of it are too visible among us, there being nothing more common then to see men make large professions to those who are soon as their backs are turned they either decide or mischief.

Dissembling.

Fifthly,

SUNDAY

XVI.

Self-seeking.

Fifthly, It casts out all mercenariness, and *self-seeking*, 'tis of so noble and generous a temper, that it despises all projectings for gain or advantage, *Love seeketh not her own*, 1 Cor. 13. 5. And therefore that huckstering kinde of Love so much used in the world, which places it self only there, where it may fetch in benefit, is very far from this charity.

Revenge.

Lastly, It turns out of the heart all malice and desire of *Revenge*, which is so utterly contrary to it, that it is impossible they should both dwell in the same breast; 'tis the property of love to *bear all things*, 1 Cor. 13. 7. To endure the greatest injuries, without thought of making any other return to them then prayers and blessings, and therefore the malicious revengeful person, is of all others the greatest stranger to this charity.

This charity to be extended even to enemies.

'Tis true, if this vertue were to be exercised but towards some sort of persons, it might consist with malice to others, it being possible for a man that bitterly hates one to love another; but we are to take notice that this Charity must not be so confined, but must extend and stretch it self to all men in the world, particularly to *Enemies*, or else it is not that divine charity commended to us by Christ. The loving of friends and benefactors is so low a pitch that the very *Publicans and sinners*, the worst of men were able to attain to it, *Matth. 5. 46*. And therefore 'tis not counted rewardable in a Disciple of Christ; no, he expects we should soar higher, and therefore hath set us this

more

16. Of Charity, &c.

337

SUNDAY
XVI.

A spiritual and excellent precept of loving
enemies, *Matth. 5. 44. I say unto you, love
your enemies, bless them that curse you, and
rejoice with them which despitefully use you, and
persecute you; and whosoever does not thus,
shall never be owned by him for a Disciple.*
We are therefore to conclude, that all which
has been said concerning this *Charity* of the
disciples, must be understood to belong as
well to our spitefullest enemy, as our most ob-
liging friend. But because this is a duty to
which the froward nature of man is apt to ob-
ject much, 'twill not be amiss to insist a little
on some considerations which may inforce it
upon us.

And first consider what hath been already
taught on, that it is the *Command* of Christ,
such in the Text above mentioned, and mul-
titudes of others, there being scarce any pre-
cept so often repeated in the New Testa-
ment, as this of loving and forgiving of our
enemies. Thus *Ephes. 4. 32. Be ye kinde one to
another, tender hearted, forgiving one another;*
and again, *Col. 3. 13. Forbearing one another,
and forgiving one another, if any man have a
quarrel against any, even as Christ forgave you,
himself also do ye.* So also *1 Pet. 3. 9. Not re-
turning evil for evil, nor railing for railing, but
contrarywise Blessing.* A whole Volume of
texts might be brought to this purpose, but
these are certainly enough to convince any
man, that this is strictly required of us by
Christ, and indeed I think, there are few that
ever

Motives
thereunto.
Command
of Christ.

SUNDAY ever heard of the Gospel, but know it is so.

XVI. The more prodigiouſly ſtrange is it, that men that call themſelves Chriſtians, ſhould give no degree of obedience to it, nay, not onely ſo, but even publickly avow, and profeſs the contrary, as we dayly ſee they do, it being ordinary to have men reſolve, and declare that they will not forgive ſuch, or ſuch a man, and no conſideration of Chriſts command can at all move them from their purpoſe. Certainly theſe men underſtand not what is meant by the very word *Chriſtian*, which ſignifies a ſervant, and Diſciple of Chriſt, and this Charity is the very badge of the one, the leſſon of the other: and therefore 'tis the greateſt abſurdity, and contradiction, to profeſs themſelves Chriſtians, and yet at the ſame time to reſiſt this ſo expreſs Command of that Chriſt, whom they own as their Maſter. *If I be a Maſter, ſaith God, where is my fear?* Mal. i. 6. Obedience and reverence are ſo much the duties of ſervants, that no man is thought to look on him as a Maſter, to whom he payes them not. *Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things that I ſay?* Saith Chriſt, Luke. 6. 46. The whole world is divided into two great Families, *Chriſts* and *Satans*, and the obedience each man payes, ſignifies to which of theſe Maſters he belongs; if he obey *Chriſt*, to *Chriſt*; if *Satan*, to *Satan*. Now this ſin of malice and revenge is ſo much the dictate of that wicked ſpirit, that there is no thing can be a more direct obeying of him,

Art. 16. The Duty of Charity &c. 339

SUNDAY
XVI.

is the taking *his livery* on our backs, the pro-
mation whose servants we are. What ridi-
culous impudence is it then, for men that have
entered themselves of Satans Family, to
pretend to be the Servants of Christ? Let such
know assuredly, that they shall not be *owned* by
him, but at the great day of accompt, be turn-
ed over to their proper Master, to receive their
wages in fire and brimstone.

A second consideration is the *example* of Example
of God.
this is an argument Christ himself
thought fit to use, to impress this dutie on us,
as you may see *Luk. 6.35,36.* Where after
having given the Command of *Loving En-
emies*, he encourages to the practice of it, by
saying, that it is that which will make us
the *Children of the Highest* (that is, 'twill
give us a likeness and resemblance to him; as
children have to their Parents) *for he is kind to
the unthankfull and the evil; And to the
same purpose, you may read Mat. 5.45. He
maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the
good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the
unjust; And sure this is a most forcible con-
sideration to excite us to this duty. God we
know, is the fountain of perfection, and the
being like to him, is the summe of all we can
wish for; and though it was Lucifers fall, his
ambition to be like the most high, yet had the
folly he affected been only that of Holy-
ness and goodness, he might still have been
an Angel of light: This desire of imitating
our Heavenly Father is the especial mark of a
Z
childe*

SUNDAY
XVI.

child of his. Now this kindness and goodness to enemies is most eminently remarkable in God, and that not onely in respect of the temporal mercies, which he indifferently bestows on all, his *sun and rain on the unjust*, as in the text forementioned, but chiefly in his spiritual Mercies; We are all by our wicked works *Col. 1. 21. Enemies to him*, and the mischief of that enmity would have fallen wholly upon our selves, God had no motive besides that of his pity to us, to wish a reconciliation, yet so far was he from returning our enmity, when he might have revenged himself to our eternal ruine, that he designs and contrives how he may bring us to be at peace with him. This is a huge degree of mercy and kindness, but the means he used for effecting this, is yet far beyond it; He *sent his own Son* from Heaven to work it and that not only by perswasions, but sufferings also; so much did he prize us miserable creatures, that he thought us not too dear bought with the blood of his Son. The like example of mercy and patience we have in *Christ both laying down his life for us Enemies*, and also in that meek manner of doing it, which we finde excellently set forth by the Apostle, *1 Pet. 2. 22, 23, 24.* and commended to our imitation. Now surely when all this is considered, we may well make *S. Johns* inference, *Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another, 1 John 4. 11.* How shameful a thing is it for us to retain displeasures

Part. 16. Dutie of Charitie, &c. 341

against our brethren, when God thus layes his towards us, and that when we have so highly provoked him?

SUNDAY
XVI.

This directs to a *third consideration*, the comparing our sins *against God*, with the offences of our brethren *against us*, which we no power shall come to do, but there will appear vast difference between them, and that in several respects; For *first* there is the *Majesty* of the person, against whom we sin, which exceedingly encreases the guilt, whereas between man and man, there cannot be so great distance, for though some men are by God advanced to such eminency of dignity as may make an injury offered to them the greater, yet still they are but men of the same nature with us, whereas he is *God blessed for ever*; Secondly, there is his *soverainty* and power, which is original in God, for we are his creatures, we have received our whole being from him, and therefore are in the deepest manner bound to perfect obedience, whereas all the soverainty that one man can possibly have over another, is but imparted to them by God, and for the most part there is none of this number in the case, quarrels being most usual among equals. *Thirdly*, there is his *infinite bounty* and goodness to us, all that ever we enjoy, whether in relation to this life or a better, being wholly his free gift, and so there is the fault of ingratitude added to our other crimes; in which respect also 'tis impossible for one man to offend against another in such a degree,

The disproportion between our offences against God, and mens against us.

SUNDAY
XVI.

for though one may be (and too many are) guilty of unthankfulness towards men, yet because the greatest benefits that man can bestow, are infinitely short of those which God doth, the ingratitude cannot be neer so great as towards God it is. *Lastly*, there is the *greatness* and multitude of our *sins* against God, which do infinitely exceed all that the most injurious man can do against us ; for we all sin much oftner and more heinously against him than any man, be he never so malicious, can find opportunities of injuring his bretheren. This inequality and disproportion our Saviour intimates in the *parable*, Mat. 18. where our offences against God are noted by the *ten thousand talents*, whereas our bretherens against us are described by the *hundred pence* ; a talent hugely out-weighs a penny, and ten thousand out-numbers a hundred, yet so and much more does the weight and number of our sins exceed all the offences of others against us: Much more might be said to shew the vast inequality between the faults which God forgives us, and those we can possibly have to forgive our bretheren : But this I suppose may suffice to silence all the *objections* of cruel and revengefull persons, against this kindness to *enemies*. They are apt to look upon it as an absurd and *unreasonable* thing, but since God himself acts it in so much a higher degree, who can without blasphemy say 'tis unreasonable? If this, or any other spiritual duty appear so to us, we may learn the reason from the Apostle, 1 Cor. 2. 14.

Part. 16. The Duty of Charity. &c. 343

SUNDAY
XVI.

The carnal man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him; the carnality and fleshliness of our hearts, that makes it seem so, and therefore in stead of disputing against the duty, let us purge our hearts of that, and then we shall find that true which the spiritual Wildome affirms of her Doctrines, Prov. 8.9. *They are all plain to him that understandeth, and right to them that find knowledg.*

Nay, this loving of enemies is not only a reasonable, but a *pleasant* duty, and that I propose as a fourth consideration; there is a great deal of sweetness and delight to be found in it; of this I confess none can so well judge as those that have practised it, the nature even of earthly pleasures being such, that 'tis the enjoyment only that can make a man truly know them: No man can so describe the taste of any delicious thing to another, as that by it he shall know the relish of it, he must first actually taste of it; and sure 'tis more so in spiritual pleasures, and therefore he that would fully know the sweetness and pleasantness of this duty, let him set to the practice, and then his own experience will be the best informer: But in the mean time, how very unjust, yea, and foolish is it, to pronounce ill of it before tryal: for men to say this is irksome and intolerable, who never so much as once offered to try whether indeed it were so or no? Yet by this very means an ill opinion is brought up of this most delightful Duty, and passes currant among men,

*Pleasant-
ness of this
Duty.*

SUNDAY
XVI.

whereas in all justice the testimonie of it should be taken only from those who have tried it, and they would certainly give another account of it.

But though the full knowledge hereof be to be had only by this nearer acquaintance, yet methinks even those who look at it but at a distance may discern somewhat of *amiableness* in it, if no other way, yet at least by *comparing* it with the uneasiness of its contrarie: Malice and Revenge are the most restless, tormenting passions that can possess the minde of a man, they keep men in perpetual studie and care how to effect their mischievous purposes, it disturbs their verie sleep, as *Solomon* observes *Prov. 4. 16. They sleep not except they have done mischief, and their sleep is taken away, except they cause some to fall*: Yea, it imbitters all the good things they enjoy, so that they have no taste or relish of them; a remarkable example of this we have in *Haman*, who though he abounded in all the greatness and felicitie of the world, yet the malice he had to a poor despicable man *Mordecai*, kept him from *tasting contentment in all this*, as you may see *Esther 5.* where after he had related to his friends all his prosperities, ver. 11. he concludes thus, ver. 12. *Yet all this availeth me nothing so long as I see Mordecai the Jew sitting in the Kings gate.* On the other side, the peaceable spirit, that can quietly pass by all injuries and affronts, enjoys a continual calm, and is above the malice of his enemies, for let them

Part. 16. The Duty of Charity, &c. 345

SUNDAY
XVI.

men do what they can, they cannot rob him of his quiet, he is firm as a *rock*, which no storms or winds can move, when the furious and revengeful man is like a *wave*, which the least blast tosses and tumbles from its place. Besides this inward disquiet of revengeful men, they often bring manie outward calamities upon themselves, they exasperate their enemies, and provoke them to do them greater mischiefs, nay oftentimes they willingly run themselves upon the greatest miseries in pursuit of their revenge, to which 'tis ordinarie to see men sacrifice *Goods, Ease, Credit, Life,* yea *soul* it self, not caring what they suffer themselves so they may spite their enemy; so strangely does this wretched humour beset and blind men. On the contrarie, the meek person he often melts his adversarie, pacifies his anger; *a soft answer turns away wrath*, saith *Salomon, Prov. 15. 1.* And sure there is nothing can tend more to that end; but if it do happen that his enemy be so inhumane, that he refuses of doing that, yet he is still a gainer by all he can suffer. For *first*, he gains an opportunity of exercising that most Christian grace of charitie and forgiveness; and so at once of obeying the command, and imitating the example of his Saviour, which is to a true Christian spirit a most valuable advantage; and then *secondly*, he gains an accession and increase to his reward hereafter. And if it be *Ob- jected*, that that is not to be reckoned in to the present pleasure of the dutie: I answer that the

SUNDAY

XVI.

expectation and belief of it is, and that alone is a delight infinitely more ravishing then the present enjoyment of all sensual pleasure can be.

*If we forgive not
God will
not forgive
us.*

The *fourth* consideration is, the *Danger* of not performing this *Duty*; of which I might reckon up divers, but I shall insist only on that great one, which contains in it all the rest, and that is the *forfeiting of our own pardons* from God, the having our sins against him kept still on his score, and not forgiven. This is a consideration, that methinks should affright us into good nature; if it do not, our malice is greater to our selves then to our enemies. For alas! what hurt is it possible for thee to do to another, which can bear any comparison with that thou doest thy self, in losing the pardon of thy sins? Which is to unspeakable a mischief, that the *Devil* himself with all his malice cannot wish a greater; 'tis all he aims at, *first*, that we may sin, and then that those sins may never be pardoned, for then he knows he has us sure enough; Hell, and damnation being certainly the portion of every unpardoned sinner, besides all other effects of Gods wrath in this life; consider this, then tell me what thou hast got by the highest revenge thou ever actedst upon another? 'Tis a *Devilish* phrase in the mouth of men, *that revenge is sweet*: but is it possible there can be (even to the most distemperate palate) any such sweetness in it, as may recompense that everlasting bitterness that attends it?

art. 16. *The Duty of Charity, &c.* 347

SUNDAY
XVI.

certain, no man in his wits can upon sober
 thing, imagine there is. But alas! we give
 our selves time to weigh things, but suffer
 selves to be hurried away with the heat
 in angrie humour, never *considering* how
 we must pay for it: like the silly *Bee*, that
 anger leaves at once her sting and her life
 behind her, the sting may perhaps give some
 pain to the flesh it sticks in, but yet there
 none but discerns the *Bee* has the worst of it,
 she pays her life for so poor a revenge; so it
 is the greatest act of our malice, we may
 perhaps leave our stings in others, put them to
 their present trouble, but that compared with
 the hurt redounds to our selves by it, is no
 more then that inconsiderable pain is to death;
 not so much, because the mischiefs that
 bring upon our selves are eternal, to which
 no finite thing can bear any proportion. Re-
 member then, whensoever thou art contriving
 to plot a *revenge*, that thou quite mistakest
 thy mark; thou thinkest to hit the enemy,
 alas! thou woundest thy self to death. And
 no man speak peace to himself, or think
 these are vain terrors, and that he may ob-
 tain pardon from God, though he give none
 to his brethren. For he that is truth it self
 assured us the contrarie, *Mat. 6. 15. If*
ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will
your Father forgive your trespasses. And least
 we should forget the necessitie of this du-
 ty, he has intersed it in our daily Prayers,
 where we make it the condition, on which we
 beg

SUNDAY
XVI.

beg pardon from God; *Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.* What a heavy curse then does every revengeful person lay upon himself, when he sayes this Prayer? he does in effect beg God not to forgive him; and 'tis too sure that part of his prayer will be heard, he shall be forgiven just as he forgives, that is, not at all. This is yet farther set out to us in the parable of the *Lord and the Servant. Matth. 18.* the servant had obtained of his Lord the forgiveness of a vast debt, *ten thousand talents*, yet was so cruel to his fellow servant, as to exact a poor trifling sum of an *hundred pence*, upon which his Lord recalls his former forgiveness, and charges him again with the whole debt, and this *Christ* applies to our present purpose, *ver. 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every man his brother their trespasses.* One such act of uncharitableness is able to forfeit us the pardon God hath granted us, and then all our sins return again upon us, and sink us to utter ruine. I suppose it needless to heap up more testimonies of Scripture for the truth of this; these are so clear, as may surely serve to perswade any man, that acknowledges Scripture, of the great and fearful danger of this sin of uncharitableness. The *Lord* possesses all our hearts with such a just sense of it as may make us avoid it.

The last consideration I shall mention, is that of *Gratitude*. God has shewed wonderful mercies to us, *Christ* has suffered heavy things

*Gratitude
to God.*

to

Part. 16. The Duty of Charity, &c. 349

SUNDAY
XVI.

bring us into a capacity of that mercy and pardon from God : And shall we not then think our selves obliged to some returns of thankfulness? If we will take the *Apostles* judgment, he tells us, *2 Cor. 5. 15. That since Christ died for us all, 'tis but reasonable that we should henceforth live unto our selves, but unto him who died for us.* Indeed were every moment of our life consecrated to his immediate Service, were no more then common gratitude requires, and far less then such inestimable benefits deserve ; what a shameful unthankfulness is it then to deny him such a poor satisfaction as this, the forgiving our brethren? Suppose a man that were ransomed either from death or slavery, by the bounty and sufferings of another, should upon his release be charged by him that freed him in return of that kindness of his, to forgive some slight debt, which was owing him by some third person, would you not think him the unthankfullest wretch in the world, that should refuse this so great a benefactor? yet such a wretch and much worse is every revengeful person : Christ hath bought us out of eternal slavery, and that not with corruptible things, as silver and gold. *1 Pet. 1. 8. But with his own most precious blood,* and hath earnestly recommended to us the love of our brethren, and that with the most moving arguments, drawn from the greatness of his love to us ; and if we shall obstinately refuse him in so just, so moderate a demand, how unspeakable a vileness is it ? and yet this we do down right, if we keep any malice or grudge

SUNDAY

XVI.

to any person whatsoever. Nay farther, this is not barely an unthankfulness, but there is also joyned with it a horrible contempt and despising of him. This *Peace* and unity of brethren was a thing so much prized and valued by him, that when he was to leave the World, he thought it the most precious thing he could bequeath, and therefore left it by way of Legacy to his Disciples, *Jo. 14. 27. Peace I leave with you*; we use to set a great value on the slightest bequests of our dead friends, to be exceeding careful not to lose them, and therefore if we wilfully bangle away this so precious a Legacy of Christ, 'tis a plain signe we want that Love and Esteem of him, which we have of our earthly friends, and that we despise him as well as his Legacy. The great prevailing of this sin of uncharitableness has made me stand thus long on these considerations, for the subduing it. *God grant they may make such impression on the Reader, as may be available to that purpose.*

I shall add only this one advice, that these or whatsoever other remedies against this sin must be used *timely*: 'tis oftentimes the frustrating of *bodily* medicines, the applying them too late, and 'tis much oftner so in *spiritual*, therefore if it be possible, let these and the like considerations be so constantly and habitually fixt in thy heart, that they may frame it to such meekness as may prevent all risings of rancour or revenge in thee, for it is much better they should serve as armour to prevent, then as bal-

*The first
rising of
RANCOUR to
be suppress'd.*

some

me to cure the wound. But if this passion be yet so subdued in thee, but that there will be some stirrings of it, yet then be sure to take at the very first rise, and let not thy fancy shew, as it were, upon the injury by often calling it in thy mind, but remember betimes the foregoing considerations, and withal, that this is a time, and season of tryal to thee wherein thou mayest shew thou hast profited in Christs School, there now being an opportunity offered thee either of obeying and pleasing God, by passing by this offence of thy brother, or else of obeying and pleasing Satan, that lover of discord, by nourishing hatred against him. Remember this, I say, *betimes*, before thou be enflamed, for if this fire be thoroughly kindled, it will cast such a smoke, as will blind thy reason, and make thee unfit to judge even in this so very plain *case*, whether it be better by obeying God, to purchase to thy self eternal blifs, or by obeying Satan, eternal torments. Whereas, if thou put the *question* to thy self before this commotion, and disturbance of mind, 'tis impossible but thy understanding must pronounce for God; And then unless thou wilt be so perverse that thou wilt deliberately choose death, thou wilt surely practice according to that sentence of thy understanding; I shall add no more on this *first* part of Charity, that of the *Affections*.

I proceed now to that of the *Actions*; *Charity in the Actions*.
And this indeed is it, whereby the former must

SUNDAY
XVI.

must be approved, we may pretend great charitie within, but if none break forth in the Actions, we may say of that Love, as Saint *James* does of the *Faith* he speaks of, *that it is dead*, Jam. 2. 20. It is the loving in Deed, that must *approve our hearts before God*, 1 John 3. 18. Now this love in the Actions may likewise fitly be distributed, as the former was, in relation to the four distinct capacities of our brethren, their *Souls*, their *Bodies*, their *Goods*, and *Credit*.

*Towards
the mind of
our Neigh-
bour.*

The *Soul* I formerly told you may be considered either in a Natural or Spiritual sense, and in both of them Charitie binds us to do all the good we can. As the Soul signifies the *Mind* of a man, so we are to endeavour the comfort and refreshment of our brethren, desire to give them all true cause of joy and cheerfulness, especially when we see any under any sadness or heaviness, then to bring out all the cordials we can procure, that is, to labour by all Christian and fit means to chear the troubled spirits of our brethren, to *comfort them that are in any heaviness*, as the Apostle speaks, 2 Cor. 1. 4.

His Soul.

But the *Soul* in the spiritual sense is yet of greater concernment, and the securing of that is a matter of much *greater* moment, then the refreshing of the *mind* onely, in as much as the eternal sorrows and sadnesses of Hell exceed the deepest sorrows of this life; and therefore though we must not omit the former, yet on this we are to employ our most zealous

valious charities; wherein we are not to content our selves with a bare wishing well to the Souls of our brethren, this alone is a sluggish sort of kindness, unworthy of those who are to imitate the great Redeemer of Souls, who did and suffered so much in that purchase: No, we must adde also our endeavour to make them what we wish them, to this purpose, 'twere verie reasonable to propound to our selves in all our conversings with others, that one great design of doing some good to their souls. If this purpose were fixt in our mindes, we should then discern perhaps many opportunities, which now we overlook, in doing something towards it. The brutish assurance of one would call upon thee to endeavour his instruction; the *open sin* of another, to reprehend and admonish him; the faint and weak vertue of another, to confirm and encourage him. Everie *spiritual want* of thy brother may give thee some occasion of exercising some part of this Charitie, or if the circumstances be such, that upon sober judging, thou think it vain to attempt any thing thy self, as if either thy meanness, or thy unacquaintedness, or any the like impediment be like to render thy exhortations fruitless, yet if thou art industrious in thy Charitie, thou mayst probably finde out some other instrument, by whom to do it more successfully. There cannot be a nobler studie then how to benefit mens Souls, and therefore where the direct means are improper, 'tis fit we

SUNDAY we should whet our wits for attaining of others. Indeed 'tis a shame, we should not as industriously contrive for this great spiritual concernment of others, as we do for everie worldly trifling interest of our own; yet in them we are unwearied, and try one means after another, till we compass our end. But if after all our serious endeavours, the obstinacie of men do not suffer us, or themselves rather, to reap any fruit from them, if all our wooings and intreatings of men to have mercie on their own Souls will not work on them, yet be sure to continue still to exhort by thy example; Let thy great care and tenderneſs of thy own Soul preach to them the value of theirs, and give not over thy compassions to them, but with the Prophet *Jerem. 13. 17. Let thy Soul weep in secret for them;* and with the Psalmist, *Let rivers of waters run down thy eyes, because they kept not Gods Law, Psal. 119. 136.* Yea with Christ himself, weep over them, who will not know the things that belong to their peace, *Luk. 19. 42.* And when no importunities with them will work, yet even then cease not to importune God for them, that he will draw them to himself: Thus we see *Samuel*, when he could not diswade the people from that sinful purpose they were upon, yet he professes notwithstanding, that he will not cease praying for them; nay, he lookt on it as so much a duty, that it would be sin for him to omit it. *God forbid,* sayes he, *that I should sin against*

Lord in ceasing to pray for you, 1 Sam. 12. Nor shall we need to fear that our prayers will be quite lost, for if they prevail not for those for whom we pour them out, yet however they will return into our own bosomes, Mat. 25. 13. we shall be sure not to miss of the reward of that Charity.

In the second place, we are to exercise this active Charity towards the *bodies* of our neighbours; we are not only to compassionate their pains and miseries, but also to do what we can for their ease and relief. The good Samaritan Luk 10. had never been proposed as our pattern, had he not as well pitied the wounded man. 'Tis not good wishes, no nor good words neither that will in such cases, as S. James tells us, *If a brother or sister be naked and destitute of dayly clothing, and one of you say unto them, depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled, notwithstanding ye give him not those things that are needfull for the body, What doth it profit?* Jam. 2. 16. No sure, it profits them nothing in respect of their bodies, and it will prove to thee as little in respect of thy Soul, it will never be reckoned to thee as a Charity, the relieving of the *bodily wants* of our brethren, is a thing so strictly required of us, that we find it set down Mat. 25. as the essential thing we shall be tried by at the Last day, on the omission whereof is grounded the dreadful sentence, ver. 41. *Depart from me ye cursed into everlasting fire, prepared*

Charity in respect of the Body.

SUNDAY
XVI.

for the Devil and his Angels. And if it shall now be asked, what are the particular acts of this kind which we are to perform? I think we cannot better inform our selves for the frequent and ordinarie ones, then from this Chapter, where are set down these severals, *the giving meat to the hungry, and drink to the thirsty, harbouring the stranger, cloathing the naked, and visiting the sick and imprisoned;* By which *visiting* is meant, not a bare coming to see them, but so coming as to comfort and relieve them; for otherwise it will be but like the *Levite* in the Gospel, *Luke 10.* who came and looked on the wounded man, but did no more, which will never be accepted by God. These are common and ordinarie exercises of this charitie, for which we cannot want frequent opportunities. But besides these there may sometimes by Gods especial providence fall into our hands, occasions of doing other good offices to the bodies of our neighbours; we may sometimes finde a wounded man with the *Samaritan*, and then 'tis our dutie to do as he did; we may sometimes find an innocent person condemned to death, as *Susanna* was, and then are with *Daniel* to use all possible endeavour for their deliverances: This case *Solomon* seems to refer to, *Prov. 24. 11.* *If thou forbear to deliver him that is drawn unto death, and them that are ready to be slain, if thou sayst behold we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider? And he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? Shall not he render to every man accord-*

ing to his deeds? We are not lightly to put the matter with vain excuses, but to remember that God, who knows our most secret thoughts, will severely examine, whether we willingly omitted the performance of such charitie: sometimes again (nay God knows, even now a dayes) we may see a man that by course of intemperance is in danger to destroy his health, to shorten his dayes, & then it is due charitie not only to the soul, but to the body also, to endeavour to draw him from it. It is impossible to set down *all* the possible *acts* of this *corporal charitie*, because there may sometimes happen such opportunities as none can foresee; we are therefore alwayes to carry about us a serious resolution of doing whatever God of this kind we shall at any time discern occasion for, and then whenever that occasion is offered, we are to look on it as a call, as it were from heaven, to put that resolution in practice. This part of charitie seems to be so much implanted in our natures, as we are *men*, that we generally account them not only unchristian, but *inhumane*, that are void of it, and therefore we hope there will not need much perswasion to us, since our verie nature inclines us; but certainly that verie consideration will serve hugely to increase the guilt of those that are wanting in it. For since this command is so agreeable even to flesh and blood, our disobedience to it can proceed from nothing but a stubbornness and resistance against God who gives it.

PARTITION XVII.

Of Charity; Alms-giving, &c. Of Charity in respect of our Neighbours Credit, &c. Of Peace-making. Of going to Law: Of Charity to our Enemies, &c.

§. I. **T**HE *third* way of expressing this *Charity* is towards the *Goods* or *Estate* of our Neighbour; we are to endeavour his thriving and prosperitie in these outward good things; and to that end, be willing to assist and further him in all honest wayes of improving or preserving them, by any neighbourly and friendly office. Opportunities of this do many times fall out: A man may sometimes by his power or perswasion deliver his neighbours goods out of the hands of a thief or oppressour; sometimes again by his advice and counsel, he may set him in a way of thriving, or turn him from some ruinous course; and many other occasions there may be of doing good turns to another, without any loss or damage to our selves, and then we are to do them, even to our *Rich* neighbours, those that are as wealthy (perhaps much more so)

*Charity in
respect of
the Goods.*

*Towards
the Rich.*

our selves; for though *Charity* do not bind
to give to those that want it less then our
res, yet whenever we can further their pro-
without less'ning our own store, it requires
of us: Nay, if the damage be but light to
in comparison of the advantage to him,
will become us rather to hazard that light
damage, then lose him that greater advan-

2. But towards our *poor* brother, *Charitie*
res us to much more; we are there onely to
consider the supplying of his wants, and not to
at parting with what is our own, to re-
ve him, but as far as we are able give freely
that is necessarie to him. This dutie of *Alms-*
ing is perfectly necessarie for the approving
love not only to men, but even to God
himself, as St. *John* tells us, 1 *John* 3. 17. *Who-*
bath this worlds goods, and seeth his brother
we need, and shutteth up his bowels of com-
passion from him, how dwelleth the love of God
in him? 'Tis vain for him to pretend to love ei-
ther God or man, who loves his money so
much better, that he will see his poor brother
(who is a man, and bears the image of God)
suffer all extremities, rather then part with any
thing to relieve him: On the other side, the
performance of this dutie is highly acceptable
with God, as well as with men.

*Towards
the Poor.*

3. 'Tis called, *Heb.* 13. 16. *A sacrifice*
where with God is well pleased, and again, *Phil.*
4. 18. S. *Paul* calls their alms to him, *a Sa-*
crifice acceptable—well-pleasing to God, and

SUNDAY
XVII.

the Church hath alwayes look'd on it as such; and therefore joyned it with the solemnest part of worship, the holy Sacrament. But because even sacrifices themselves under the Law, were often made unacceptable by being maimed and blemished, it will here be necessary to enquire what are the due qualifications of this Sacrifice.

*Motives of
Alms-giving.*

4. *Of these* there are some that respect the *motive*, some the *manner* of our giving. The motive may be *threefold*, respecting God, our neighbour and our selves. That which respects God is obedience and thankfulness to him: he has commanded we should give alms, and therefore one speciall end of our doing so, must be the obeying that precept of his. And it is from his bounty alone that we receive all our plenty, and this is the proper way of expressing our thankfulness for it; for as the *Psalmist* saith, *our goods extend not unto God, Psal. 16.2.* That tribute which we desire to pay out of our estates, we cannot pay to his person. 'Tis the poor, that are as it were his Proxy and receivers, and therefore what ever we should by way of thankfulness give back again unto God, our alms is the way of doing it: *Secondly*, in respect of our neighbour, the motive must be a true love and compassion to him, a tender fellow-feeling of his wants, and desire of his comfort and relief: *Thirdly*, in respect of our selves, the motive is to be the hope of that eternall reward promised to this performance. This

Christ

Christ points out to us, when he bids us *lay up our treasure in heaven, Mat.6.20.* And *make us friends of the Mammon of unrighteousness, that they may receive us into everlasting habitations, Luk.16.9.* That is, by a charitable dispensing of our temporall goods to the poor, to lay up a stock in heaven, to gain a title to those endless felicities, which God hath promised to the charitable. That is the harvest we must expect of what we sow in these works of mercy, which will be so rich as would abundantly recompence us, though we should as the Apostle speaks, *1 Cor.13.3. Bestow all our goods to feed the poor:* But then we must be sure we make this our sole aime, and not instead of this, propose to our selves the praise of men, as the motive of our charity, for that will rob us of the other; this is expressly told us by Christ, *Mat.6. They that do their hearts on the credit, they shall gain nothing, but men will praise them, when they are dead, and their praise shall be as a recompence unto them.* ver. 2. *verily I say unto you, they have their reward; they chose, it seems, rather to have men their pay-masters, then God, and to them they are turn'd off, that little airy praise they get from men, is all the reward they must expect: Ye have no reward of my Father which is in heaven,* ver. 1. we have therefore need to watch our hearts narrowly, that this desire of vain glory steal not in, and befool us into that miserable exchange of a vain blast of mens breath for those substantiall and eternall joyes of heaven.

SUNDAY

XVII.

Manner of
Alms-gi-
ving.

Chearfully.

5. In the *second* place we must take care of our *alms-giving*, in respect of the manner; and in that, *first*, we must give chearfully; men usually value a small thing that is given chearfully, and with a good heart, more then a much greater, that is wrung from a man with grudging and unwillingness; and God is of the same mind, he *loves a chearful giver*, 2 Cor. 9. 7. which the Apostle makes the reason of the foregoing exhortation, of not *giving grudgingly, or as of necessity*, vers. 6. And sure 'tis no unreasonable thing, that is herein required of us, there being no duty that has to humane nature more of pleasure and delight, unless it be where covetousness or cruelty have quite work'd out the man, and put a ravenous beast in his stead. Is it not a most ravishing pleasure to him that hath any bowels, to see the joy that a seasonable alms brings to a poor wretch? how it revives and puts new spirits in him, that was even sinking? certainly the most sensuall creature alive knowes not how to bestow his mony on any thing, that shall bring him in so great a delight, and therefore me thinks it should be no hard matter to give not onely without grudging, but even with a great deal of alacrity and chearfulness, it being the fetching in of pleasure to our selves.

The fear of
impoverish-
ing our
selves by it
vain and
impious.

6. There is but *one Objection* can be made against this, and that is, that the danger of *impoverishing ones self* by what one gives, may take off that pleasure, and make men either
not

not give at all, or not so chearfully. To this answer: That *first*, were this hazard never so apparent, yet it being the command of God that we shall thus give, we are yet to obey chearfully, and be as well content to part with our goods in pursuance of this duty, as we are many times called to do upon some other. In which case *Christ* tells us, *he that forsakes all that he hath, cannot be his Disciple.*

7. But *secondly*, this is sure a vain supposition, God having particularly promised, the contrary to the Charitable, that it shall bring blessings on them, even in these outward things. *The liberall soul shall be made fat, and he that watereth shall be watered also himself,* Prov. 11.25. *He that giveth to the poor shall not lack,* Prov. 28.27. And many the like texts there are, so that one may truly say, this objection is grounded in direct unbelief. The short of it is, we dare not trust God for this: giving to the poor is directly the putting our wealth into his hands. *He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord,* Prov. 19.17. And that too on solemn promise of repayment, as it follows in that verse, *that which he hath given will he pay him again.* It is amongst men thought a great disparagement, when we refuse to trust them; it shews we either think them not sufficient, or not honest: How vile an affront is it then to God thus to distrust him? nay indeed how horrid blasphemy, to doubt the security of that, for which he

SUNDAY
XVII.

he has thus exprestly past his word, who is Lord of all, and therefore cannot be insufficient, and who is the God of truth, and therefore will not fail to make good his Promise? Let not then that *infidel fear* of future want, contract and shut up thy bowels from thy poor brother; for though he be never likely to pay thee, yet God becomes his Suretie, and enters bond with him, and will most assuredly pay thee with increase. Therefore it is so far from being damage to thee, thus to give, that it is thy great advantage: Any man would rather choose to put his money in some sure hand, where he may both improve, and be certain of it at his need, then to let it lie unprofitably by him, especially if he be in danger of thieves, or other accidents, by which he may probably lose it: Now alas! all that we possess is in minutely *danger of losing*; innumerable accidents there are, which may in an instant bring a rich man to beggerie; he that doubts this, let him but read the *story of Job*, and he will there find an example of it: And therefore what so prudent course can we take for our wealth, as to put it out of the reach of those accidents, by thus lending it to God, where we may be sure to find it readie, at our greatest need, and that too with improvement and encrease? in which respect it is that the Apostle compares *Alms to Seed*, 2 Cor. 9. 10. We know it is the nature of Seed that is sown, to multiply and encrease, and so does all our acts of mercie, they return not single and naked to us,

us, but bring in their sheaves with them, a most plenteous and bountiful harvest. God deals not with our *Alms*, as we too often do with his graces, wrap them *up in a napkin*, so that they shall never bring in any advantage to us, but makes us most rich returns : and therefore we have all reason most cheerfully, yea, joytully to set to this Duty, which we have such invitations to, as well in respect of our own interests, as our neighbours needs.

8. *Secondly*, We must give *seasonably* : it is true indeed there are some so poor, that an Alms can never come *unseasonably*, becaule they alwayes want, yet even to them there may be some *speciall* seasons of doing it, to their greater advantage ; for sometimes an Alms may not onely deliver a poor man from some present extremity, but by the right *timeing* of it, may set him in some way of a more comfortable subsistence afterward. And for the most, I presume it is a good *Rule*, to *dispence what we intend to any, as soon as may be*, for delayes are hurtful oftentimes both to them and our selves ; *first*, as to them, it is sure, the longer we delay, the longer they groan under the present want, and after we have design'd them a relief, it is in some degree a cruelty to defer bestowing of it, for so long we prolong their sufferings, you will think him a hard-hearted *Physician*, that having a certain cure for a man in pain, should when he might presently apply it make unnecessary delayes, and so keep the poor man still in torture : and the same it is here, we

Give seasonably.

SUNDAY
XVII.

want of the due compassion, if we can be content our poor brother should have one hour of unnecessary suffering, when we have present opportunity of relieving him, or if he be not in such an extremity of want, yet whatever we intend him for his greater comfort, he loses so much of it, as the time of the delay amounts to: *Secondly*, in respect of our selves; tis ill to defer, for thereby we give advantage to the temptations either of *Satan* or our own covetous humour, to dissuade us from it. Thus it fares too often with many Christian duties; for want of a speedy execution, our purposes cool, and never come to act; so many resolve they will repent, but because they set not immediately upon it, one delay succeeds another, and keeps them from ever doing it at all; and so 'tis very apt to fall out in this case, especially with men who are of a covetous temper, and therefore they of all others should not trust themselves thus to delay.

Prudently.

9. *Thirdly*, We should take care to give *prudently*, that is, to give most, where it is most needed, and in such a manner, as may do the receiver most good: Charities do often miscarry for want of this care, for if we give at all adventures to all that seem to want, we may sometimes give more to those, whose sloth and lewdneis is the cause of their want, then to those who best deserve it, and so both encourage the one in their idleness, and disable our selves from giving to the other. Yet I doubt not such may be the present wants e-

ven of the most unworthie, that we are to relieve them, but where no such pressing need is, we shall do best to chuse out the fitter objects of charitie, such as are those who either are *not able* to labour, or else have a *greater charge* then their labour can maintain, and to those our alms should be given also in such manner as may be most likely to do them good; the manner of which may differ according to the circumstances of their condition; it may to some be best perhaps, to give them by little and little, to others the giving it all at once may tend more to their benefit; and sometimes a *seasonable loan* may do as well as a gift, and that may be in the power sometimes of those who are able to give but little: But when we thus lend on charitie, we must lend freely without Use, and also with a purpose, that if he should prove unable to pay, we will forgive so much of the Principal as his needs require, and our abilities will permit. They want much of this charitie, who clap up *poor debtors* in prison, when they know they have nothing to answer the debt, which is a great crueltie to make another miserable, when nothing is gained to our selves by it.

10. *Fourthly*, We should give *liberally*, we must not be strait-handed in our *alms*, and give by such pitiful scantlings, as will bring almost no relief to the receiver, for that is a kind of mockerie: 'tis as if one should pretend to feed one that is almost famish'd by giving him a crumb

SUNDAY crumb of bread ; such Doles as that would be
XVII. most ridiculous , yet I fear 'tis too near the
 proportion of some mens aims ; such men
 are below those Disciples we read of, who
 knew only the Baptism of *John*, for 'tis to be
 observed, that *John Baptist*, who was but the
 fore-runner of Christ, makes it a speciall part
 of his Doctrine, that he *that hath two coats*
should impart to him that hath none, *Luk. 3.11.*
 He sayes not, he that hath some great Ward-
 robe, but even he that hath *but two coats* must
 part with one of them ; from whence we may
 gather that whatsoever is above (not our vanity
 but) our need should thus be disposed of,
 when our brethrens necessity requires it. But
 if we look into the *first* time of the Gospel, we
 will find Christianity far exceeded this pro-
 portion of *Johns*, the *converts* assigned not a
 partonely, but frankly *gave all to the use of*
the Brethren, *Acts 4.* and though that being
 upon an extraordinary occasion, will be no
 measure for our constant practice, yet it may
 shew us how prime and fundamentall a part of
 Christianity, this of Charity is, that at the
 very first founding of the Church, such vast
 degrees of it were practised ; and if we farther
 consider what precepts of love are given us in
 the Gospel even to the *laying down our lives*
for the brethren, *1 Joh. 3. 16.* We cannot ima-
 gine our goods are in Gods account so much
 more precious then our lives, that he would
 command us to be prodigal of the one, and yet
 allows us to be sparing of the other.

11. A multitude of Arguments might be brought to recommend this bounty to all that profess Christ; I shall mention onely two, which I find used by S. Paul to the *Corinthians* on this occasion. The first is the example of Christ, 2 Cor. 8. 9. *For ye know the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, who though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.* Christ emptied himself of all that glory and greatness, He enjoyed in Heaven with his Father, and submitted himself to a life of much want and poverty, onely to enrich us. And therefore for shame, let us not grudge to empty our Coffers, to lessen somewhat of our Treasures, to relieve his poor members. The second, is the expectation of reward, which will be more or less, according to the degrees of our Alms, 2 Cor. 9. 6. *He that soweth sparingly shall reap sparingly, and he that soweth bountifully shall reap bountifully.* We think of a very improvident husband man, that to save a little seed at present, sowes so thin, as to spoil his crop; and the same folly 'twill be in us, if by the sparingness of our Alms, we make our selves a lank harvest hereafter, whether all, or a great part of those rewards which God hath provided for the liberal Alms-giver. What is the proportion which may be called a liberall giving, I shall not undertake to set down, there being degrees even in liberality, one may give liberally, and yet another give more liberally then he; besides, liberality is to be

SUNDAY be measured, not so much by what is given,
XVII. as by the abilitie of the giver. A man of a mean estate may give less then one of a great, and yet be the more liberal person, because that little may be more out of his, then the greater is out of the others. Thus we see Christ pronounces the poor widow to *have given more to the Treasurie, then all the rich men*, Luke 21. 3. not that her *two mites* were more then their *rich gifts*, but that it was more for her, she having left nothing behind, whereas they gave out of their abundance what they might easily spare. Everie man must herein judge for himself; we see the Apostle, though he earnestly press the *Corinthians* to bountie, yet prescribes not to them how much they shall give, but leaves that to their own breasts, 2 Cor. 9. 7. *Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give.* But let us still remember, that the more we give (provided we do not thereby fail in the support of those, that most immediately depend on us) the more acceptable it will be to God, and the more rewardable by him. And to secure the performance of the dutie of alms-giving (what ever the proportion be) we may do verie well to follow the advice S. Paul gives the *Corinthians* in this matter, 1 Cor. 16. 2. *Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store as God hath prospered him;* If men would do thus, lay by somewhat weekly in store for this work of Charitie, it were the surest

direct way not to be unprovided of somewhat to give, when an occasion offered it self, and by giving so by little and little, the expence would become less sensible, and so be a means to prevent those *grudgings*, and *repinings*, which are apt to attend men in greater disbursements; and sure this were in other respects also a very proper course, for when a *trades-man* casts up his weekly account, and sees what his gains have been, 'tis of all others the most seasonable time to offer this tribute to God out of what he hath by his blessing gained; if any will say they cannot so well weekly reckon their gains, as by longer spaces of time, I shall not contend with them for that precise time, let it be done *monthly* or *quarterly*, so it be done: But that somewhat should still be laid by in bank for these uses rather than left loose to our sudden Charities is sure very expedient, and I doubt not, whoever will make trial of it, will upon experience acknowledge it to be so.

12. The *fourth* exercise of our Charity is towards the *credit* of our neighbour: and of this we may have many occasions; sometimes towards the innocent, and sometimes also towards the guilty. If one whom we know to be an innocent person, be slandered, and traduced, Charity bindes us to do what we may for the declaring his innocency, and delivering him from that false imputation, and that not only by witnessing when we are called to it, but by a voluntary offering our testimony

SUNDAY
XVII.

simony on his behalf, or if the accusation be not before a Court of Justice, and so there be no place for that our more solemn testimony, but that it be only a slander tost from one to another, yet even there we are to do what we can to clear him, by taking all occasions publickly to declare what we know of his innocency. But even to the guilty there is some Charity of this kinde to be performed, sometimes by concealing the fault, if it be such that no other part of Charity to others make it necessary to discover, or be it not so notorious, as that it will be sure to betray it self: The wounds of *Reputation* are of all others the most incurable, and therefore it may well become Christian Charity to prevent them, even where they have been deserved; and perhaps such a tenderness in hiding the fault may sooner bring the offender to Repentance, if it be seconded (as it ought to be) with all earnestness of private admonition: But if the fault be such, that it be not to be concealed, yet still there may be place for this Charity, in extenuating, and lessening it, as far as the circumstances will bear; As if it were done *suddenly* and rashly, Charity will allow some abatement of the Censure, which would belong to a designed and *deliberate* Act; and so proportionably in other circumstances. But the most frequent exercises of this Charity happen towards those, of whose either innocency or guilt we have no knowledge, but are by some *doubtful*
actions

actions brought under suspicion: And here we must remember, that it is the property of love, *not to think evil*, to judge the best; and therefore we are both to abstain from uncharitable conclusions of them our selves, and as much as lies in us, to keep others from them also, and so endeavour to preserve the credit of our neighbour, which is often times as much shaken by unjust suspicions, as it would be by the truest accusation. To these Cases, I suppose belongs that precept of Christ, *Mat. 7. 1. Judge not*; and when we consider how that is backt in the following words, *That ye be not judged*, we shall have cause to believe it no such light matter, as the world seems to account it; our unmerciful judging of others will be paid home to us, in the strict and severe Judgement of God.

13. I have now gone through this *Active Charity*, as it relates to the four several capacities of our brethren, many of the particulars whereof were before briefly mentioned, when we spake of *Justice*. If any think it improper, that the same acts should be made part of *Justice* and *Charity* too, I shall desire them to consider, that *Charity* being by Christs command become a debt to our brethren, all the parts of it may in that respect be ranked under the head of *Justice*, since 'tis sure, paying of debts is a part of that: Yet because in our common use we do distinguish between the offices of *Justice* and *Charity*, I have chose to enlarge on them in particular

The acts of charity in some respects acts of Justice also.

SUNDAY

XVII.

reference to *Charity*. But I desire it may still be remembred, that whatsoever is under precept, is so much a due from us, that we sin not only against *Charity*, but *Justice* too, if we neglect it; which deserves to be considered, the more to stir up our care to the performance, and the rather, because there seems to be a common errour in this point; men look upon their Acts of mercy, as things purely Voluntary that they have no Obligation to; and the effect of it is this, that they are apt to think very highly of themselves, when they have performed any, though never so mean, but never blame themselves, though they omit all: which is a very dangerous, but withal a very natural fruit of the former persuasion: If there be any Charities wherein Justice is not concerned, they are those which for the height and degrees of them are not made matter of strict Duty, that is, are not in those degrees commanded by God, and even after these 'twill be very reasonable for us to labour; but that cannot be done without taking the lower and necessary degrees in our way; and therefore let our first care be for them.

*The great
rule of
Charity.*

14. To help us wherein there will be no better means, then to keep before our eyes that grand rule of *Loving our neighbours as our selves*; this the Apostle makes the summe of our *Whole duty to our Neighbours*, Rom. 13.9. let this therefore be the *standard*, whereby to measure all thy actions, which relate to others;

others; when ever any necessity of thy Neighbours presents it self to thee, ask thy self, whether if thou wert in the like case, thy love to thy self would not make thee industrious for relief, and then resolve thy love to thy Neighbour must have the same effect for him. This is that *Royal Law*, as St. *James* calls it, *Jam. 2.8.* which all that profess themselves subjects to Christ, must be ruled by; and whosoever is so will not fail of performing all Charities to others, because 'tis sure he would upon the like occasions have all such performed to himself. There is none, but wishes to have *his* good name defended, *his* poverty relieved, *his* bodily suffering succoured; only it may be said, that in the *spiritual wants*, there are some so careless of themselves, that they wish no supply, they desire no reproofs, no instructions, nay, are angry when they are given them; it may therefore seem that such men are not by virtue of this rule tied to those sorts of Charities. To this I Answer, that the *love of our selves*, which is here set as the measure of that to our Neighbour, is to be understood to be that reasonable love, which men ought to have, and therefore though a man fail of that due love he owes himself, yet his Neighbour hath not thereby forfeited his right, he has still a claim to such a degree of our love, as is answerable to that, which in right we should bear to our selves, and such I am sure is this care of our spiritual estate, and there-

SUNDAY
XVII.

fore 'tis not our despising our own Souls, that will absolve us from Charitie to other mens; yet I shall not much press this dutie in such men, it being neither likely that they will be perswaded to it, or do any good by it, their ill example will overwhelm all their good exhortations, and make them unfruitful.

Peace-making.

15. There is yet one Act of Charitie behind, which does not properly fall under any one of the former heads, and yet may relate to them all, and that is, the *Making peace* and amitie among others; by doing whereof we may much benefit both the Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit of our brethren; for all these are in danger by strife and contention. The reconciling of enemies is a most blessed work, and brings a blessing on the actors: We have Christs word for it, *Blessed are the Peace-makers*, Mat. 5. 9. and therefore we may be encouraged diligently to lay hold of all opportunities of doing this office of Charitie, to use all our Art and endeavour to take up all grudges and quarrels we discern among others; neither must we onely labour to restore peace where it is lost, but to preserve it where it is: *First*, generally, by striving to beget in the heart of all we converse with a true value of that most precious Jewel, Peace; *Secondly*, particularly, by a timely prevention of those jars, and unkindesses, we see likely to fall out. It may many times be in the power of a discreet friend or neighbour,

to cure those mistakes and misapprehensions, which are the first beginnings of quarrels and contentions; and it will be both more easie and more profitable, thus to prevent, then pacifie strifes. 'Tis sure 'tis more easie, for when a quarrel is once broken out, 'tis like a violent flame, which cannot so soon be quencht, as it might have been, whilst it was but a smothering fire. And then 'tis also more profitable, for it prevents many sins, which in the progress of an open contention, are almost sure to be committed. *Solomon* sayes, *In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin*, Prov. 10. 19. which cannot more truly be said of any sorts of words, then those that pass in anger, and then though the quarrel be afterwards composed, yet those sins will still remain on their account; and therefore it is a great Charitie to prevent them.

16. But to fit a man for this so excellent an Office of *Peace-making*, 'Tis necessarie that he be first remarkably *peaceable himself*; for with what face canst thou perswade others to that which thou wilt not perform thy self? Or how canst thou expect thy perswasions should work? 'Twill be a readie reply in everie mans mouth, *Thou Hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye*, Matth. 7. 5. and therefore be sure thou qualifie thy self for the work. There is one point of *Peateableness* which seems to be little regarded among men, and that is in the Case of *Legal trespasses*; Men think it nothing to go to *Law* about

He that undertakes it must be peaceable himself.

Of going to Law.

SUNDAY
XVII.

every petty trifle, and as long as they have but Law on their side, never think they are to blame: but sure had we that true peaceableness of spirit which we ought, we should be unwilling for such slight matters to trouble and disquiet our Neighbours. Not that all going to Law is utterly unchristian, but such kind of *Suits* especially, as are upon contentiousness, and stoutness of humour, to defend such an inconsiderable right, as the parting with will do us little or no harm, or which is yet worse, to avenge such a trespass. And even in great matters, he that shall part with somewhat of his Right for love of Peace, does surely the most Christianly, and most agreeably to the advice of the Apostle, 1 Cor. 6. 7. rather to *take wrong, and suffer our selves to be defrauded.* But if the damage be so unsupportable, that it is necessary for us to go to Law, yet even then we must take care of preserving Peace; *first*, by carrying still a friendly and Christian temper towards the party, not suffering our hearts to be at all estranged from him; *secondly*, by being willing to yield to any reasonable terms of agreement, whenever they shall be offered; and truly if we carry not this temper of mind in our suits, I see not how they can be reconcilable with that peaceableness so strictly required of all Christians. Let those consider this who make it their pleasure themselves to disquiet their Neighbour, or their trade to stir up others to do it. This tender regard of Peace both

our selves, and others, is absolutely necessary to be entertained of all those, who own themselves to be the servants of him, whose title is to be the *Prince of Peace*, *Isai*, 9.6.

17. All that remains to be toucht on concerning this *Charity* of the *Actions*, is the extent of it, which must be as large as the former of the affections, even to the taking in not only strangers, and those of no relation to us, but even of our bitterest enemies. I have already spoken so much of the Obligation we are under to forgive them, that I shall not here say any thing of that, but that being supposed a Duty, 'twill sure then appear no unreasonable thing to proceed one step further, by doing them good turns; for when we have once forgiven them, we can then no longer account them enemies, and so 'twill be no hard matter even to flesh and blood to do all kinde things to them. And indeed this is the way, by which we must try the sincerity of our forgiveness: 'Tis easie to say, I forgive such a man, but if when an opportunity of dooing him good is offered, thou declinest it, 'tis apparent there yet lurks the old malice in thy heart; where there is a thorough forgiveness, there will be as great a readiness to benefit an enemy as a friend: nay perhaps in some respects a greater, a true charitable person looking upon it as an *special prize*, when he has an opportunity of evidencing the truth of his reconciliation, and obeying the precept of his Saviour, by
doing

This charity of the actions must reach to enemies.

SUNDAY *doing good to them that hate him, Matth. 5. 44.*
XVII. Let us therefore resolve that all actions of kind-

ness are to be performed to our enemies, for which we have not only the command, but also the example of Christ, who had not only some inward relentings towards us his obstinate and most provoking enemies, but shewed it in acts, and those no cheap, or easie ones, but such as cost him his dearest blood, And surely we can never pretend to be either obeyers of his Command, or followers of his Example, if we grudge to testifie our loves to our Enemies by those so much cheaper wayes of *feeding them in hunger*, and the like, recommended to us by the Apostle, *Rom. 12. 20.* But if we could perform these acts of kindness to enemies in such manner as might draw them from their enmitie, and win them to Peace, the Charity would be doubled; And this we should aim at, for that we see the Apostle sets as the end of the forementioned acts of feeding, &c. that we may *heap coals of fire on their heads*, not coals to burn, but to melt them into all love and tenderness towards us, and this were indeed the most compleat way of *imitating Christs example*, who in all he did and suffered for us, designed the reconciling of us to himself.

*Self-love
an bin-
drance to
this Chari-
ty.*

18. I have now shewed you the several parts of our *duty to our Neighbour*, towards the performance whereof I know nothing more necessary, then the turning out of our hearts that *self-love* which so often posselles them,
and

that so wholly, that it leaves no room for Charity, nay, nor justice neither to our neighbour. By this *self-love* I mean not that love of our selves, which is the love and care of our Souls (for that would certainly help, not hinder us in this duty) but I mean that immoderate love of our own worldly interests and advantages, which is apparently the root of all both injustice and uncharitableness towards others. We finde this sin of *self-love* set by the Apostle in the head of a whole troop of sins, 2 *Tim.* 3. 2. as if it were some principal officer in Satans camp; and certainly, not without reason, for it never goes without an accursed train of many other sins, which like the *Dragons tail*, *Rev.* 12. 4. *draws away all care of duty to others.* We see by it made so vehement and intent upon the pleasing our selves, that we have no regard to any body else, contrary to the direction of St. Paul, *Rom.* 15 2. Which is *not to please our selves, but every man to please his Neighbour for his good to edification*; which he backs with the example of Christ, verse 3. *For even Christ pleased not himself*: If therefore we have any sincere desire to have this vertue of charity rooted in our hearts, we must be careful to weed out this sin of *self-love*, for 'tis impossible they can prosper together,

19. But when we have removed this hindrance, we must remember that this, as all other graces, proceeds not from our selves, it is the gift of God, and therefore we must earnestly

Prayer a
mean to
procure it.

pray

SUNDAY pray to him to work it in us, to send his holy
XVII. Spirit, which once appeared in the form of a Dove, a meek and gall-less creature, to frame our hearts to the same temper, and enable us rightly to perform this duty.

*Christian
 duties both
 possible and
 pleasant.*

20. **I** Have now past through those several Branches I at first proposed, and shewed you what is our *Duty to God, our Selves and our Neighbour*: Of which I may say as it is, *Luke 10. 28. This do and thou shalt live.* And surely it is no impossible task to perform this in such a measure, as God will graciously accept, that is, in Sinceritie, though not in Perfection, for God is not that austere Master, *Luke 19. 20. That reaps where he has not sown,* he requires nothing of us, which he is not ready by his Grace to enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to our selves, either in asking it by Prayer, or in using it by Diligence. And as it is not impossible, so neither is it such a sad melancholy task, as men are apt to think it. 'Tis a special policie of *Satans*, to do as the *Spies* did, *Num. 23. 28. bring up an ill report upon this good Land,* this state of *Christian life*, thereby to discourage us from entering into it, to fright us, with I know not what *Giants* we shall meet with; but let us not thus be cheated, let us but take the courage to trie, and we shall indeed finde it a *Canaan, a Land flowing with milk and honey*: God is not in this respect to his people a *wilderness, a Land of darkness, Jer. 2. 31.* His Service does not be-
 reave

Mat. 17. *Of Turning to God.*

383

SUNDAY
XVII.

men of any true joy, but helps them to
great deal: *Christs yoke is an easie*, nay a
pleasant yoke, his *burden a light*, yea a gracious
burden. There is in the *Practise of Christian*
Duties a great deal of present pleasure, and if
we feel it not, it is because of the resistance our
sinful and sinful customes make, which by the
convention raises an uneasiness. But then *first*
that is to be charged only to our selves, for
having got those ill customes, and thereby
made that hard to us, which in it self is most
pleasant, the *Duties* are not to be accused for
it. And then *secondly*, even there the pleasure
of subduing those ill habits, overcoming those
corrupt customes is such, as hugely out weigh-
eth all the trouble of the combate,

21. But it will perhaps be said, that some
parts of piety are of such a nature, as will be ve-
ry apt to expose us to *persecutions* and suffer-
ings in the world, and that those are not joy-
ful, but grievous.

*Even when
they expose
us to out-
ward suffer-
ings.*

I answer, that even in those there is matter
of joy: we see the Apostles thought it so, they
rejoyced that they were counted worthy to suffer
for *Christs name*, Acts 4. 41. and S. Peter tells
us, that if any suffer as a Christian, he is to glo-
rify God for it, 1 Pet. 4. 16. There is such a force
and vertue in the testimony of a good Consci-
ence, as is able to change the greatest suffering
into the greatest triumph, and that testimony
we can never have more clear and lively, then
when we suffer for righteousness sake; so that
you see *Christianity* is very amiable even in its
saddest

SUNDAY
XVII.

saddest dress, the inward comforts of it do far surpass all the outward tribulations that attend it, and that even in the instant, while we are in the state of warfare upon earth. But then if we look forward to the *crown* of our victories, those eternal rewards in Heaven, we can never think those tasks sad, though we had nothing at present to sweeten them, that have such recompences await them at the end; were our labours never so heavy, we could have no cause to faint under them: Let us therefore when ever we meet with any discouragements in our course, fix our eye on this rich prize, and then *run with patience the race which is set before us*, Heb. 12. 2. Follow the *Captain of our salvation* through the greatest sufferings, yea even through the same *red sea* of blood which he hath waded, whenever our Obedience to him shall require it; for though our *fidelity* to him should bring us to death it self, we are sure to be no losers by it, for to such he hath promised a *Crown of life*, the very expectation whereof is able to keep a Christian more cheerful in his fetters and dungeon, then a worldling can be in the midst of his greatest prosperities.

*The danger
of delaying
our turn-
ing to God.*

22. All that remains for me farther to adde, is earnestly to intreat and beseech the Reader, that without delay, he puts himself into this so pleasant and gainful a course, by setting sincerely to the *practise* of all those things, which either by this *Book*, or by any other means he discerns to be his Duty, and

Part. 17: *Of Turning to God.*

385

SUNDAY
XVII.

And the further he hath formerly gone out of
his way, the more haste it concerns him to
make to get into it, and to use the more dili-
gence in walking in it. He that hath a long
way to go, and findes he hath lost a great
part of his day in a *wrong way*, will not need
much intreaty, either to turn into the right,
or to quicken his pace in it. And this is the
case of all those that have lived in any course
of sin, they are in a wrong road, which will
never bring them to the place they aim at;
nay, which will certainly bring them to the
place they most fear and abhor; much of their
day is spent, how much will be left to finish
their journey in, none knowes, perhaps the
next hour, the next minute the night of death
may overtake them; what a madness is it
then for them to defer one moment to turn
out of that path which leads to certain de-
struction, and to put themselves in that, which
will bring them to blis and glory? Yet so
are men bewitched, and enchanted with the
Deceitfulness of sin, that no entreaty, no per-
suasion can prevail with them, to make this
so reasonable, so necessary a change, not but
that they acknowledge it needful to be done,
but they are unwilling to do it yet, they
would enjoy all the pleasures of sin as long
as they live, and then they hope at their death,
or some little time before it, to do all the bu-
siness of their Souls; but, alas! Heaven is
too high to be thus jumpt into, the way to it
is long and leasurely ascent, which requires
time

SUNDAY time to walk. The hazards of such deferring are
XVII. more largely spoken of in the *Discourse of Repentance*: I shall not here repeat them, but desire the Reader seriously to lay them to heart, and then surely he will think it seasonable Counsel that is given by the Wise man, *Eccles.* 5. 7. *Make no tarrying to turn to the Lord, and put not off from day to day.*

FINIS.

are
Re-
but
art,
ble
les.
and

PRIVATE
DEVOTIONS

For several
OCCASIONS,

ORDINARY

And

EXTRAORDINARY.



LONDON,

Printed for *T. Garthwait*, at the little North
Door of *St. Pauls Church*, 1660.

1. c. 39 (2)

CHRISTIAN READER.

I Have, for the help of thy Devotions, set down some FORMS of PRIVATE PRAYER, upon several occasions: If it be thought an omission that there are none for Families, I must answer for my self, that it was not from any opinion that God is not as well to be worshipp'd in the Family as the Closet; but because the Providence of God and the Church hath already furnish'd thee for that purpose, infinitely beyond what my utmost care could do. I mean the PUBLICK LITURGY or COMMON PRAYER, which for all publick addresses to God (and such are Family prayers) are so excellent and useful, that we may say of it as David did of Goliath's sword, 1 Sam. 21. 9. There is none like it.

DIRECTIONS for the MORNING.

As soon as ever thou awakest in the morning, lift up thy heart to God in this or the like short Prayer.

LORD, as thou hast awak'd my Body from sleep, so by thy grace awaken my Soul from sin, and make me so to walk before thee this day and all the rest of my life, that when the last trumpet shall awake me out of my grave, I may rise to the life immortal, through Jesus Christ.

When

WHen thou hast thus begun, suffer not (without some urgent necessity) any worldly thoughts to fil thy mind, till thou hast also paid thy more solemn Devotions to Almighty God, and therefore during the time thou art dressing thy self (which should be no longer then common decency requires) exercise thy mind in some spiritual thoughts: as for example, consider to what Temptations thy business or company that day are most like to lay thee open, and arm thy self with Resolutions against them; or again, consider what Occasions of doing service to God, or good to thy neighbour are that day most likely to present themselves, and resolve to embrace them; and also contrive how thou mayst improve them to the uttermost. But especially it will be fit for thee to Examine whether there have any sin escaped thee since thy last nights examination. If after these considerations any further leisure remain, thou mayst profitably employ it in meditating on the general Resurrection (whereof our rising from our beds is a Representation) and of that dreadful Judgement which shall follow it, and then think with thy self in what preparation thou art for it, and resolve to husband carefully every minute of thy time towards the fitting thee for that great account. As soon as thou art ready, retire to some private place, and there offer up to God thy Morning Sacrifice of Praise and Prayer.

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

Prayers for the Morning.

At thy first kneeling down, say,

O Holy, Blessed and Glorious Trinity, three Persons and one God, have mercy upon me a miserable sinner.

LORD, I know not what to pray for as I ought, O let thy Spirit help my infirmities, and enable me to offer up a spiritual Sacrifice acceptable to thee by Jesus Christ.

A Thanksgiving.

O Gracious Lord, whose mercies endure for ever, I thy unworthy servant who have so deeply tasted of them, desire to render thee the tribute of my humblest praises for them: In thee, O Lord, I live & move and have my being, thou first madest me to be, and then that I might not be miserable but happy, thou sendest thy Son out of thy bosom to Redeem me from the power of my sins by his Grace, and from the punishment of them by his Blood, and by both to bring me to his glory. Thou hast by thy mercy caused me to be born within thy peculiar fold, the Christian Church, where I was early consecrated to thee in Baptisme, and have been partaker of all those spiritual helps which might aid me to performe that Vow I there made to thee; and when by my own wilfulness

Prayers for Morning.

5

willfulness or negligence I have failed to do it, yet thou in thy manifold mercies hast not forsaken me, but hast graciously invited me to repentance, afforded me all means both outward and inward for it, and with much patience hast attended and not cut me off in the acts of those many damning sins I have committed, as I have most justly deserved. It is, O Lord, thy Restraining grace alone by which I have been kept back from any the greatest sins, and it is thy Inciting and Assisting grace alone, by which I have been enabled to do any the least good, therefore not unto me, not unto me, but unto thy name be the praises. For these and all other thy spiritual blessings, my soul doth magnifie the Lord, and all that is within me praise his holy Name. I likewise praise thee for those many outward Blessings I enjoy, as health, friends, food and raiment, the comforts as well as the necessities of this life, for those continual Protections of thy hand, by which I and mine are kept from dangers, and those gracious Deliverances thou hast often afforded out of such as have befallen me; and for that mercy of thine whereby thou hast sweetned and allayed those Troubles thou hast not seen fit wholly to remove: for thy particular Preservation of me this night, and all other thy goodness towards me; Lord, grant that I may render thee not only the fruit of my lips, but the obedience of my life, that so these blessings here may be an earnest of those richer blessings thou hast prepared for those that love thee, and that for

his sake whom thou hast made the Author of Eternal Salvation to all that obey him, even Jesus Christ.

A Confession.

O Righteous Lord, who hatest iniquitie, I thy sinful creature cast my self at thy feet, acknowledging that I most justly deserve to be utterly abhorred and forsaken by thee; for I have drunk iniquitie like water, gone on in a continued course of sin and rebellion against thee, daily committing those things thou forbiddest, and leaving undone those things thou commandest; mine heart, which should be an habitation for thy spirit, is become a cage of unclean birds, of foul and disordered affections; and out of this abundance of the heart my mouth speaketh, my hands act, so that in thought, word and deed I continually transgress against thee. [*Here mention the greatest of thy sins.*] Nay, O Lord, I have despised that goodness of thine which should lead me to Repentance, hardning my heart against all those means thou hast used for my amendment. And now, Lord, what can I expect from thee but judgement and fierie indignation, that is indeed the due reward of my sins? But, O Lord, there is mercie with thee that thou mayest be feared, O fit me for that mercie by giving me a deep and heartie Repentance, and then according to thy goodness let thy anger and thy wrath be turned away from me; look upon me
in

Prayers for Morning.

7

in thy Son, my blessed Saviour, and for the merit of his sufferings pardon all my sins: And, Lord, I beseech thee by the power of thy grace so to renew and purifie my heart; that I may become a new creature, utterly forsaking every evil way, and living in constant, sincere, universal obedience to thee all the rest of my days, that behaving my self as a good and faithful servant, I may by thy mercie at the last be received into the joy of my Lord: Grant this for Jesus Christ his sake.

A Prayer for Grace.

O Most gracious God, from whom everie good and perfect gift cometh, I wretched creature that am not able of my self so much as to think a good thought, beseech thee to work in me both to Will and Do according to thy good pleasure. Inlighten my minde that I may know thee, and let me not be barren or unfruitful in that knowledge; Lord, work in my heart a true Faith, a purifying Hope, and an unfeigned Love towards thee, give me a full Trust on thee, Zeal for thee, Reverence of all things that relate to thee; make me Fearful to offend thee, Thankful for thy mercies, Humble under thy corrections, Devout in thy Service, Sorrowful for my sins; and grant that in all things I may behave my self so as befits a creature to his Creatour, a servant to his Lord; enable me likewise to perform that Dutie I owe to my self, give me that Meekness, Humilitie, and

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS

Contentedness whereby I may alwayes possess my soul in Patience and Thankfulness; make me Diligent in all my duties, Watchful against all temptations, perfectly pure and Temperate, and so moderate in my most lawfull enjoyments, that they never become a snare to me; make me also, O Lord, to be so affected towards my Neighbour, that I never transgress that royal Law of thine, of loving him as my self; grant me exactly to perform all parts of Justice, yielding to all whatsoever by any kinde of Right becomes their due, and give me such bowels of Mercie and compassion that I may never fail to do all acts of Charitie to all men, whether friends or enemies, according to thy command and example. Finally, I beseech thee, O Lord, to sanctifie me throughout, that my whole spirit and soul and bodie may be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ; to whom with thee and the Holy Ghost be all honour and glorie for ever. *Amen.*

Intercession.

O Blessed Lord, whose mercie is over all thy works, I beseech thee to have mercie upon all men, and grant that the precious ransom which was paid by thy Son for all, may be effectual to the saving of all. Give thy enlightning Grace to those that are in darkness, and thy converting grace to those that are in sin; look with thy tenderest compassions upon the Universal Church, O be favourable and gracious unto

Prayers for Morning.

9

unto *Sion*, build thou the walls of *Jerusalem*;
unite all those that profess thy Name to thee,
by Puritie, and Holiness; and to each other
by Brotherly love. Have mercie on *This* de-
solate Church, and sinful Nation, thou hast
moved the Land and divided it, heal the sores
thereof for it shaketh; make us so truly to re-
pent of those sins, which have provoked thy
judgements, that thou also may'it turn, and
repent, and leave a blessing behinde thee. Bless
those whom thou hast appointed our gover-
nors, whether in Church or State, so rule their
hearts, and strengthen their hands, that they
may neither want will nor power to punish
wickedness and vice, and to maintain Gods
true Religion and Vertue. Have pitie, O Lord,
on all that are in affliction; be a Father to the
fatherless, and plead the cause of the Widow,
comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak,
heal the sick, relieve the needie, defend the
Oppressed, & administer to everie one according
to their several necessities; let thy blessings rest
upon all that are near and dear to me, and grant
them whatsoever thou seeest necessarie either
to their bodies or their souls. [*Here name thy
nearest Relations*] Reward all those that have
done me good, and pardon all those that have
done, or wisht me evil, and work in them and
me all that good which may make us accep-
table in thy sight, through Jesus Christ.

For Preservation.

O Merciful God, by whose bountie alone it is, that I have this day added to my life, I beseech thee so to guide me in it by thy grace, that I may do nothing which may dishonour thee, or wound my own soul, but that I may diligently apply my self to do all such good works, as thou hast prepared for me to walk in; and Lord I beseech thee, give thy Angels charge over me, to keep me in all my wayes, that no evil happen unto me, nor any plague come nigh my dwelling, but that I and mine may be safe under thy gracious protection, through Jesus Christ.

O Lord, pardon the wandrings and coldness of these petitions, and deal with me, not according either to my prayers or deserts, but according to my needs and thine own rich mercies in Jesus Christ, in whose blessed Name and Words, I conclude these my imperfect Prayers; saying, *Our Father*, &c.

Directions for Night.

AT NIGHT, when it draws towards the time of rest, bethink thy self how thou hast passed the day, examine thine own heart, what sin either of Thought, Word, or Deed thou hast committed, what opportunity of doing good thou

Directions for Night.

11

thou hast omitted, and whatsoever thou findest
reaccuse thy self of, confess humbly and penitently
to God, renew thy purposes, and resolutions of
amendment, and beg his pardon in Christ, and
this not slightly, and only as of course, but with
all devout earnestness, and heartiness, as thou
wouldest do, if thou wert sure thy death were as
near approaching, as thy sleep, which for ought
thou knowest may be so indeed, and therefore thou
shouldest no more venture to sleep unreconciled to
God, then thou wouldest dare to die so. In the next
place, consider what special and extraordinary mer-
cies thou hast that day received, as if thou hast
had any great deliverance, either in thy inward
man, from some dangerous temptations, or in thy
outward, from any great and apparent danger,
and offer to God thy hearty and devout praise for
the same; or if nothing extraordinary have so
happened, and thou hast been kept even from the
approach of danger, thou hast not the less, but
the greater cause to magnifie God, who hath by
his protection so guarded thee, that not so much
as the fear of evil hath assaulted thee. And there-
fore omit not to pay him the tribute of humble
thankfulness, as well for his usuall and daily
preservations, as his more extraordinary delive-
rances. And above all endeavour still by the con-
siderations of his mercies to have thy heart the
more closely knit to him, remembering that every
favour received from him is a new engagement
upon thee, to love and obey him.

Prayers

Prayers for Night.

O Holy, blessed and glorious Trinity, three persons and one God, have mercy upon me a miserable sinner.

Lord I know not what to pray for as I ought,
O let thy Spirit help my infirmities, and enable me to offer up a spiritual Sacrifice acceptable unto thee by Jesus Christ.

A Confession.

O MOST Holy Lord God, who art of purer eyes then to behold iniquity, how shall I abominable wretch dare to appear before thee, who am nothing but pollution? I am defiled in my very nature, having a backwardness to all good, and a readiness to all evil; but I have defiled my self yet much worse by my own actual sins and wicked customes; I have transgressed my duty to Thee, my Neighbour, and my Self, and that both in thought, in word, in deed, by doing those things which thou hast expressly forbidden, and by neglecting to do those things thou hast commanded me. And this not only through ignorance and frailty, but knowingly, and wilfully, against the motions of thy Spirit, and the checks of my own conscience to the contrary. And to make all these out of measure sinful, I have gone on in a daily course of repeating these provocations against thee, notwithstanding

Prayers for Night.

13

all thy calls to, and my own purposes and vows of amendment; yea, this very day I have not ceased to adde new sins to all my former guilt. [*Here name the particulars.*] And now, O Lord, what shall I say, or how shall I open my mouth, seeing I have done these things? I know that the wages of these sins is death; but O thou who wilt not the death of a sinner, have mercy upon me; work in me I beseech thee a sincere contrition, and a perfect hatred of my sins, and let me not daily confess, and yet as daily renew them, but grant, O Lord, that from this instant I may give a bill of Divorce to all my most beloved lusts, and then be thou pleased to marry me to thy self in truth, in righteousness & holiness. And for al my past sins, O Lord, receive a reconciliation; accept of that ransom thy blessed Son hath paid for me, and for his sake whom thou hast set forth as a propitiation, pardon all my offencies, and receive me to thy favour. And when thou hast thus spoken peace to my soul, Lord keep me that I turn not any more to folly, but so establish me with thy grace, that no temptation of the world, the Devil or my own flesh may ever draw me to offend thee, that being made free from sin, and becoming a servant unto God, I may have my fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

A Thanksgiving.

O thou Father of Mercies, who art kind even to the unthankful, I acknowledge my self to have abundantly experimented that gracious propertie of thine, for notwithstanding my dayly provocations against thee, thou still heapelt mercy and loving kindness upon me. All my contempts and despisings of thy spiritual favours have not yet made thee withdraw them, but in the riches of thy goodness and long suffering thou still continuest to me the offers of grace and life in thy Son. And all my abuses of thy temporal blessings thou hast not punished with an utter deprivation of them, but art still pleased to afford me a liberal portion of them. The sins of this day thou hast not repayed as justly thou might'st, by sweeping me away with a swift destruction, but hast spared and preserved me according to the greatness of thy mercy. [*Here mention the particular mercies of that day.*] What shall I render unto the Lord, for all these benefits he hath done unto me? Lord, let this goodness of thine lead me to repentance, and grant that I may not only offer thee thanks and praise, but may also order my conversation aright, that so I may at the last see the salvation of God, through Jesus Christ.

*Here use the Prayer for Grace and that of
Intercession appointed for the Morning.*

For

For Preservation

O blessed Lord, the Keeper of Israel, that neither slumbrest nor sleepest, be pleased in thy mercie to watch over me this night, keep me by thy grace from all works of darknes, and defend me by thy power from all dangers, grant me moderate and refreshing sleep, such as may fit me for the duties of the day following. And, Lord, make me ever mindful of that time when I shall lie down in the dust; and because I know neither the day nor the houre of my Masters coming, grant me grace that I may be always readie, that I may never live in such a state as I shall fear to die in, but that whether I live, I may live unto the Lord; or whether I die, I may die unto the Lord, so that living and dying I may be thine, through Jesus Christ.

Use the same concluding prayer as in the Morning.

As thou art putting off thy clothes, think with thy self that the time approaches that thou must put off thy body also, and then thy Soul must appear naked before Gods judgment Seat, and therefore thou hadst need be careful to make it so clean and pure by repentance and holiness, that he who will not look on iniquity may graciously behold and accept it.

*Let thy Bed put thee in mind of thy Grave, and
when thou lyeſt down, ſay,*

O Blessed Saviour, who by thy precious death and burial didſt take away the ſting of death and power of the grave, grant me the joyful fruits of that thy victory, and be thou to me in life and death advantage.

I will lay me down in peace, and take my reſt, for it is thou Lord only that makeſt me dwell in ſafety.

Into thy hands I commend my ſpirit, for thou haſt redeemed it, O Lord, thou God of truth.

IN the ANTIENT CHURCH there were beſides morning and night, ſour other times every day which were called HOURS OF PRAYER, and the zeal of thoſe firſt Chriſtians was ſuch as made them conſtantly obſerved. It would be thought too great a ſtrictneſs now in this lukewarm age to enjoyn the like frequency, yet I cannot but mention the example, and ſay, that for thoſe who are not by very neceſſary buſineſs prevented, it will be but reaſonable to imitate it, and make up in publick and private thoſe FOUR TIMES of PRAYER, beſides the OFFICES already ſet down for MORNING and NIGHT: and that none may be to ſeek how to exerciſe their devotions at theſe times, I have added divers COLLECTS for ſeveral Graces, whereof every man may uſe at each ſuch time of prayer ſo many as his zeal and leiſure ſhall point out to him, adding, if he pleaſe,

deafe, one of the confessions appointed for morning or night, and never omitting the LORDS PRAYER.

But if any mans state of life be really so busie as will not allow him time for so long and solemn devotions, yet certainly there is no man so overlayed with business, but that he may finde leisure oftentimes in a day to say the LORDS PRAYER alone, and therefore let him use that, if he cannot more. But because it is the Character of a Christian, Phil. 3. 20. That he hath his conversation in Heaven, it is very fit that besides these set times of Prayer, he should divers times in a day by short and suddain EJACULATIONS dart up his soul to his Father. And for this sort of devotion no man can want leisure, for it may be performed in the midst of business; the Artificer at his work, the Husband man at his Plough may practise it. Now as he cannot want time, so that he may not want matter for it, I have thought it not unusefull out of that rich store-house, the BOOK of PSALMS, to furnish him with some texts, which may very fitly be used for this purpose, which being learned by heart will alwayes be ready at hand to employ his devotion; and the matter of them being various, some for Pardon of sin; some for Grace; some for the light of Gods countenance; some for the Church; some for Thanksgiving, &c. every man may fit himself according to the present need and temper of his soul. I have given these not as a full collection, but only as a taste, by which the Readers appetite may be raised to search after more in that Book, and other parts of holy Scripture.

B

COLLECTS

COLLECTS *for several* GRACES.*For Faith.*

O Blessed Lord, whom without Faith it is impossible to please, let thy spirit I beseech thee work in me such a Faith as may be acceptable in thy sight, even such as worketh by love, O let me not rest in a dead ineffectual Faith, but grant that it may be such as may shew it self by my works, that it may be that victorious Faith which may enable me to overcome the world, and conform me to the Image of that Christ, on whom I believe, that so at the last I may receive the end of my Faith, even the salvation of my soul, by the same Jesus Christ.

For Hope.

O Lord, who art the hope of all the ends of the earth, let me never be destitute of a well grounded hope, nor yet possessed with a vain presumption; suffer me not to think thou wilt either be reconciled to my sins, or reject my repentance, but give me, I beseech thee, such a hope as may be answerable to the only ground of hope, thy promises, and such as may both incourage and enable me to purifie my self from all filthiness both of flesh and spirit, that so it may indeed become to me an anchor of the soul both sure and stedfast, entering

even within the vail, whither the forerunner
is for me entred, even Jesus Christ my High
priest and blessed Redeemer.

For the Love of God.

O Holy and gracious Lord, who art infinitely excellent in thy self, and infinitely bountifull and compassionate towards me, I beseech thee suffer not my heart to be so hardened through the deceitfulness of sin, as to resist such charms of love, but let them make deep and lasting impressions on my soul. Lord, thou art pleased to require my heart, and thou only hast right to it. O let me not be so sacrilegiously unjust as to alienate any part of it, but enable me to render it up whole and intire to thee. But, O my God, thou see'st it is already usurped, the world with its vanities hath seized it, and like a strong man armed keeps possession, O thou who art stronger come upon him, and take this unworthy heart of mine as thine own spoil, refine it with that purifying fire of thy love, that it may be a fit habitation for thy Spirit: Lord, if thou see it fit, be pleased to let me taste of those joyes, those ravishments of thy love, wherewith thy Saints have been so transported. But if in this I know not what I ask, if I may not chuse my place in thy Kingdome, yet O Lord, denie me not to drink of thy cup, let me have such a sinceritie and degree of love, as may make me endure any thing for thy sake, such a perfect love

as may cast out all fear and all sloth too, that nothing may seem to me too grievous to suffer, or too difficult to do in obedience to thee, that so expressing my love by keeping thy Commandments, I may by thy mercie at last obtain that Crown of life, which thou hast promised to those that love thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

For Sincerity.

O Holy Lord, who requirest truth in the inward parts, I humbly beseech thee to purge me from all hypocrisie and unsinceritie. The heart O Lord, is deceitful above all things, and my heart is deceitful above all hearts; O thou who searchest the heart and reins, try me, and seek the ground of my heart, and suffer not any accursed thing to lurk within me, but purifie me even with fire, so thou consume my dross. O Lord, I cannot deceive thee, but I may most easily deceive my self, I beseech thee let me not rest in any such deceit; but bring me to a sight and hatred of my most hidden corruptions, that I may not cherish any darling lust, but make an utter destruction of everie *Amalekite*; O suffer me not to speak peace to my self, when there is no peace, but grant I may judge of my self as thou judgest of me, that I may never be at peace with my self, till I am at perfect peace with thee, and by puritie of heart be qualified to see thee in thy Kingdome, through Jesus Christ.

For devotion in Prayer.

O Gracious Lord God, who not only permittest, but invitest us miserable and needie creatures, to present our petitions to thee; grant I beseech thee, that the frequencie of my prayer may be somewhat proportionable to those continual needs I have of thy mercie: Lord, I confess, it is the greatest honour and greatest advantage, thus to be allowed access to thee, yet so sottish and stupid is my profane heart, that it shuns or frustrates the opportunities of it. My Soul, O Lord, is posselt with a spirit of infirmitie, it is bowed together, and can in no wise lift up it self to thee. O be thou pleased to cure this sad, this miserable disease, to inspirit and enliven this earthly drossie heart, that it may freely mount towards thee, that I may set a true value on this most valuable priviledge, and take delight in approaching to thee, and that my approaches may be with a reverence some way answerable to that awful Majestie I come before, with an importunitie and earnestness answerable to those pressing wants I have to be supplied, and with such a fixedness and attention of mind, as no wandering thoughts may interrupt; that I may no more incur the guilt of drawing near to thee with my lips, when my heart is far from thee, or have my prayers turned into sin, but may so ask that I may receive, seek that I may find, knock that it may be opened unto me:

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS

that from praying to thee here, I may be translated to the praising thee eternally in thy glorie, through the merits and intercession of Jesus Christ.

For Humility.

O Thou High and Loftie one, that inhabiteft Eternitie, yet art pleased to dwell with the humble spirit, pour into my heart I beseech thee, that excellent grace of Humilitie, which may utterly work out all those vain conceits I have of my self; Lord convince me powerfully of my own wretchedness, make me to see that I am miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked, and not only dust, but sin, that so in all thy dispensations towards me, I may lay my hand upon my mouth, and heartily acknowledge that I am less then the least of thy mercies, and greater then the greatest of thy judgments. And O Lord, grant me not only to walk humbly with my God, but even with men also, that I may not only submit my self to thy rebukes, but even to those of my fellow Christians, and with meekness receive and obey their admonitions. And make me so to behave my self towards all, that I never do any thing through strife or vain glorie; and to that end grant, that in lowliness of mind I may esteem everie other man better then my self, and be willing that others should esteem them so also; that I never nourish any high opinion of my self, nor covet one among others, but that

that despising the vain praise of men, I may seek that praise which cometh from thee only. That so instead of those mean servile Arts I have used to recommend me to the esteem of men, I may now imploy all my industrie and care to approve my self to thee, who resistest the proud, and givest grace to the humble: grant this, O Lord, for his sake, who humbled himself unto the death of the Cross, Jesus Christ.

For the Fear of God.

O Glorious Majestie, who only art high, and to be feared, possess my soul with a Holy awe and reverence of thee, that I may give thee the honour due unto thy Name, and may bear such a respect to all things which relate to thee, that I may never prophane any holy thing, or sacrilegiously invade what thou hast set a part to thy self. And, O Lord, since thou art a God that wilt not clear the guiltie, let the dread of thy justice make me tremble to provoke thee in any thing; O let me not so misplace my fear, as to be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man, who shall be made as grass, and forget the Lord my Maker; but replenish my soul with that fear of the Lord, which is the beginning of wisdom, which may be as a bridle to all my brutish appetites, and keep me in a constant conformitie to thy Holy will. Hear me, O Lord, I beseech thee, and put this fear in my heart, that I may not depart from thee,

but may with fear and trembling work out my own salvation, through Jesus Christ.

For Trust on God.

O Almighty Lord, who never failest them that trust on thee, give me grace, I beseech thee, in all my difficulties and distresses, to have recourse to thee, to rest and depend on thee; thou shalt keep him, O Lord in perfect peace, whose mind is staid on thee, O let me alwayes rest on this firm Pillar; and never exchange it for the broken reeds of worldly succours, suffer not my heart to be overcharged with the cares of this life, taking thought what I shall eat, or drink, or wherewithal I shall be clothed, but grant, that having by honest labour and industrie done my part, I may chearfully commit my self to thy providence, calling all my care upon thee, and being careful for nothing, but to be of the number of those whom thou ownest and carest for, even such as keep thy Testimonies and think upon thy Commandments to do them. That seeking first thy Kingdome and the righteousness thereof, all these outward things may be added unto me, in such a measure as thy wisdom knows best for me; grant this O Lord, for Jesus Christ his sake.

For Thankfulness.

O most Gracious and bountiful Lord, who fillest all things living with good, and expectest no other return, but praise & thanksgiving; let me O Lord, never defraud thee of that so easie tribute, but let my heart be ever filled with the sence, and my mouth with the acknowledgement of thy mercies. It is a joyfull and a pleasant thing to be thankfull, O suffer me not I beseech thee, to lose my part in that Divine pleasure, but grant that as I dayly recieve blessings from thee, so I may daily from an affectionate and devout heart offer up thanks to thee, and grant that not only my lips, but my life may shew forth thy praise, by consecrating my self to thy service, and walking in Holiness and Righteousness before thee all the days of my life, through Jesus Christ my Lord and blessed Saviour.

For Contrition.

O Holy Lord, who art a merciful embracer of true penitents, but yet a consuming fire towards obstinate sinners, how shall I approach thee, who have so many provoking sins to inflame thy wrath, and so little sincere repentance to incline thy mercy! O be thou pleased to soften and melt this hard obdurate heart of mine, that I may heartily bewail the iniquities of my life; strike this rock, O Lord, that the
wa-

waters may flow out, even floods of tears, to wash my polluted conscience; my drowzy Soul hath too long slept securely in sin, Lord awake it though it be with thunder, & let me rather feel thy terrors then not feel my sin. Thou sentest thy blessed Son to heal the broken hearted, but Lord, what will that avail me if my heart be whole. O break it that it may be capable of his healing virtue; and grant, I beseech thee, that having once tasted the bitterness of sin, I may fly from it, as from the face of a Serpent, and bring forth fruits of repentance in amendment of life, to the praise and glory of thy grace in Jesus Christ our blessed Redeemer.

For Meekness.

O Blessed Jesu, who wast led as a sheep to the slaughter, let, I beseech thee, that admirable example of Meekness quench in me all sparks of anger and revenge, and work in me such a gentleness and calmness of Spirit as no provocations may ever be able to disturb. Lord grant I may be so far from offering the least injury, that I may never return the greatest any other wise then with prayers and kindness, that I who have so many talents to be forgiven by thee, may never exact pence of my bretheren, but that putting on bowels of mercie, meekness long-suffering, thy peace may rule in my heart, & make it an acceptable habitation to thee, who art the Prince of peace, to whom with the Father & holy Spirit be all honour and glory for ever.

For

For Chastity.

O Holy and Immaculate Jesus, whole first descent was into the Virgins womb, and who dost still love to inhabit only in pure and virgin-hearts, I beseech thee send thy Spirit of purity to cleanse me from all filthiness both of flesh and spirit; my body, O Lord, is the Temple of the Holy Ghost, O let me never pollute that Temple with any uncleanness. And because out of the heart proceed the things that defile the man, Lord grant me to keep my heart with all diligence, that no impure or foul thoughts be harboured there, but enable me, I beseech thee, to keep both body and soul pure and undefiled, that so I may glorifie thee here both in body & spirit, & be glorified in both with thee hereafter.

For Temperance.

O Gracious Lord, who hast in thy bountie to mankind afforded us the use of thy good creatures for our corporal refreshment, grant that I may always use this liberty with thankfulness and moderation; O let me never be so enslaved to that brutish pleasure of taste, that my Table become a snare to me, but give me, I beseech thee, a perfect abhorrence of all degrees of excess, and let me eat and drink only for those ends, and according to those measures which thou hast assigned me for health and not for luxury. And Lord grant that my pur-
suits

suits may be not after the meat that perisheth, but after that which endureth to everlasting life, that hangring and thirsting after righteousness I may be filled with thy grace here, and thy glory hereafter, through Jesus Christ.

For Contentedness.

O Merciful God, thy wisdom is infinite to choose, & thy love forward to dispence good things to us; O let me alwaies fully and intirely relign my self to thy disposals, have no desires of mine own, but a perfect satisfaction in thy choices for me, that so in whatsoever estate I am, I may be therein content. Lord grant I may never look with murmuring on my own condition, nor with envie on other mens. And to that end, I beseech thee, purge my heart of all covetous affections; O let me never yield up any corner of my soul to Mammon, but give me such a contempt of these fading riches, that whether they increase or decrease I may never set my heart upon them, but that all my care may be to be rich towards God, to lay up my treasure in heaven, that I may so set my affection on things above, that when Christ who is my life shall appear, I may also appear with him in glory. Grant this, O Lord, for the mercies of the same Jesus Christ.

For Diligence.

O Lord, who hast in thy wisdom ordained that man should be born to labour, suffer me not to resist that design of thine by giving my self up to sloth and idleness; but grant I may so imploy my time and all other talents thou hast intrusted me with, that I may not fall under the sentence of the slothful and wicked servant; Lord, if it be thy wil, make me some way useful to others, that I may not live an unprofitable part of mankind; but however, O Lord, let me not be useless to my self, but grant I may give all diligence to make my calling and election sure: My soul is beset with many and vigilant adversaries, O let me not fold my hands to sleep in the midst of so great dangers, but watch and pray, that I enter not into temptation, enduring hardness as a good souldier of Jesus Christ, till at the last from this state of warfare thou translate me to the state of triumph and blis in thy Kingdome, through Jesus Christ.

For Justice.

O Thou King of righteousness, who hast commanded us to keep judgement and do Justice, be pleased by thy grace to cleanse my heart and hands from all fraud and injustice, and give me a perfect integrity and uprightness in all my dealings. O make me ever abhor
to

to use my power to oppress, or my skil to deceive my brother, and grant I may most strictly observe that sacred rule of doing as I would be done to, that I may not dishonour my Christian profession by an unjust or fraudulent life, but in simplicitie and godly sincerity, have my conversation in this life, never seeking to heap up treasures of wickedness, but preferring a little with righteousness before great revenues without right. Lord, make me exactly careful to render to every man what by any sort of obligation becomes his due, that I may never break the bond of any of those relations that thou hast placed me in, but may so behave my self towards all, that none may have an evil thing to say of me, that so, if it be possible, I may have peace with all men, or however I may by keeping innocency and taking heed to the thing that is right, have peace at the last, even peace with thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord,

For Charity.

O Mercifull Lord, who hast made of one blood, and redeemed by one ransome all Nations of men, let me never harden my bowels against any that partake of the same nature and redemption with me, but grant me an universall charitie towards all men. Give me, O thou father of compassions, such a tenderness and meltingness of heart, that I may be deeply affected with all the miseries and calamities
outward

CollecTs for severall Graces.

31

outward or inward of my bretheren, and diligently imploy all my abilities for their succour & relief. O let not an unchristian self-love possess my heart, but drive out that accursed spirit, and let thy Spirit or love enter and dwell there, and make me seek not to please my self, but my neighbour for his good to edification, even as Christ pleased not himself. Lord, make me a faithful steward of all those talents thou hast committed to me for the benefit of others, that so when thou shalt cal me to give an account of my stewardship, I may do it with joy and not with grief. Grant this mercifull Lord, I beseech thee for Jesus Christ his sake.

For perseverance.

O Eternall and unchangeable Lord God, who art the same yesterdaie and to daie and for ever. Be thou pleased to communicate some small ray of that excellence, some degree of that stability to me thy wretched creature, who am light and unconstant, turned about with every blast; my understanding is very deceivable, O establish it in thy truth, keep it from the snares of seducing spirits, that I may not be led away with the errour of the wicked and fall from my own stedfastness: my will also, O Lord is irresolute and wavering, and doth not cleave stedfastly unto God, my goodness is but as the morning cloud, and as the early dew it passeth away. O strengthen and confirm me, and whatever good work

work thou hast wrought in me, be pleased to accomplish and perform it until the day of Christ. Lord thou seest my weakness, and thou knowest the number and strength of those temptations I have to struggle with, O leave me not to my self, but cover thou my head in the day of battel, and in all spiritual combates make me more then conquerour through him that loved me. O let no terrours or flatteries either of the world or my own flesh ever draw me from my obedience to thee, but grant that I may continue stedfast, unmoveable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord; and by patient continuing in well doing, seek and at last obtain glorie, and honour, and immortalitie, and eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

A Brief Paraphrase of the
L O R D S P R A Y E R
To be used as a Prayer.

[Our Father which art in Heaven.]

O Lord, who dwellest in the highest *heavens*, thou art the Author of our being, thou hast also begotten us again unto a lively hope, and carriest towards us the tenderness & bowels of a compassionate father. O make us to render to thee the love and obedience of children; and that we may resemble thee *our father in heaven* (that place of true delight and puritie)

urity) give us a holy disdain of all the deceitful pleasures and foul pollutions of this world, and so raise up our minds that we may alwaies have our conversation in heaven, from whence we look for our Saviour the Lord Jesus Christ.

[*1. Hallowed be thy Name.*]

STrike such an awe into our hearts, that we may humbly reverence thee in *thy Name*, which is great, wonderful and holy, and carry such a sacred respect to all things that relate to thee and thy worship, as may express our reverence to thy great Majestie. Let all the people praise thee, O God, let all the people praise thee.

[*2. Thy Kingdom come.*]

EStablish thy Throne and rule for ever in our souls, & by the power of thy grace subdue al those rebellious corruptions that exalt themselves against thee, they are those enemies of thine which would not thou should'st reign over them, O let them be brought forth and slain before thee, and make us such faithful subjects of this thy *Kingdom of Grace*, that we may be capable of the *Kingdom of Glory*, and then Lord Jesus come quickly.

[*3. Thy will be done in earth, &c.*]

ENABLE us by thy grace chearfully to suffer *thy will* in all thy afflictions, and readily perform it in all thy commands, give us of that heavenly zeal to thy service, wherewith the
C blessed

bleſſed Angels of thy preſence are inſpired, that we may obey thee with the like fervor and alacrity, and that following them in their obedience, we may be joyned with them to ſing eternal praiſes in thy Kingdom to God, and to the Lamb for ever.

[*4. Give us this day our, &c.*]

GIVE us that continuall ſupply of thy grace, which may ſuſtain and nourish our ſouls unto eternal life. And be thou pleaſed alſo to provide for our bodies all thoſe things which thou ſeeſt fit for their ſupport, through this our earthly pilgrimage, and make us cheerfully to reſt on thee for them, firſt ſeeking thy Kingdom and the righteouſneſs thereof, and then not doubting but all theſe things ſhall be added unto us.

[*5. Forgive us our Treaſſes, &c.*]

HEAL our ſouls, O Lord, for we have ſinned againſt thee, let thy tender mercies abound towards us, in the *forgivenneſs* of all *our offences*; And grant O Lord, that we may never forfeit this pardon of thine, by denying ours to our brethren, but give us thoſe bowels of compaſſion to others which we ſtand in ſo much greater need of from thee, that we may *forgive* as fully and finally upon Chriſts command, as we deſire to be *forgiven*, for his merits and interceſſion.

[*6. Lead us not into Tempt. &c.]*

O LORD, we have no strength against those multitudes of *temptations* that daily assault us, only our eyes are upon thee, O be thou pleased either to restrain them or assist us, and in thy faithfulness suffer us not to be *tempted* above that we are able, but in all our temptations make us a way to escape, that we be not overcome by them, but may when thou shalt call us to it, resist even unto blood, striving against sin, that being faithful unto death, thou mayest give us the crown of life.

[*For thine is the Kingdome, &c.]*

HEAR us and graciously answer our petitions, for thou art the great *King* over all the earth, whose *Power* is infinite, and art able to do for us above all that we can ask or think, and to whom belongeth the *Glory* of all that good thou workest in us or for us. Therefore blessing, honour, glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, to our God for ever, and ever, *Amen.*

*Pious EJACULATIONS taken
out of the Book of PSALMS.*

For Pardon of Sin.

HAVE mercy on me, O God, after thy great goodness, according to the multitude of thy mercies do away mine offences.

Wash me thoroughly from my wickedness, and cleanse me from my sin.

Turn thy face from my sins, and put out all my misdeeds.

My misdeeds prevail against me, O be thou merciful unto my sins.

Enter not into judgement with thy servant, for in thy sight shall no man living be justified.

For thy names sake, O Lord, be merciful unto my sin, for it is great.

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my soul, O save me for thy mercies sake.

For Grace.

TEACH me to do the thing that pleaseth thee, for thou art my God.

Teach me thy way, O Lord, and I will walk in thy truth, O knit my heart to thee, that I may fear thy name.

Make me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me.

O let my heart be found in thy statutes, that I be not ashamed.

Incline my heart unto thy Testimonies, and not to covetousness.

Turn away mine eyes, lest they behold vanity, and quicken thou me in thy way.

I am a stranger upon earth, O hide not thy Commandements from me,

Lord teach me to number my dayes, that I may apply my heart unto wisdom.

For the Light of Gods Countenance.

LORD, why abhorrest thou my soul, and hidest thy face from me? O hide not thou thy face from me, nor cast thy servant away in displeasure.

Thy loving kindness is better then life it self.

Lord lift thou up the light of thy countenance upon me.

Comfort the Soul of thy servant, for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul.

Thanksgiving

I WILL always give thanks unto the Lord, his praise shall ever be in my mouth.

Thou art my God, and I will thank thee, thou art my God and I will praise thee.

I will sing unto the Lord, as long as I live, I will praise my God whilst I have my being.

praised be God which hath not cast out my prayer, nor turned his mercy from me.

Blessed be the Lord God, even the God of Israel, which only doth wondrous things.

And blessed be the Name of his Majestie for ever, and all the earth shall be filled with his Majestie, *Amen, Amen.*

For Deliverance from Trouble.

BE merciful unto me, O Lord, be merciful unto me, for my Soul trusteth in thee, and under the shadow of thy wings shall be my refuge, until these calamities be over-past.

Deliver me, O Lord, from mine enemies, for I flee unto thee to hide me.

O keep my Soul, and deliver me, let me not be confounded, for I have put my trust in thee.

Mine eyes are ever looking unto the Lord, for he shall pluck my feet out of the net.

Turn thee unto me, and have mercy upon me, for I am desolate and in misery.

The sorrows of my heart are enlarged, O bring thou me out of my troubles.

For the Church.

OBE favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem.

O God, wherefore art thou absent from us so long? Why is thy wrath so hot against the sheep of thy pasture?

O think upon thy Congregation, whom thou hast purchased and Redeemed of old.

Look upon the Tribe of thine Inheritance, and Mount Sion where thou hast dwelt.

It is time for thee, Lord, to lay to thy hand, for they have destroyed thy Law.

Arise, O God, and maintain thine own cause. Deliver Israel, O God, out of all his troubles.

*Brief Heads of Self-Examination,
especially before the Sacrament, Col-
lected out of the foregoing Treatise,
concerning the breaches of our Duty.*

To G O D.

FAITH.

NOT BELIEVING there is a God.
Not believing his Word.

Not believing it practically, so as to live according to
our belief.

HOPE.

DESPAIRING of Gods Mercy, so as to neglect duty.
Presuming groundlessly on it, whilst we go on in
wilful sin.

LOVE.

NOT LOVING God for his own excellencies.

Not Loving him for his Goodness to us.

Not labouring to please him.

Not desiring to draw near to him in his Ordipances.

Not longing to enjoy him in Heaven.

FEAR.

NOT FEARING God so as to keep from offending him.

Fearing man above him by committing sin, to shun
some outward suffering.

TRUST.

NOT TRUSTING on God in dangers and distresses.

Using unlawful means to bring us out of them.

Not depending on God for supply of our Wants.

Immoderate Care for outward things.

Neglecting to labour, and expecting God should sup-
port us in our idleness.

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

Not looking up to God for a blessing on our honest en-
deavours.

HUMILITY.

Not having a *high esteem* of God.
Not submitting obediently to act his Will.
Not patiently suffering it, but murmuring at his Correction.
Not amending by them. (ons.
Not being Thankful to him.
Not acknowledging his Wisdom in choosing for us,
but having eager and impatient desires of our own.

HONOUR.

Not *Honouring* God by a reverend usage of the things
that Relate to him.
Behaving our selves irreverently in his House. (him.
Robbing God, by taking things that are consecrated to
Profaning Holy times, the *Lords Day*, and the Feasts
and Fasts of the Church.
Neglecting to read the Holy Scriptures, not marking
when we do read.
Being careless to get knowledge of our duty, chusing ra-
ther to continue ignorant, then put our selves to the
pains or charge of learning.
Placing Religion in hearing of Sermons, without Practice
Breaking our *Vow made at Baptisme*.
By resorting to Witches, and Conjurers; i.e. to the Devil.
By loving the Poms and Vanities of the World, and
following its sinful customes.
By fulfilling the Lusts of the flesh.
Profaning the *Lords Supper*.
By coming to it ignorantly, without Examination,
contrition, and purposes of New Life.
By behaving our selves irreverently at it, without De-
votion, and spiritual Affection.
By neglecting to keep the Promises made at it.
Profaning *Gods Name*, by blasphemous thoughts, or
Discourse.
Giving others occasion to Blaspheme him, by our vile
wicked lives.
Taking unlawful OATHS.
Perjury.
Swearing in ordinary Communication.

WOR.

Heads of Self-Examination.

41

WORSHIP.

Not *Worshipping* God.

Omitting Prayers, publick or private, and being glad of a pretence to do so.

Asking unlawful things, or to unlawful ends.

Not purifying our Hearts from sin before we pray.

Not praying with Faith and Humility.

Coldness and deadness in Prayer.

Wandering thoughts in it.

Irreverent gestures of body in prayer.

REPENTANCE.

Neglecting the *duty* of *Repentance*.

Not calling our selves to Dayly account for our sins.

Not assigning any set or Solemn times, for Humiliation; and Confession, or too seldome.

Not deeply considering our sins, to beget Contrition.

Not acting Revenges on our selves, by Fasting, and other acts of Mortification.

IDOLATRY.

Outward *Idolatry* in *Worshipping* of creatures.

Inward *Idolatry*, in placing our love, and other affections more on creatures, then the Creator.

To our SELVES.

HUMILITY.

Being puffed up with *high conceits* of our selves.

In respect of natural parts, as beauty, wit, &c.

Of worldly riches and honours.

Of Grace.

Greedily seeking the praise of men.

(*Cont.*)

Directing christian Actions, as Prayer, Alms, &c. to that

Committing sins to avoid Reproach from wicked men.

MEEKNES.

Disturbing our minds with *Anger* and peevishness.

CONSL-

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

CONSIDERATION.

Not carefully *Examining* what our *estate* towards God (is:
 Not trying our selves by the true Rule, *i.e.* our o-
 bedience to Gods Commands.
 Not weighing the Lawfulness of our Actions before we
 venture on them.
 Not examining our past actions to Repent of the ill, to
 give God the glory of the good.

CONTENTEDNES.

Uncontentedness in our estates.
 Greedy desires after Honour and Riches.
 Seeking to gain them by sinful means.
 Envyng the condition of other men.

DILIGENCE, WATCHFULNES.

Being *Negligent* in observing & resisting *Temptations*.
 Not improving Gods gifts, outward or inward, to
 his Honour.
 Abusing our Natural Parts, as Wit, Memory, &c. to sin.
 Neglecting or Resisting the motions of Gods Spirit.

CHASTITY.

Uncleanness, adultery, fornication, unnatural lusts, &c.
 Uncleanness of the Eye and Hand.
 Filthy and obscene Talking.
 Impure Fancies and Desires.
 Heighning of Lust by pampering the body.
 Not labouring to subdue it by Fasting or other Severities

TEMPERANCE.

Eating too much
 Making pleasure, not Health the end of Eating.
 Being too curious or costly in Meats.
Drunkennes.
 Drinking more then is useful to our bodies though not
 to drunkennes.
 Wasting the Time or Estate in good Fellowship.
 Abusing our strength of brain to the making others
 Immoderate Sleeping. (Drunk.
Idleness and Negligence in our Callings.
 Using unlawful Recreations. Being

Being too vehement upon Lawful ones.
Spending too much time at them.
Being drawn by them to Anger or Covetousness.
Being proud of Apparel.
Striving to go beyond our rank.
Bestowing too much time, care or cost about it.
Abstaining from such Excesses not out of conscience
but covetousness.
Pinching our bodies to fill our purses.

To our NEIGHBOUR.

NEGATIVE JUSTICE.

Being *Injurious* to our Neighbour.
Delighting causlessly to grieve his mind.
Ensnaring his soul In sin, by Command, Counsel,
Enticement or Example.
Affrighting him from godliness by our Scoffing at it.
Not seeking to bring those to Repentance whom we
have led into sin.

MURDER.

Murder, open or secret.
Drawing men to Intemperance or other vices,
which may bring diseases or death.
Stirring men up to Quarrelling and Fighting.
Maiming or hurting the body of our Neighbour.
Fierceness and Rage against him.

ADULTERY.

Coveting our Neighbours wife.
Actually defiling her.

MALICE.

Spoiling the goods of others upon spight and malice.

COVETOUSNES.

Coveting to gain them to our selves.

OPPRES.

OPPRESSION.

Oppression by violence and force or colour of Law.

THEFT.

Not paying what we Borrow.
 Not Paying what we have voluntarily promised.
 Keeping back the Wages of the Servant and hireling.

DECEIT.

Unfaithfulness in Trusts, whether to the Living or
 Using arts of Deceit in Buying and Selling. (Dead.
 Exacting upon the necessities of our Neighbours.

FALSE-WITNES.

Blasting the credit of our neighbour.
 By false Witness.
 By Railing.
 By Whispering.
 Encouraging others in their Slanders.
 Being forward to believe ill reports of our neighbour.
 Causeless suspicions.
 Rash judging of him.
 Despising him for his Infirmities.
 Inviting others to do so by scoffing and Deriding him.
 Bearing any Malice in the heart.
 Secret wishing of death or hurt to our neighbour.
 Rejoycing when any Evil befalls him.
 Neglecting to make what Satisfaction we can for any
 sort of injury done to our neighbour.

POSITIVE JUSTICE. HUMILITY.

LYING.

Churlish and proud behaviour to Others.
 Froward and peevish Conversation.
 Bitter and Reproachful language.
 Cursing.
 Not paying the Respect due to the qualities or gifts of
 others.
 Proudly overlooking them.
 Seeking to lessen others Esteem of them.

Heads of Self-Examination.

45

Not imploying our Abilities, whether of minde or Estate, in administering to those whose Wants require it.

GRATITUDE.

Unthankfulness to our Benefactors.

Especially those that admonish us.

Not amending upon their Reproof.

Being angry at them for it.

Not reverencing our Civil Parent, the lawful *Magistrate*.

Judging and speaking evil of him.

Grudging his just Tributes.

Sowing sedition among the people.

Refusing to Obey his lawful Commands.

Rising up against him, or taking part with them that do.

Despiling our *Spiritual Fathers*.

Not loving them for their works sake.

Not obeying those commands of God they deliver to us.

Seeking to withhold from them their just maintenance.

Foraking our lawful Pastors to follow factious teachers.

PARENTS.

Stubborn and irreverent behaviour to our natural Pa-

Despising and publishing their infirmities. (*rents*.)

Not loving them, nor endeavouring to bring them com-

Contemning their Counsels. (*fort*.)

Murmuring at their Government.

Coveting their Estates, though by their death.

Not ministering to them in their Wants of all sorts.

Neglecting to Pray for Gods Blessing on these several
sorts of Parents.

Want of natural affection to children. (*ment*.)

Mothers refusing to Nurse them without a just impedi-

Not bringing them timely to *Baptisme*.

Not early instructing them in the ways of God.

Suffering them for want of timely correction to get
Customes of sin.

Setting them Evil Examples.

Discouraging them by harsh and cruel usage.

Not providing for their subsistence according to our abi-

Consuming their Portions in our own riot. (*lity*.)

Reserving all till our death, and letting them want in
the mean time.

Not

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

Not seeking to entail a blessing on them by our Christian lives.

Not heartily *praying* for them.

Want of affection to our Natural brethren.

Envyings and heart-burnings towards them.

DUTY to BRETHREN.

Not loving our spiritual *brethren*, i. e. our fellow Christians.

Having no fellow-feeling of their sufferings.

Causelessly forsaking their Communion in Holy Duties.

Not taking deeply to heart the Desolations of the Church

MARRIAGE.

Marrying within the degrees forbidden.

Marrying for undue ends, as Covetousnes, Lust, &c.

Unkind, froward, and unquiet behaviour towards the Husband or Wife.

Unfaithfulness to the Bed

Not bearing with the infirmities of each other.

Not endeavouring to advance one anothers good, spiritual, or temporal.

The Wife resisting the lawful command of her Husband.

Her striving for Rule and dominion over him.

Not praying for each other.

FRIENDSHIP.

Unfaithfulness to a *Friend*.

Betraying his secrets.

Denying him assistance in his needs.

Neglecting lovingly to admonish him.

Flattering him in his faults.

Forsaking his friendship upon slight or no cause.

Making leagues in sin instead of vertuous friendship.

SERVANTS.

Servants disobeying the lawful commands of their Masters.

Purloining their goods.

Carelessly waiting them.

Murmuring at their rebukes.

Idleness.

Eye-service.

MASTERS.

MASTERS.

Masters using servants tyrannically and cruelly.
 Being too remiss, and suffering them to neglect
 their duty.
 Having no care of their Souls.
 Not providing them means of instruction in Religion.
 Not admonishing them when they commit Sins.
 Not allowing them time and opportunity for prayer,
 and the Worship of God.

CHARITY.

Want of bowels and *Charity* to our neighbours.
 Not heartily desiring their good spiritual or
 temporal.
 Not Loving and Forgiving Enemies.
 Taking actual Revenges upon them.
 Falseness: professing kindness and acting none.
 Not labouring to do all the good we can to the soul of
 our neighbour.
 Not assisting him to our power in his Bodily distresses.
 Not defending his good Name when we know him slan-
 der'd.
 Denying him any neighbourly office to preserve or ad-
 vance his estate. (power.
 Not defending him from oppression, when we have
 Not relieving him in his poverty.
 Not giving liberally, or chearfully.

GOING to LAW.

Not loving P E A C E.
 Going to Law upon slight occasions.
 Bearing inward Enmity to those we see.
 Not labouring to make peace among others.

THE use of this Catalogue of Sins is
 this: Upon dayes of Humiliation,
 especially before the Sacrament, read them
 consideringly over, and at every particular
 ask

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

ask thine own heart, Am I guilty of this? And whatsoever by such Examination thou findest thy self faulty in, Confess particularly, and humbly to God, with all the heightning circumstances, which may any way increase their guilt, and make serious Resolutions against every such Sin for the future; after which thou mayest use this Form following.

O LORD, I am ashamed, and blush to lift up my face to thee, for my iniquities are increased over my head, and my trespass is grown up even unto Heaven. I have wrought all these great provocations, and that in the most provoking manner; they have not been only single but repeated acts of sin: for, O Lord, of all this black Catalogue which I have now brought forth before thee, how few are there which I have not often committed, nay, which are not become even habitual and customary to me? And to this frequencie, I have added both a greediness, and obstinacie in sinning, turning into my course as the Horse rusheth into the battel, doing evil with both hands, earnestly, yea, hating to be reformed, and casting thy words behinde me, quenching thy spirit within me, which testified against me, to turn me from my evil wayes, and frustrating all those outward means whether of judgement or mercie, which thou hast used to draw me to thy self. Nay, O Lord, even my repentances may be numbered amongst my greatest
sins,

2
u
y,
g
e
r

t
e
s
t
e
f
ins, they have sometimes been feigned and hy-
pocritical, alwayes so slight and ineffectual,
that they have brought forth no fruit in
amendment of life, but I have still returned
with the dog to his vomit, and the sow to the
mire again, and have added the breach of reso-
lutions and vows, to all my former guilts.
Thus, O Lord, I am become out of measure
sinful, and since I have thus chosen death, I am
most worthy to take part in it, even in the se-
cond death, the lake of fire and brimstone.
This, this, O Lord, is in justice to be the portion
of my cup, to me belongs nothing but shame
and confusion of face eternally. But to thee,
O Lord God, belongeth mercie and forgive-
ness: though I have rebelled against thee, O
remember not my sins and offences, but ac-
cording to thy mercie think thou upon me O
Lord for thy goodness. Thou sentest thy Son
to seek and to save that which was lost, behold,
O Lord, I have gone astray like a sheep that is
lost, O seek thy servant, and bring me back to
the Shepherd and Bishop of my soul; let thy
spirit work in me a heartie sense and detestati-
on of all my abominations, that true contriti-
on of heart, which thou hast promised not to
despise. And then be thou pleased to look on
me, to take away all iniquitie, and receive me
graciously, and for his sake who hath done no-
thing amiss, be reconciled to me, who have
done nothing well; wash away the guilt of my
sins in his blood, and subdue the power of them
by his grace, and grant, O Lord, that I may
D from

from this hour bid a final adieu to all ungodliness and worldly lusts, that I may never once more cast a look toward *Sodom*, or long after the fleshpots of *Egypt*, but consecrate my self intirely to thee, to serve thee in Righteousness and true Holiness, reckoning my self to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord and blessed Saviour.

This Penitential Psalm may also fitly be used.

PSALM 51.

HAVE mercy upon me O God, after thy great goodness, according to the multitude of thy mercies do away mine offences.

Wash me thoroughly from my wickedness, and cleanse me from my sin.

For I acknowledge my faults, and my sin is ever before me.

Against thee only have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight, that thou mightest be justified in thy saying, and clear when thou art judged.

Behold I was shapen in wickedness, and in sin hath my mother conceived me.

But lo, thou requirest truth in the inward parts, and shalt make me to understand wisdom secretly.

Thou shalt purge me with Hyssop, and I shall be clean, thou shalt wash me, and I shall be whiter then snow.

Thou shalt make me hear of joy and gladness,
that

Prayers before the Sacrament.

51

that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoyce.

Turn thy face from my sins, and put out all my misdeeds.

Make me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right Spirit within me.

Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not thy holy Spirit from me.

O give me the comfort of thy help again, and stablish me with thy free Spirit.

Then shall I teach thy wayes unto the wicked, and sinners shall be converted unto thee.

Deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, thou that art the God of my health, and my tongue shall sing of thy righteousness.

Thou shalt open my lips, O Lord, and my mouth shall shew thy praise.

For thou desirest no sacrifice, else would I give thee, but thou delightest not in burnt offering.

The sacrifice of God is a troubled spirit, a broken and contrite heart, O God, shalt thou not despise.

O be favourable and gracious unto Sion, build thou the walls of Jerusalem.

Then shalt thou be pleased with the Sacrifice of righteousness, with the burnt offerings and oblations, then shall they offer young bullocks upon thine altar.

Glorie be to the Father, and to the Son and to the Holy Ghost.

As it was in the beginning, is now and ever shall be, world without end. Amen.



PRAYERS BEFORE
the Receiving of the Blessed
 SACRAMENT.

O Most merciful God, who hast in thy great goodness prepared this spiritual feast for sick and famished souls, make my desires and gaspings after it, answerable to my needs of it. I have with the prodigal wasted that portion of grace thou bellowedst upon me, and therefore do infinitely want a supplie out of this treasure: But, O Lord, how shall such a wretch as I dare to approach this holy Table? I am a dog, how shall I presume to take the childrens bread? Or how shall this spiritual Manna, this food of Angels be given to one who hath chosen to feed on husks with swine, nay to one who hath already so often trampled these precious things under foot, either carelessly neglecting, or unworthily receiving these holy mysteries? O Lord, my horrible guiltiness makes me tremble to come, and yet makes me not dare to keep away; for where, O Lord, shall my polluted soul be washed, if not in this fountain which thou hast opened for sin and for uncleanness? Hither therefore I come, and thou hast promised that him that cometh to thee thou wilt in no wise cast out: This is, O Lord, the blood of the New Testament, grant me

me so to receive it, that it may be to me for remission of sins. And though I have so often and so wretchedly broken my part of that Covenant, whereof this Sacrament is a seal, yet be thou graciously pleased to make good thine, to be merciful to my unrighteousness, and to remember my sins and my iniquities no more; and not only so, but to put thy laws into my heart, and to write them in my mind, and by the power of thy grace dispose my soul to such a sincere and constant obedience, that I may never again provoke thee; Lord, grant that in these holy mysteries I may not only commemorate, but effectually receive my blessed Saviour, and all the benefits of his Passion: and to that end give me such a preparation of soul as may qualifie me for it, give me a deep sense of my sins and unworthiness, that being wearie and heavie laden, I may be capable of his refreshings, and by being suppled in my own tears, I may be the fitter to be washed in his blood; raise up my dull and earthly mind from groveling here below, and inspire it with a holy zeal, that I may with spiritual affection approach this spiritual feast; and let, O Lord, that infinite love of Christ in dying for so wretched a sinner, inflame my frozen benumbed soul, and kindle in me that sacred fire of love to him, and that so vehement, that no waters may quench, no floods drown it, such as may burn up all my dross, not leave one unmortified lust in my soul, and such as may also extend it self to all whom

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

thou hast given me command and example to love, even enemies as well as friends. Finally, O Lord, I beseech thee to cloath me in the wedding garment, and make me though of my self a most unworthie, yet by thy mercie an acceptable guest at this holy Table, that I may not eat and drink my own condemnation, but may have my pardon sealed, my weakness repaired, my corruptions subdued, and my soul so inseparably united to thee, that no temptations may ever be able to dissolve the union, but that being begun here in grace, it may be consummated in glorie. Grant this, O Lord, for thy dear Sons sake, Jesus Christ.

Another.

O Blessed Jesus, who once offeredst up thy self for me upon the Cross, and now offerest thy self to me in the Sacrament, let not I beseech thee, my impenitence and unworthiness frustrate these so inestimable mercies to me, but qualifie me by thy grace to receive the full benefit of them. O Lord, I have abundant need of thee, but am so clogg'd with guilt, so holden with the cords of my sins, that I am not able to move towards thee; O loose me from this band, wherewith Satan and my own lusts have bound me, and draw me that I may run after thee; Lord, thou seest daily how eagerly I pursue the paths that lead to death, but when thou invitest me to life and glorie, I turn my
back

back and forsake my own mercie. How often hath this feast been prepared, and I have with frivolous excuses absented my self, or if I have come, it hath been rather to desie then to adore thee? I have brought such troops of thy professed enemies, unrepented sins along with me, as if I came not to commemorate, but renew thy passion, crucifying thee afresh, and putting thee to open shame: And now of what punishment shall I be thought worthy, who have thus trampled under foot the Son of God, and counted the blood of the Covenant an unholy thing! Yet O merciful Jesu, this blood is my only refuge, O let this make my atonement or I perish eternally: Wherefore didst thou shed it, but to save sinners? Neither can the merit of it be overwhelmed either by the greatness or number of sins. I am a sinner, a great one, O let me finde its saving efficacie. Be merciful unto me, O God, be merciful to me for my soul trusteth in thee, and in the clefts of thy wounds shall be my refuge until thy Fathers indignation be overpast. O thou who hast as my high Priest, sacrificed for me, interceed for me also, and plead thy meritorious sufferings on my behalf, and suffer not, O my Redeemer, the price of thy blood to be utterly lost: And grant, O Lord, that as the sins I have to be forgiven are many, so I may love much. Lord, thou seest what faint, what cold affections I have towards thee, O warm and enliven them: and as in this Sacrament that transcendent love of thine in dying for me is shed forth, so I beseech thee let it

convey such grace into me as may enable me to make some returns of love : O let this divine fire descend from Heaven into my soul, and let my sins be the burnt offering for it to consume, that there may not any corrupt affection, any cursed thing be sheltered in my heart, that I may never again defile that place, which thou hast chosen for thy Temple. Thou diedst, O dear Jesu, to redeem me from all iniquitie, O let me not again sell my self to work wickedness, but grant that I may approach thee at this time with most sincere and fixed resolutions of an entire reformation, and let me receive such grace and strength from thee, as may enable me faithfully to perform them : Lord, there are many old habituated diseases my soul groans under. [*Here mention thy most prevailing corruptions.*] And though I lie never so long at the Pool of *Bethesda*, come never so often to thy Table, yet unless thou be pleased to put forth thy healing virtue, they will still remain uncured. O thou blessed physician of souls, heal me, and grant I may now so touch thee that every one of these loathsome issues may immediately slanch, that these sicknesses may not be unto death, but unto the glorie of thy mercie in Pardoning, to the glorie of thy grace in Purifying so polluted a wretch. O Christ hear me, and grant I may now approach thee with such humilitie and contrition, love & devotion, that thou mayest vouchsafe to come unto me, & abide with me, communicating to me thy self, and all the merits of thy Passion. And then

then, O Lord, let no accusations of Satan or my own conscience amaze or distract me, but having peace with thee, let me also have peace in my self, that this Wine may make glad, this Bread of life may strengthen my heart, and enable me chearfully to run the way of thy Commandments. Grant this merciful Saviour for thine own bowels and compassions sake.

EFACULATIONS to be used
at the LORDS TABLE.

LORD, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof.

I have sinned: What shall I do unto thee, O thou preserver of men?

[*Here recollect some of thy greatest sins.*]

If thou, Lord, shouldst be extream to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who may abide it?

But with the Lord there is mercie, and with him is plenteous Redemption.

Behold, O Lord, thy beloved Son in whom thou art well pleased.

Hearken to the crie of his blood which speaketh better things then that of *Abel*.

By his Agonie and bloodie Sweat, by his Cross and Passion, good Lord deliver me.

O Lamb of God which takest away the sins of the world, grant me thy Peace.

O Lamb of God which takest away the sins of the world, have mercy upon me.

Immediately

Immediately before Receiving.

THou hast said that he that eateth thy flesh
and drinketh thy blood hath eternal life.

Behold the servant of the Lord, be it unto
me according to thy word.

At the receiving of the Bread.

By thy Crucified bodie deliver me from this
body of death.

At the receiving of the Cup.

O Let this blood of thine purge my con-
science from dead works to serve the liv-
ing God.

Lord, if thou wilt thou canst make me clean.

O touch me, and say, I will, be thou clean.

After Receiving.

WHat shal I render unto the Lord for all
the benefits he hath done unto me?

I will take the Cup of Salvation, and call
upon the name of the Lord.

Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to re-
ceive power, and riches, and wisdom, and
strength, and honour, and glorie, and blessing.

Therefore blessing, honour, glorie and pow-
er be to him that sitteth upon the Throne, and
to the Lamb for ever and ever. *Amen.*

I have sworn, and am stedfastly purposed to
keep thy righteous judgements,

O hold thou up my goings in thy paths, that
my footsteps slip not.

A Thanksgiving after the Receiving of the Sacrament.

O Thou fountain of all goodnes, from whom everie good and perfect gift cometh, and to whom all honour and glorie should be returned, I desire with all the most fervent and inflamed affections of a grateful heart, to bless and praise thee for those inestimable mercies thou hast vouchsafed me: Lord, what is man that thou shouldst so regard him as to send thy beloved Son to suffer such bitter things for him? But, Lord, what am I the worst of men, that I should have any part in this atonement, who have so often despised him and his sufferings? O the height and depth of this mercie of thine, that art pleased to admit me to the renewing of that Covenant with thee which I have so often and so perversly broken! That I who am not worthy of that dayly bread which sustains the bodie, should be made partaker of this bread of life which nourisheth the soul, and that the God of all puritie should vouchsafe to unite himself to so polluted a wretch! O my God, suffer me no more, I beseech thee, to turn thy grace into wantonnes, to make thy mercie an occasion of securitie, but let this unspeakable love of thine constrain me to obedience, that since my blessed Lord hath died for me, I may no longer live unto my self but
to

60 PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

to him : O Lord, I know there is no concord between Christ and *Belial*, therefore since he hath now been pleased to enter my heart, O let me never permit any lust to chace him thence, but let him that hath so dearly bought me still keep possession of me, and let nothing ever take me out of his hand. To this end be thou graciously pleased to watch over me, and defend me from all assaults of my spiritual enemies, but especially deliver me from my self, from the treacherie of my own heart, which is too willing to yield it self a prey. And where thou seest I am either by nature or custome most weak, there do thou, I beseech thee, magnifie thy power in my preservation. [*Here mention thy most dangerous temptations.*] And Lord let my Saviours sufferings for my sins, and the *Vows* I have now made against them never depart from my minde, but let the remembrance of the one enable me to perform the other, that I may never make truce with those lusts which nailed his hands, pierced his side, and made his soul heavie to the death. But that having now anew listed my self under his banner, I may fight manfully, and follow the Captain of my Salvation, even through a sea of blood. Lord, lift up my hands that hang down, and my feeble knees, that I faint not in this warfare; O be thou my strength who am not able of my self to struggle with the slightest temptations. How often have I turned my back in the day of battel? how many of these Sacramental vows have I violated? And Lord, I have still the same unconstant deceitful heart

A Thanksgiving after Sacrament. 61

heart to betray me to the breach of this. O thou who art Yea and Amen, in whom there is no shadow of change, communicate to me, I beseech thee, such a stabilitie of mind, that I may no more thus start aside like a broken bow, but that having my heart whole with thee I may continue stedfast in thy Covenant; that not one good purpose which thy Spirit hath raised in me this day may vanish, as so many have formerly done, but that they may bring forth fruit unto life eternal. Grant this, O merciful father, through the merits and mediation of my Crucified Saviour.

A Prayer of Intercession to be used either before or after the receiving of the Sacrament.

O MOST gracious Lord, who so tenderly lovedst mankind as to give thy dear Son out of thy Bosome to be a propitiation for the sins of the whole world, grant that the effect of this Redemption may be as universal as the design of it, that it may be to the salvation of all. O let no person by impenitence and wilful sin forfeit his part in it, but by the power of thy grace bring all, even the most obstinate sinners to repentance. Inlighten all that sit in darkness, all Jews, Turks, Infidels and Hereticks, take from them all blindness, hardness of heart and contempt of thy Word, and so fetch them home, blessed Lord, unto thy fold, that they may be saved among the number of the true Israelites

raelites. And for all those upon whom the Name of thy Son is called, grant, O Lord, that their conversations may be such as becometh the Gospel of Christ, that his Name be no longer blasphemed among the Heathens through us. O Blessed Lord, how long shall Christendom continue the vilest part of the world, a sink of all those abominable pollutions, which even Barbarians detest? O let not our profession and our practise be alwayes at so wide a distance. Let not the Disciples of the holy and Immaculate Jesus be of all others the most profane and impure. Let not the subjects of the Prince of Peace be of all others the most contentious and bloodie; but make us Christians in deed as well as in name, that we may walk worthy of that Holy vocation wherewith we are called, and may all with one minde and one mouth glorifie thee the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Have mercie on this languishing Church, look down from Heaven the habitation of thy holiness and of thy glorie: where is thy zeal and thy strength, the sounding of thy bowels and of thy mercies towards us? Are they restrained? Be not wroth very sore, O Lord, neither remember iniquitie for ever; but though our backslidings are many, and we have grievously rebelled, yet according to all thy goodness let thy anger & thy furie be turned away, & cause thy face to shine upon thy Sanctuarie which is desolate, for the Lords sake; and so separate between us and our sins, that they may no longer separate between us and our God. Save and defend

Send all Christian Kings, Princes & Governours,
especially those to whom we owe subjection;
plead thou their cause, O Lord, against those
that strive with them, & fight thou against those
that fight against them, & so guide & assist them
in the discharge of that office whereunto thou
hast appointed them, that under them we may
lead quiet and peaceable life, in all godliness &
honestie. Bless them that wait at thine Altar,
open thou their lips that their mouth may shew
forth thy praise; O let not the lights of the world
be put under bushels, but place them in their
Candlesticks, that they may give light to all
that are in the house. Let not *Jeroboams* Priests
profane thy Service, but let the seed of *Aaron*
still minister before thee. And O thou Father of
mercies, and God of all comfort, succour and
relieve all that are in affliction, and deliver the
out-cast and poor, help them to right that suf-
fer wrong, let the sorrowful sighing of the pri-
soners come before thee, and according to the
greatness of thy power, preserve thou those
that are appointed to die; grant ease to those
that are in pain, supplies to those that suffer
want, give to all presumptuous sinners a sense
of their sins, and to all despairing, a sight of
thy mercies, and do thou, O Lord, for every
one above what they can ask or think. Forgive
my enemies, persecuters and slanderers, and
turn their hearts. Pour down thy blessings on
all my friends, and benefactors, all who have
commended themselves to my Prayers. [*Here
thou mayest name particular persons.*] And grant,
O

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

O merciful Father, that through this blood of the Cross, we may all be presented pure and unblameable and unreproueable in thy sight; that so we may be admitted into that place of puritie, where no unclean thing can enter, there to sing eternal praises to Father, Son and Holie Ghost for ever.

A Prayer in times of common Persecution.

O BLESSED Saviour, who haste made the Cross the badge of thy Disciples, enable me I beseech thee, willingly and chearfully to embrace it; thou seest, O Lord, I am fallen into dayes, wherein he that departeth from evil maketh himself a Prey, O make me so readily to expose all my outward concerns, when my obedience to thee requireth it, that what falls as a *Prey* to men, may by thee be accepted as a *Sacrifice* to God: Lord preierv me so by thy grace that I never suffer as an evil doer, and then, O Lord, if it be my lot to suffer as a Christian, let me not be ashamed, but rejoyce that I am counted worthy to suffer for thy Name: O thou who for my sake enduredst the cross; and dispisedst the shame, let the example of that love and patience prevail against all the tremblings of my corrupt heart, that no terrors may ever be able to shake my constancie, but that how long soever thou shalt permit the rod of the wicked to lie on my back, I may never put my hand unto wickedness: Lord thou knowest whereof I am made, thou remembrest
that

that I am but flesh ; and flesh, O Lord, shrinks at the approach of any thing grievous. It is thy Spirit, thy Spirit alone, that can uphold me, O stablish me with thy free Spirit, that I be not wearie and faint in my mind. And by how much the greater thou discernest my weakness, so much the more do thou shew forth thy power in me, and make me, O Lord, in all temptations stedfastly to look to thee, the author and finisher of my faith, that so I may run the race which is set before me, and resist even unto blood, striving against sin : O dear Jesus, hear me, and though Satan desire to have me, that he may winnow me as wheat, yet do thou O blessed Mediator, pray for me that my faith fail not, but that though it be tried with fire, it may be found unto praise and glorie and honour at thy appearing. And, O Lord, I beseech thee grant that I may preserve not only constancie towards God, but charitie also towards men, even those whom thou shalt permit to be the instruments of my sufferings : Lord, let me not fail to imitate that admirable meekness of thine, in loving and praying for my greatest persecutors ; and do thou, O Lord, overcome all their evil with thy infinite goodness, turn their hearts, and draw them powerfully to thy self, and at last receive both me and mine enemies into those mansions of peace and rest, where thou reignest with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, one God, for ever.

A Prayer in time of Affliction.

O JUST and holy Lord, who with rebukes dost chasten man for sin, I desire unfeignedly to humble my self under thy mightie hand, which now lies heavie upon me, I heartily acknowledge, O Lord, that all I do, all I can suffer, is but the due reward of my deeds, and therefore in thy severest inflictions I must still say, righteous art thou, O Lord, and upright are thy judgements. But, O Lord, I beseech thee in judgement remember mercie, and though my sins have inforced thee to strike, yet consider my weakness, and let not thy stripes be more heavie, or more lasting then thou seest profitable for my soul; correct me but with the chastisement of a father, not with the wounds of an enemy, and though thou take not off thy rod, yet take away thine anger: Lord, do not abhor my soul, nor cast thy servant away in displeasure, but pardon my sins, I beseech thee; and if yet in thy Fatherly wisdom, thou see fit to prolong thy corrections, thy blessed will be done, I cast my self O Lord, at thy feet, do with me what thou pleasest. Trie me as silver is tried, so thou bring me out purified. And Lord make even my flesh also to subscribe to this resignation, that there may be nothing in me, that may rebel against thy hand, but that having perfectly suppress all repining thoughts, I may chearfully drink of this cup. And how bitter soever thou shalt
please

A Thanksgiving for Deliverance. 67

please to make it, Lord, let it prove medicinal, and cure all the diseases of my soul, that it may bring forth in me the peaceable fruit of righteousness. That so these light afflictions which are but for a moment, may work for me a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glorie, through Jesus Christ.

A Thanksgiving for Deliverance.

O Blessed Lord, who art gracious and merciful, slow to anger and of great kindness, and repentest thee of the evil; I thankfully acknowledge before thee that thou hast not dealt with me after my sins, nor rewarded me according to my iniquities. My rebellions, O Lord, deserve to be scourged with Scorpions, and thou hast corrected them only with a gentle and fatherly Rod; neither hast thou suffered me to lie long under that, but hast given me a timely and a gracious issue out of my late distresses. O Lord, I will be glad and rejoyce in thy mercie, for thou hast considered my trouble, and hast known my soul in adversitie. Thou hast smitten, and thou hast healed me, O let these various methods of thine have their proper effects upon my soul, that I who have felt the smart of thy chastisements may stand in awe and not sin, and that I who have likewise felt the sweet refreshings of thy mercie may have my heart ravished with it, and knit to thee in the firmest bands of love, and that by both I may be preserved in a constant, entire obedience to thee all my dayes, through Jesus Christ.

Directions for the time of Sickness.

WHEN thou findest thy self visited with Sickness thou art immediately to remember that it is God, which with rebukes doth chasten man for sin. And therefore let thy first care be to find out what it is that provokes him to smite thee, and to that purpose Examine thine own heart, search diligently what guilts lie there, confess them humbly and penitently to God, and for the greater security renew thy Repentance for all the old sins of thy former life, beg most earnestly and importunately his mercy and pardon in Christ Jesus, and put on sincere and zealous resolutions of forsaking every evil way for the rest of that time which God shall spare thee. And that thy own heart deceive thee not in this so weighty a business, it will be wisdom to send for some godly Divine, not only to assist thee with his prayers, but with his counsel also. And to that purpose open thy heart so freely to him that he may be able to judge whether thy Repentance be such as may give thee confidence to appear before Gods dreadful Tribunal, and that if it be not, he may help thee what he can towards the making it so. And when thou hast thus provided for thy better part, thy Soul, then consider thy Body also, and as the Wise man saith, Eccclus. 38. 12. Give place to the Physician, for the Lord hath created him: Use such means as may be most likely to recover thy health, but always remember that the success
of

of them must come from God; and beware of Asa's sin, who sought to the Physicians, and not to the Lord, 2 Chro. 6. 12. Dispose also betimes of thy temporal affairs, by making thy Will, and setting all things in such order as thou meanest finally to leave them in, and defer it not till thy sickness grow more violent, for then perhaps thou shalt not have such use of thy Reason as may fit thee for it, or if thou have, it wil be then much more seasonable to imploy thy thoughts on higher things, on the world thou art going to, rather then that thou art about to leave; we cannot carry the things of this world with us when we go hence, and it is not fit we should carry the thoughts of them. Therefore let those be early dispatched that they may not disturb thee at last.

A Prayer for a sick person.

O Merciful and Righteous Lord, the God of health and of sickness, of life and of death, I most unfeignedly acknowledge that my great abuse of those manie dayes of strength and welfare, which thou hast afforded me, hath most justly deserved thy present visitation. I desire, O Lord, humbly to accept of this punishment of mine iniquitie, and to bear the indignation of the Lord, because I have sinned against him. And, O thou merciful Father, who designest not the ruine but the amendment of those whom thou scourgest, I beseech thee by thy grace so to sanctifie this correction

of thine to me, that this sickness of my bodie may be a means of health to my soul, make me diligent to search my heart, and do thou O Lord, enable me to discover everie accursed thing, how closely soever concealed there, that by the removal thereof, I may make way for the removal of this punishment. Heal my soul, O Lord, which hath sinned against thee, and then if it be thy blessed will, heal my bodie also, restore the voice of joy and health unto my dwelling, that I may live to praise thee, and to bring forth fruits of repentance. But if in thy wisdom thou hast otherwise disposed, if thou hast determined that this sickness shall be unto death, I beseech thee to fit and prepare me for it, give me that sincere and earnest repentance, to which thou hast promised mercie and pardon; wean my heart from the world, and all its fading vanities, and make me to gasp and pant after those more excellent and durable joys which are at thy right hand for ever. Lord, lift thou up the light of thy countenance upon me, and in all the pains of my bodie, in all the agonies of my spirit, let thy comforts refresh my soul, and enable me patiently to wait till my change come. And grant, O Lord, that when my earthly house of this Tabernacle is dissolved I may have a building of God, an house not made with hands eternal in the heavens. And that for his sake who by his precious blood hath purchased it for me, even Jesus Christ.

A Thanksgiving for Recovery.

O Gracious Lord, the God of the spirits of all flesh, in whose hand my time is, I praise and magnifie thee that thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption, and restored me to health again; it is thou alone, O Lord, that hast preserved my life from destruction, thou hast chastened and corrected me, but thou hast not given me over unto death; O let this life which thou hast thus graciously spared be wholly consecrated to thee. Behold, O Lord, I am by thy mercie made whole, O make me strictly careful to sin no more lest a worse thing come unto me. Lord, let not this reprieve thou hast now given me, make me secure, as thinking that my Lord delayeth his coming, but grant me I beseech thee to make a right use of this long suffering of thine, and so to imploy everie minute of that time thou shalt allow me, that when thou shalt appear I may have confidence and not be ashamed before thee at thy coming. Lord I have found by this approach towards death, how dreadful a thing it is to be taken unprepared. O let it be a perpetual admonition to me to watch for my Masters coming. And when the pleasures of sin shall present themselves to entice me, O make me to remember how bitter they will be at the last. O Lord hear me, and as thou hast in much mercie afforded me time, so grant me also grace to work out my own salvation,

vation, to provide oile in my lamp, that when the Bridegroom cometh I may go with him to the marriage. Grant this I beseech thee for thy dear Sons sake.

A Prayer at the approach of Death.

O Eternal and everliving God, who first breathedst into man the breath of life, and when thou takest away that breath he dies and is turned again to his dust, look with compassion on me thy poor creature who am now drawing near the gates of death, and which is infinitely more terrible, the bar of Judgement. Lord my own heart condemns me, and thou art infinitely greater then my heart, and knowest all things. The sins I know and remember, fill me with horror; but there are also multitudes of others, which I either observed not at the time, or have since carelessly forgot, which are all present to thee. Thou settest my misdeeds before thee, and my secret sins in the light of thy countenance; and to what a mountainous heap must the minutely provocations of so manie years arise? How shall one so ungodly stand in thy Judgement, or such a sinner in the Congregation of the Righteous? And to adde yet more to my terrour, my verie repentance I fear will not abide the trial; my frequent relapses heretofore have sufficiently witnessed the unsinceritie of my past resolutions. And then, O Lord, what can secure me that my present dislikes of my sins are not rather the effects

A Prayer at the approach of death.

73

effects of my amazing danger then of any real change? And, O Lord, I know thou art not mocked, nor wilt accept of any thing that is not perfectly sincere. O Lord, when I consider this, fearfulness and trembling comes upon me, and an horrible dread overwhelmeth me, my flesh trembleth for fear of thee, and my heart is wounded within me. But, O Lord, one deep calleth upon another, the depth of my miserie upon the depth of thy mercie; Lord, save now or I perish eternally. O thou who wilt not that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance, bring me, I beseech thee, though thus late, to a sincere Repentance, such as thou wilt accept, who triest the heart. Create in me, O God, a clean heart, and renew a right spirit within me: Lord, one day is with thee as a thousand years, O let thy mightie spirit work in me now in this my last day, whatsoever thou seest wanting to fit me for thy mercie and acceptance. Give me a perfect and entire hatred of my sins, and enable me to present thee with that sacrifice of a broken and contrite heart, which thou hast promised not to despise; that by this I may be made capable of that atonement which thy dear Son hath by the more excellent oblation of himself made for all repenting sinners. He is the propitiation for our sins, he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities, the chastisement of our peace was on him, O heal me by his stripes, and let the cry of his blood drown the clamour of my sins. I am indeed a
child

childe of wrath, but he is the Son of thy love, for his sake spare me, O Lord, spare thy creature whom he hath redeemed with his most precious blood, and be not angrie with me for ever. In his wounds O Lord, I take Sanctuary, O let not thy vengeance pursue me to this Citie of refuge: my soul hangeth upon him, O let me not perish with a Jesus, with a Saviour in my arms. But by his Agonie and bloodie sweat, by his Cross and Passion, by all that he did and suffered for sinners, good Lord deliver me; deliver me, I beseech thee, from the wages of my sins, thy wrath and everlasting damnation, in this time of my tribulation, in the hour of death, and in the day of Judgement. Hear me, O Lord, hear me, and do not now repay my former neglects of thy calls, by refusing to answer me in this time of my greatest need; Lord, there is but a step between me and death, O let not my sin go down upon thy wrath, but seal my pardon before I go hence and be no more seen. Thy loving kindness is better then the life it self, O let me have that in exchange, and I shall most gladly lay down this mortal life. Lord, thou knowest all my desire, and my groaning is not hid from thee; deal thou with me, O Lord, according to thy Name, for sweet is thy mercie; take away the sting of death, the guilt of my sins, and then though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death I will fear no evil; I will lay me down in peace, and Lord when I awake up, let me be satisfied with thy presence in thy glorie. Grant this
merciful

Ejaculations for the Sick,

75

merciful God for his sake who is both the Redeemer and Mediatour of finners, even Jesus Christ.

PSALMS.

PUT me not to rebuke, O Lord, in thine anger, neither chasten me in thy heauie displeasure.

There is no health in my flesh because of thy displeasure, neither is there any rest in my bones by reason of my sins.

For my wickednesses have gone over my head, and are a sore burden too heauie for me to bear.

My wounds stinck and are corrupt through my foolishness.

Therefore is my spirit vexed within me and my heart within me is desolate.

My sins have taken such hold upon me that I am not able to look up, yea, they are more in number then the hairs of my head, and my heart hath failed me.

But thou, O Lord God, art full of compassion and mercy, long-suffering, plenteous in goodness and truth.

Turn thee unto me, and have mercy upon me, for I am desolate and in misery.

If thou Lord shouldst be extreame to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who may abide it?

O remember not the sins and offenses of my youth, but according to thy mercy think thou upon me for thy goodness.

Look upon my adversity and misery, and forgive me all my sin.

Hide

Hide not thy face from thy servant, for I am in trouble, O haste thee and hear me.

Out of the deep do I call unto thee, Lord hear my voice.

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my Soul, O save me for thy mercies sake.

O go not from me, for trouble is hard at hand, and there is none to help.

I stretch forth my hands unto thee, my Soul gaspeth unto thee, as a thirsty land.

Draw nigh unto my soul and save it, O deliver me, because of my enemies.

For my Soul is full of trouble, and my life draweth nigh unto hell.

Save me from the Lions mouth, hear me from among the horns of the Unicorns.

O set me up upon a rock that is higher then I, for thou art my hope, and a strong Tower for me against the enemy.

Why art thou so heavy, O my soul, and why art thou so disquieted within me?

Put thy trust in God for I will yet give him thanks for the help of his countenance.

The Lord shall make good his loving kindness towards me, yea, thy mercy, O Lord, endureth for ever, despise not then the work of thine own hands.

O GOD, thou art my God, early will I seek thee.

My Soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh also longeth after thee, in a barren and drie land where no water is.

Like

Ejaculations for the Sick.

77

Like as the heart desireth the water brooks, so longeth my Soul after thee O God.

My Soul is athirst for God, even for the living God, when shall I come to appear before the presence of God?

How amiable are thy dwellings, O Lord of Hosts!

My Soul hath a desire and longing to enter into the Courts of the Lord, my flesh and my heart rejoyce in the living God.

O that I had wings like a Dove, for then would I fly away and be at rest.

O send out thy light and thy truth, that they may lead me, and bring me unto thy holy Hill, and to thy dwelling.

For one day in thy Courts is better then a thousand:

I had rather be a door-keeper in the house of my God, then to dwell in the tents of wickedness.

I should utterly have fainted, but that I believed verily to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living.

Thou art my helper and my redeemer, O Lord, make no long tarrying.

EJACULATIONS.

O LORD, of whom may I seek for succour but of thee, who for my sins art justly displeased? Yet O Lord God most Holy, O Lord most Mighty, O Holy and most Merciful Saviour, deliver me not into the bitter pains of eternal death.

Thou

Thou knowest, Lord, the secrets of my heart, shut not up thy merciful eyes to my prayer, but hear me, O Lord most Holy, O God most Mighty, O Holy and Merciful Saviour, thou most worthy Judge eternall, suffer me not at my last hour for any pains of death to fall from thee.

Father, I have sinned against heaven and before thee, and am not worthy to be called thy child, yet O Lord, do not thou cast off the bowels and compassions of a Father, but even as a father pitieth his own children, so be thou merciful unto me.

Lord, the prince of this world cometh, O let him have nothing in me, but as he accuseth, do thou absolve; he layes many and grievous things to my charge, which he can too well prove, I have nothing to say for my self, do thou answer for me, O Lord my God.

O Lord I am cloathed with filthy garments, and Satan stands at my right hand to resist me, O be thou pleased to rebuke him, and pluck me as a brand out of the fire, cause mine iniquities to pass from me, and cloath me with the righteousness of thy Son.

Behold, O God, the Diuel is coming towards me, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time, O save and deliver me lest he devour my soul like a Lion, and tear it in pieces while there is none to help.

O my God, I know that no unclean thing can enter into thy Kingdom, and I am nothing but pollution, my very righteousness are as filthy rags,

ags, O wash me and make me white in the blood of the Lamb, that so I may be fit to stand before thy Throne.

Lord, the snares of death compass me round about, O let not the pains of hell also take hold upon me, but though I find trouble and heaviness, yet O Lord I beseech thee deliver my soul.

O dear Jesus, who hast bought me with the precious price of thine own blood: challenge now thy purchase, and let not all the malice of Hell pluck me out of thy hand.

O blessed high Priest, who art able to save them to the utmost, who come unto God by thee, save me I beseech thee, who have no hope, but on thy merits and intercession,

O God I confess I have defaced that Image of thine, thou didst imprint upon my Soul, Yet O thou faithful Creator, have pity on thy creature.

O Jesu, I have by my many and grievous sins crucified thee afresh, yet thou who prayedst for thy persecutors, interceed for me also, and suffer not, O my Redeemer, my soul (the price of thy blood) to perish.

O Spirit of grace, I have by my horrid impieties done despite to thee, yet, O Blessed Comforter, though I have often grieved thee, be thou pleased to succour and relieve me, and say unto my soul, I am thy salvation.

Mine eyes look unto thee, O Lord, in thee is my trust, O cast not out my soul.

O Lord in the have I trusted, let me never be confounded.

O Blessed Lord, who scourgest every Son whom thou receivest, let me not be weary of thy correction, but give me such a perfect subjection to thee the Father of Spirits, that this chastisement may be for my profit, that I may thereby be partaker of thy holiness.

O thou Captain of my Salvation, who wert made perfect by sufferings, sanctifie to me all the pains of body, all the terrours of mind which thou shalt permit to fall upon me.

Lord, my sins have deserved eternal torments, make me chearfully and thankfully to bear my present pains, chasten me as thou pleasest here, that I may not be condemned with the world.

Lord, the waters are come in even unto my soul, O Let thy Spirit move upon these waters, and make them like the pool of *Bethesda*, that they may cure whatsoever spiritual disease thou discernest in me.

O Christ, who first sufferedst many and grievous things, and then enteredst into thy glory, make me so to suffer with thee, that I may also be glorified with thee.

O dear Jesus, who humbledst thy self to the death of the Cross for me, let that death of thine sweeten the bitterness of mine.

When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death, thou didst open the Kingdome of heaven to all believers.

I believe that thou shalt come to be my Judge.

I pray thee therefore help thy servant whom
thou

thou hast redeemed with thy most precious blood.

Make me to be numbred with thy Saints in glory everlasting.

Thou art the resurrection and the life, he that believeth in thee, though he were dead, yet shall he live: Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief.

My flesh, and my heart faileth, but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.

I desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ which is far better: Lord, I groan earnestly desiring to be cloathed upon with that house from heaven.

I desire to put off this my tabernacle, O be pleased to receive me into everlasting habitations.

Bring my soul out of prison that I may give thanks unto thy name.

Lord, I am here to wrestle not only with flesh and blood, but with principalities and powers, and spiritual wickedness, O take me from these tents of *Kedar*, into the heavenly *Jerusalem*, where Satan shall be utterly trodden under my feet.

I cannot here attend one minute to thy service, without distraction, O take me up to stand before thy Throne, where I shall serve thee day and night.

I am here in heaviness through many tribulations, O receive me into that place of rest, where all tears shall be wiped from my eyes, where

there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying, nor pain.

I am here in a state of banishment and absence from the Lord, O take me where I shall for ever behold thy face, and follow the Lamb whither soever he goeth.

I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith, henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness,

O Blessed Jesu, who hast loved me, and washed me from my sins in thine own blood, receive my soul.

Into thy hands I commend my Spirit, for thou hast redeemed me, O Lord thou God of truth, Come Lord Jesu, come quickly.

PRAY.

PRAYERS *for their use who*
Mourn in secret for the
 PUBLICK CALA-
 MITIES, &c.

Psalm 74.

O God, Wherefore art thou absent from us so long:
 why is thy wrath so hot against the sheep of thy
 pasture? &c.

Psal. 79. O God, the Heathen are come into thine
 inheritance: thy holy temple have they defiled,
 and made Jerusalem an heap of stones, &c.

Psal. 80. Hear, O thou shepherd of Israel, thou
 that leadeest Joseph like a sheep: shew thy self
 also, thou that sittest upon the Cherubims, &c.

A Prayer to be used in these times of
Calamity.

O Lord God, to whom vengeance be-
 longeth, I desire humbly to confess
 before thee, both on my own behalf,
 & that of this Nation, that these many
 years of calamitie we have groaned under, are
 but the just, (yea milde) returns of those ma-

ny more years of our provocations against thee, and that thy present wrath is but the due punishment of thy abused mercy. O Lord, thou hast formerly abounded to us in blessings above all people of the earth. Thy candle shined upon our heads, and we delighted our selves in thy great goodness, Peace was within our walls, and plenteousness within our palaces, there was no decay, no leading into Captivity and no complaining in our streets: but we turned this Grace into wantonness, we abused our Peace to Security, our Plenty to riot & luxury, and made those good things which should have endeared our hearts to thee, the occasion of enstranging them from thee. Nay, O Lord, thou gavest us yet more precious mercies, thou wert pleased thy self to pitch thy Tabernacle with us, to establish a pure and glorious Church among us, and give us thy Word to be a lamp unto our feet, and a light unto our paths; but O Lord, we have made no other use of that light, then to conduct us to the Chambers of death, we have dealt proudly, and not hearkned to thy Commandments, and by rebelling against the light, have purchased to our selves so much the heavier portion in the outer darkness. And now, O Lord, had the overflowings of thy vengeance been answerable to that of our sin, we had long since been swept away with a swift destruction, and there had been none of us alive at this day to implore thy mercy. But thou art a Gracious God, slow to anger, and hast proceeded with us with much patience and long-suffering, thou

thou hast sent thy Judgements to awake us to repentance, and hast also allowed us space for it: But alas! we have perverted this mercy of thine beyond all the former, we return not to him that smiteth us, neither do we seek the Lord, we are sliden back by a perpetual back-sliding, no man repenteth him of his wickedness, or saith what have I done? 'Tis true indeed we fear the rod, (we dread everie suffering, so that we are ready to buy it off with the foulest sin) but we fear not him that hath appointed it, but by a wretched obstinacy harden our necks against thee, and refuse to return. now, O God, what balm is there in *Gilead* that can cure us; who when thou wouldst heal us, will not be healed, we know thou hast pronounced that there is no peace to the wicked, and how shall we then pray for peace, that still retain our wickedness? This this, O Lord, is our sorest disease, O give us Medicines to heal this sickness, heal our souls, and then we know thou canst soon heal our Land. Lord, thou hast long spoken by thy Word to our ears, by thy Judgements even to all our senses, but unless thou speak by thy Spirit to our hearts, all other Calls will still be uneffectual. O send out this voice, and that a mightie voice, such as may awake us out of this Lethargie: Thou that didst call *Lazarus* out of the grave, O be pleased to call us who are Dead, yea, putrified in trespasses and sins, and make us to awake to righteousness. And though, O Lord, our frequent resistences even of those inward Calls, have justly provo-

ked thee to give us up to the Lusts of our own heart; yet, O thou boundless Ocean of mercie, who art good not only beyond what we can deserve, but what we can wish, do not withdraw the influence of thy grace, and take not thy holy spirit from us. Thou wert found of those that sought thee not, O let that act of mercie be repeated to us who are so desperately, yet so insensibly Sick, that we cannot so much as look after the Physitian, and by how much our case is the more dangerous, so much the more soveraign Remedies do thou apply; Lord help us, and consider, not so much our unworthiness of thy aid, as our irremediable ruine if we want it, save Lord, or we perish eternally. To this end dispense to us in our temporal Interest what thou seeest may best secure our Spiritual; if a greater degree of outward Miserie will tend to the curing our inward, Lord, spare not thy Rod, but strike yet more sharply. Cast out this Devil, though with never so much Foaming & tearing. But if thou seeest that some Return of mercie may be most likely to melt us, O be pleased so far to condescend to our wretchedness as to afford us that, and whether by thy sharper or gentler methods, bring us home to thy self. And then, O Lord, we know thy hand is not shortned, that it cannot save, when thou hast delivered us from our sins, thou canst and wilt deliver us from our troubles: O shew us thy mercie and grant us thy salvation, that being redeemed both in our bodies and spirits, we may glorifie thee in both, in a chearful obedience,

dience, and praise the Name of our God, that hath dealt wonderfully with us, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

A Prayer for This Church.

O Thou great God of recompences, who turnest a Fruitful land into Barrenness for the wickedness of them that dwell therein; thou hast most justly executed that Fatal Sentence on *this* Church, which having once been the perfection of Beautie, the joy of the whole earth, is now become a Scorn and derision to all that are round about her. O Lord, what could have been done to thy Vineyard that thou hast not done in it, and since it hath brought forth nothing but wilde Grapes, it is perfectly just with thee to take away the hedge thereof, and let it be eaten up. But O Lord, though our iniquities testifie against us, yet do thou it for thy Names sake, for our backslidings are many, we have sinned against thee. O the hope of Israel, the Saviour thereof in time of trouble, why shouldst thou be as a stranger in the land, as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarrie for a night? Why shouldst thou be as a man astonied, as a mightie man that cannot save? Yet thou, O Lord, art in the midst of us, and we are called by thy name, leave us not; deprive us of what outward enjoyment thou pleassest, take from us the opportunities of our luxurie and it may be a mercie, but O take not from us the means of our Reformation, for

that is the most direful expression of thy wrath. And though we have hated the Light because our deeds were evil, yet, O Lord, do not by withdrawing it condemn us to walk on still in darkness, but let it continue to shine till it have guided our feet into the way of peace. O Lord, arise, stir up thy strength and come and help us, and deliver not the soul of thy Turtle Dove (*this disconsolate Church*) unto the multitude of the Enemie, but help her, O God, and that right early. But if, O Lord, our rebellions have so provoked thee, that the *Ark must wander in the Wilderness till all this murmuring Generation be consumed*, yet let not that perish with us, but bring it at last into a *Canaan*, and let our more innocent Posterity see that which in thy just judgement thou deniest to us. In the mean time let us not cease to bewail that Desolation our sins have wrought, to think upon the stones of *Sion*, and pitie to see her in the dust, nor ever be ashamed or afraid to own her in her lowest and most persecuted Condition, but esteem the Reproach of Christ greater riches then the Treasures of *Egypt*, and so approve our constancie to this our afflicted Mother, that her blessed Lord and Head may own us with mercie when he shall come in the glory of thee his Father with the holy Angels. Grant this merciful Lord, for the same Jesus Christ his sake.

A Prayer for the Peace of the Church.

LORD Jesus Christ, which of thine Almightyneſs, madeſt all creatures both viſible and inviſible, which of thy godly wiſdome governeſt and ſetteſt all things in moſt goodly order, which of thine unſpeakable goodneſs keepeſt, defendeſt and furthereſt all things, which of thy deep mercy reſtoreſt the decayed, reneweſt the fallen, raiſeſt the dead; vouchſafe we pray thee at laſt, to caſt down thy countenance upon thy well beloved Spouſe *the Church*, but let it be that amiable and merciful countenance wherewith thou paciſieſt all things in Heaven, in earth, and whatſoever is above Heaven and under the earth: vouchſafe to caſt upon us thoſe tender and pitiful eyes with which thou didſt once behold *Peter* that great Shepherd of thy Church, and forthwith he remembered himſelf and repented; with which eyes thou once didſt view the ſcattered Multitude and wert moved with compaſſion, that for lack of a good Shepherd they wandred as ſheep diſperſed and ſtrayed aſunder. Thou ſeeſt (O good *Shepherd*) what ſundrie ſorts of Wolves have broken into thy ſheep-cotes: So that if it were poſſible the very perfect perſons ſhould be brought into error: Thou ſeeſt with what Windes, with what Waves, with what ſtorms thy ſilly ſhip is toſſed, thy ſhip wherein thy little flock is in peril to be drowned. And what is now left but that it utterly ſink and we all periſh?

rish? Of this tempest and storm we may thank our own Wickedness and sinful living, we discern it well and confess it, we discern thy Righteousness, and we bewail our unrighteousness: But we appeal to thy *Mercy* which *surmounteth all thy works*; we have now suffered much punishment, being scourged with so many Wars, consumed with such Losses of goods, shaken with so many floods, and yet appears there no where any Haven or Port unto us, being thus tired and forlorn among so strange evils, but still every day more grievous punishments and more seem to hang over our heads. We complain not of thy sharpness, most tender Saviour, but we discern here also thy Mercy, forasmuch as much grievouser plagues we have deserved. But O most merciful *Jesus*, we beseech thee that thou wilt not consider nor weigh what is due for our deservings, but rather what becometh thy Mercy, without which neither the Angels in Heaven can stand sure before thee, much less we silly vessels of clay. Have mercie on us, O Redeemer, which art easie to be intreated, not that we be worthy of thy mercie, but give thou this Glorie unto *thine own Name*. Suffer not those which either have not known thee or do envie thy glorie, continually to triumph over us, and say, Where is their God, where is their Redeemer, where is their *Saviour*, where is their Bridegroom that they thus boast on? These opprobrious words redound unto thee. O Lord, while by our evils men weigh and esteem thy Goodness, they think we be Forsaken
whom

A Prayer for the peace of the Church.

91

whom they see not amended. Once when thou sleptst in the Ship, and a Tempest suddenly arising threatned death to all in the Ship, thou awokest at the outcrie of a *few Disciples* and straightway at thine Almighty word the Waters couched, the Winds fell, the Storm was suddenly turned into a great calm; the dum waters knew their makers voice. Now in this far greater Tempest, wherein not a few mens bodies be in danger, but innumerable Souls: we beseech thee at the crie of thy holy *Church*, which is in danger of drowning, that thou wilt awake. So many thousands of men do crie, *Lord save us, we perish*, the Tempest is past Mans power; it is Thy word that must do the deed, Lord Jesu, only say thou with a word of thy mouth, *Cease, O tempest, and forthwith shall the desired calm appear*. Thou wouldst have spared so many thousands of most wicked men, if in the City of *Sodom* had been found but ten good men. Now here be so many Thousands of men which love the glorie of thy Name, which sigh for the beautie of thy House, and wilt thou not at these mens Prayers let goe thine Anger, and remember thine accustomed and old mercies? Shalt thou not with thy heavenly policie turn our folly into thy glory? Shalt thou not turn the wicked mens evils into thy Churches good? For thy mercie is wont then most of all to succour, when the thing is with us past Remedie, and neither the Might nor Wisdome of men can help it. Thou alone bringest things that be never so out of order into order again, which art
the

the only Author and maintainer of Peace. Thou framedit that old Confusion wherein without order, without fashion confusedly lay the discordant seeds of things, and with a wonderful order the things that of nature fought together, Thou didst ally and knit in a perpetual band. But how much greater Confusion is this, where is no Charitie, no Fidelitie, no bonds of Love, no reverence neither of Laws nor yet of Rulers, no agreement of Opinions, but as it were in a misordered Quire, every man singeth a contrary note! Among the Heavenly *Planets* is no dessention, the Elements keep their place, every one do the office whereunto they be appointed: And wilt thou suffer thy *Sponse*, for whose sake all things were made, thus by continual discords to perish? Shalt thou suffer the *wicked Spirits*, which be authors and workers of discord, to bear such a swing in thy Kingdome unchecked? Shalt thou suffer the strong Captain of mischief, whom thou once overthrewest, again to invade thy Tents, and to spoil thy Souldiers? When thou wert here a man conversant among men, at thy Voice fled the Divils. Send forth, we beseech thee, O Lord, thy Spirit, which may drive away out of the breasts of all them that profess thy Name, the wicked Spirits, masters of riot, of covetousness, of vain-glory, of carnal lust, of mischief and discord. *Create in us, O our God and King, a clean heart, and renew thy holy Spirit in our breasts, pluck not from us thy holy Ghost. Render unto us the joy of thy saving*

A Prayer for the peace of the Church.

93

ving health, and with thy principal Spirit, strengthen thy Spouse and the Heardmen thereof. By this Spirit thou reconciledst the earthly to the Heavenly: By this thou didst frame and reduce so many Tongues, so many Nations, so many sundry sorts of men into one body of a Church, which body by the same Spirit is knit to thee their Head. This Spirit if thou wilt vouchsafe to renew in all mens hearts, then shall all these forreign miseries cease, or if they cease not, they shall turn to the profit and avail of them which love thee. Stay this Confusion, set in order this horrible Chaos (O Lord Jesus) let thy Spirit stretch out it self upon these Waters of evil wavering Opinions. And because thy spirit, which according to thy Prophets saying, *containeth all things*, hath also the Science of speaking; make, that like as unto all them which be of thy House, is one Light, one Baptisme, one God, one Hope, one Spirit; so they may also have one Voice, one Note, one Song, professing one Catholick truth. When thou didst mount up to Heaven triumphantly, thou threwst out from above thy precious things, thou gavest Gifts amongst men, thou dealtest sundry rewards of thy Spirit. Renew again from above thy old bountiffulness, give that thing to thy Church, now fainting and growing downward, that thou gavest unto her shooting up, at her first beginning. Give unto *Princes* and Rulers the grace so to stand in awe of thee, that they so may guide the Common-weal, as they should shortly

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS.

shortly render accompt unto thee that art the King of Kings. Give wisdom to be alwayes assitant unto them, that whatsoever is best to be done, they may espy it in their minds, and pursue the same in their doings. Give to the *Bishops* the gift of Prophecie, that they may declare and interpret holy Scripture, not of their own brain, but of thine inspiring. Give them the threefold Charity which thou once demandedst of *Peter*, what time thou didst betake unto him the charge of thy sheep. Give to the *Priests* the love of Soberness and of Chastity. Give to thy people a good will to follow thy Commandments, and a readines to obey such persons as thou hast appointed over them. So shall it come to pass; if through thy Gift thy *Princes* shall command that thou requirest, if thy Pastors and Herdmen shall teach the same, and thy People obey them both, that the old Dignity & Tranquillity of the *Church* shall return again with a goodly order unto the glory of thy Name. Thou sparedst the *Ninivites* appointed to be destroyed as soon as they converted to repentance; and wilt thou despise thy House falling down at thy feet, which instead of sackcloth hath sighs, and in stead of ashes tears? Thou promisedst Forgiveness to such as turn unto thee, but this self thing is thy Gift, a man to turn with his whole heart unto thee, to the intent all our goodness should redound unto thy glory. Thou art the *Maker*, repair the work that thou hast fashioned. Thou art the *Redeemer*, save that thou hast bought.

Thou

A Prayer for the peace of the Church.

95

Thou art the *Saviour*, suffer not them to perish which do hang on thee. Thou art the *Lord* and owner, challenge thy possession. Thou art the *Head*, help thy members. Thou art the *King*, give us a reverence of thy Laws. Thou art the *Prince of Peace*, breath upon us brotherly love. Thou art the *God*, have pity on thy humble beseechers; be thou according to *Pauls* saying, all things in all men, to the intent the whole Quire of thy Church with agreeing minds and consonant voices for mercy obtained at thy hands, may give thanks to the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, which after the most perfect example of concord be distinguished in property of Persons, and one in nature, to whom be praise and glory Eternally. *Amen.*

FINIS.
